

Digitized by the Internet Archive
in 2007 with funding from
Microsoft Corporation





655 I (34)

Harvard University

Harvard STUDIES AND NOTES

IN

PHILOLOGY AND LITERATURE

VOL. VIII

121995
2614112

PUBLISHED UNDER THE DIRECTION OF THE
MODERN LANGUAGE DEPARTMENTS OF HARVARD UNIVERSITY

By GINN & COMPANY, 29 BEACON STREET, BOSTON

1903

7N
35
H3
V, 8

CONTENTS.

I.

IWAIN

A STUDY IN THE ORIGINS OF ARTHURIAN ROMANCE.

ARTHUR C. L. BROWN

PREFATORY NOTE	v
I. INTRODUCTORY	i
II. THE <i>MATRON OF EPHEBUS</i> AND CHRÉTIEN'S <i>IVAIN</i> . .	10
III. HISTORY OF THE CELTIC THEORY	19
IV. ANCIENT CELTIC STORIES OF THE JOURNEY TO THE OTHER WORLD :	
I. The Type	27
II. The Combat Motive	46
III. The Imrama	56
IV. The Giant Herdsman Motive	70
V. The Perilous Passage	75
VI. The Other-World Landscape	82
VII. Conclusion	94
V. LATER CELTIC STORIES OF THE JOURNEY TO THE OTHER WORLD	95
VI. IWAIN IN THE OTHER WORLD	119
VII. CHRÉTIEN'S REDACTION OF THE TALE OF IWAIN . . .	125
VIII. THE OTHER-WORLD LANDSCAPE IN THE ROMANCES AND LAYS	133
IX. CONCLUSION	145

II.

ARTHUR AND GORLAGON

G. L. KITTREDGE

TEXT	150
I. THE FOUR VERSIONS OF THE WEREWOLF'S TALE . . .	162
II. RELATIONS OF THE FOUR REDACTIONS	167
III. RECONSTRUCTION OF x (THE SOURCE OF MGI)	176
IV. THE WELSH <i>GORLAGON</i>	200
V. THE FRAME-STORY IN VERSION y	209
VI. PECULIARITIES OF THE IRISH VERSION (I)	213
VII. THE QUEST FOR THE SWORD OF LIGHT	213
VIII. THE DEFENCE OF THE CHILD	222
IX. THE CONCLUSION IN <i>ARTHUR AND GORLAGON</i>	245
X. THE WEREWOLF'S TALE IN MALORY	254
XI. AN ICELANDIC PARALLEL	255
XII. A JUDÆO-GERMAN VERSION	256
XIII. WEREWOLVES IN IRELAND	257
XIV. CONCLUSION	260
ADDITIONAL NOTES	267

PREFATORY NOTE TO *IWAIN*.

THIS study, in a form somewhat more extended, was presented in May, 1900, to the Faculty of Arts and Sciences of Harvard University in fulfillment of a requirement made of candidates for the degree of Doctor of Philosophy. The manuscript was revised and sent to the composing room in this same year, and has been in type for a long time. Hence it has been impossible to insert references to a number of recent books and articles.

The object of the dissertation is to investigate the vexed question of the sources of Chrétien's *Ivain*. No attempt has been made to pursue the study of *Iwain* through the later romances,¹ though that would without doubt lead to interesting results. Nor has any discussion been attempted of the exact relations of the versions of the story in the different languages of Western Europe, or of the still-disputed question of the connection between the Welsh *Owein and Lunet* and the French poem. It did not appear that those subjects could be treated with absolute thoroughness until the real nature of the story of the *Ivain* had been determined,—that is to say, until the question of the sources of the *Ivain* had been settled, at least so far as the nature of the evidence admitted. It was felt that this could

¹ To the section on the Giant Herdsman (pp. 70-74) ought to be added a note referring to the *Livre d'Artus*, MS. P (summarized by Freymond, *Zt. f. franz. Sprache*, XVII, 1-128, 1895), where is an account of a combat at a fountain that exhibits almost verbal borrowings from the *Ivain*, but changes the story in certain striking particulars. The Huge Herdsman is expressly said to be Merlin in disguise, who has assumed this shape in order to lead Calogrenant to the fountain. This passage in the *Livre d'Artus* proves that the wood-monster in Chrétien's *Ivain* was easily understood as somebody in disguise.

only be done by a study of all accessible Celtic other-world stories, whether Irish or Welsh, and an investigation of the primitive character and the development of that particular type of "fairy mistress" story which it might appear that the *Ivain* most resembled. This is the object of the present discussion, and all other questions have been subordinated.

It is believed that the results have justified the undertaking. Not only does the supposed connection of the *Ivain* with *The Matron of Ephesus* appear to be disproved, but the theory of a Celtic origin for the *Ivain* story has, it is thought, been established beyond a reasonable doubt. It is hoped that the following pages may also be of service in throwing some new light on the nature of Celtic fairy tales and in pointing out new parallels between Irish and Welsh literature.

I wish to express my hearty thanks to Professor Schofield, who suggested the subject of this investigation and has continually aided me with friendly criticism and advice; and to Professor Kittredge and Professor Sheldon, who have given me invaluable direction and have permitted me to draw upon their time and scholarship in many ways. All three, with Professor Robinson, have had the great kindness to read the entire paper in proof.

I am also indebted for various services to Professor Arthur R. Marsh, Professor G. W. Benedict of Brown University, Professor W. D. Howe of the University of Indianapolis, Dr. Alma Blount, formerly of Radcliffe College, Professor R. H. Fletcher of Washington University, and Professor E. F. Langley of Dartmouth College.

A. C. L. B.

THE UNIVERSITY OF WISCONSIN,
March 15, 1903.

IWAIN.



CHAPTER I.

INTRODUCTORY.

DEFINITE study of the sources of Chrétien's *Ivain* is not very old. The earliest discussion of the subject that requires mention here was that of Rauch¹ in 1869. Rauch argued that the Welsh *Owein and Lunet* is not the source of Chrétien's *Ivain*, as La Villemarqué and other earlier writers had supposed, but that both tales go back to a common original. This common original must, he thought, have been "eine zum Zweck des Erzählens zusammengestellte Sammlung mehrerer in verschiedenen Zeiten entstandener Erzählungen" (p. 11), which had perhaps no other connection than that they all dealt with a knight called Iwain. One of these stories, that of the Fountain, repeats itself in true *märchen* style "nach der Weise des Volksmärchens unermüdlich mit derselben Ausführlichkeit und denselben refrainartig wiederkehrenden Ausdrücken," and contains in the Welsh version some very primitive features. For example, "es zeigt uns die Königin mit ihren Frauen am Fenster des Saales Nadelarbeit verrichtend, während der König in demselben Raume schlummert." Rauch regarded it as certain, therefore, that this part of the story at least is a Celtic tale much older than the period of Chrétien de Troies.

In 1879 Blume brought into prominence a comparison between Laudine and the theme of the Easily Consoled Widow. Blume

¹ *Die wälische, französische und deutsche Bearbeitung der Iweinsage*, Berlin, 1869. Holland, *Crestien von Troies*, Tübingen, 1854, should perhaps be mentioned also; see especially p. 171.

quoted¹ from Gervinus, who had expressed himself² as shocked by the sudden change of feeling experienced by Laudine, and added: "Aber war Gervinus denn die Geschichte von der treulosen Witwe³ unbekannt, die in den Literaturen aller Zeiten und Völker begegnet und also doch wohl in der Psychologie des Weibes ihre Erklärung finden muss? Hat er vergessen, wie die Prinzessin Anna bei Shakespeare sich von Richard von Gloster kirren lässt?"

In 1883 Goossens⁴ published a dissertation in which he undertook to deal with the whole question concerning Iwain. He thinks the kernel of the story was a folk-tale localized in Brittany, about a wonderful fountain that revenged itself on its profaner. In the course of time, he thinks, the punishment became personified in the knight whom Iwain slew. He thinks that Chrétien heard the story from a Breton bard, and that the Welsh version is founded on some French form of the Breton tale. The story, as told by the bards, was probably well settled in its main features, but Chrétien doubtless altered it somewhat. He put in many reflective passages, enriched the dialogue, and introduced the courtly manners of his time. On the whole, however, the *Iwain* is a string of adventures somewhat disconnected and not entirely understood by the author.

In 1884 appeared the first⁵ of the excellent editions of the works of Chrétien prepared by Professor Wendelin Foerster. In his introduction this scholar adopted the unfortunate idea that the kernel of the *Iwain* is the theme of the Easily Consoled Widow, an idea that he has ever since defended with much vigor. He says: "Sehen wir schärfer zu, so finden wir, dass, abgesehen von der Oertlichkeit (Broceliande u. s. f.) und den Namen der handelnden Personen, keine Spur von keltischem Stoff zu finden ist, und — vielleicht ist dies ein nicht zu unterschätzendes Moment — es fehlt auch thatsächlich jede

¹ *Ueber den Iwein des Hartmann von Aue, ein Vortrag*, p. 19.

² *Geschichte der deutschen Dichtung*, 4th ed., 1853, I, 371.

³ The comparison of Laudine to the Widow of Ephesus was first suggested by Simrock, *Altdeutsches Lesebuch in neudeutscher Sprache*, Stuttgart, 1854, p. 230 (quoted by Holland, *Crestien von Troies*, 1854, p. 158).

⁴ Heinrich Goossens, *Ueber Sage, Quelle und Komposition des Chevalier au Lyon des Crestien de Troyes*, Paderborn, 1883.

⁵ *Cligès*, Christian von Troyes, *Sämtliche Werke*, I.

Erwähnung und Anspielung auf eine vom Dichter benutzte Quelle. Der Kern des Löwenritters ist vielmehr ein alter Bekannter, der aus weiter Ferne auf vielen Umwegen nach Frankreich gekommen war, nemlich die Sage von der leicht getrösteten Wittwe, die in der Variante der '*Matrone von Ephesus*' am bekanntesten ist. Um diesen Kern ist alles andere gewickelt. Aber welch eine wahrhaft geniale Kunst, diesen abgedroschenen, plumpen Stoff zu behandeln! . . . Um diesen Kern gruppirt nun Christian den König Artus und seinen Hof, er führt uns an die Zauberquelle im Wald Broceliande, er führt uns Riesen im Kampfe vor, lässt uns in die (schon damals existirende) Sklaverei der Fabriken (hier eine Seidenweberei) einen flüchtigen Blick werfen — aber all dies ist nichts als Beiwerk, ange- than, um sich gewogene Leser zu verschaffen, die alle den modernsten aller Stoffe, die grösste '*actualité*,' nemlich die Artussage, heissgierig verlangten. Allein um dem Roman die richtige Länge zu geben, greift der Dichter zu einem von ihm bereits früher (*Erec*) behandelten Thema, dem 'Verliegen' des Ritters, das er diesmal (mit *Erec* verglichen) auf den Kopf stellt und so lässt er den glücklichen Bräutigam, eben dass er sich nicht 'verliege,' gleich nach der Hochzeit in die Welt auf Abenteuer ziehen" (pp. xvi–xvii). Foerster adds that *Cligés* is made out of the well-known story of the "betrogener Ehemann," just as *Iwain* is made out of the "*Matrone von Ephesus*."

In his edition of *Iwain* in 1887 Foerster reiterated this opinion about the source of the story, adding the following remarks¹: "Über die Eigenart der echten keltischen Sagenstoffe kann man sich wohl ein Urtheil aus der Vergleichung der vorhandenen, gesicherten Proben, wie Melion und den damit eng verwandten Bisclavret, Yonec, Corn, Ignaure, Tydorel,² machen. Allen ist das Übernatürliche gemeinsam: Wehrwolf, Zaubertrank, Fee u. dgl. oder grausiger Mord und andere fremdartige Dinge. Jedermann denkt sofort an die Zauberquelle, den Zauberring Lunetens (vgl. aber Gyges) und auch ich habe nichts dagegen, dieses Beiwerk als keltisch gelten zu lassen ebenso wie den

¹ *Der Löwenritter*, Christian von Troyes, *Sämmtliche erhaltene Werke*, II, xxii–xxiv.

² In a footnote Foerster remarks: "Selbst Tristan kann ich nicht für keltisch halten."

Riesen, den Yvain besiegt. Zuletzt käme Artus und sein Hof, deren keltischer Ursprung nicht geläugnet werden kann; man nehme aber statt dessen fränkische, griechische oder römische Namen und Lokaltäten, und die ganze Geschichte bleibt dieselbe. Es ist also rein äussere Zuthat. — Damit ist aber auch alles keltische erschöpft, und man muss zugeben, dass diese Elemente fehlen können, ohne dass der Yvain darunter litte. Die Quelle von Broceliande gibt dem Dichter bloss die Gelegenheit, seinen Helden mit der Heldin in Verbindung zu bringen, wie der Galgen und das Grab; er konnte ebensogut ein anderes Mittel wählen. Der Riese ist nur eine Nummer mehr in der Reihe der von Yvain bestandenen Abenteuer und hat mit der Erzählung überhaupt gar nichts weiter gemein. Allein der Kern selbst, dass nämlich die Heldin den *Mörder* ihres geliebten Gatten heiratet, scheint keltisch sein zu können: allein es ist, wie ich oben bemerkt, ein internationaler Sagenstoff, der in Frankreich durch die Fabeldichtung längst bekannt war, bevor die matiere de Bretagne anfang, dort Aufnahme zu finden. Doch selbst zugegeben, dass Christian diesen Stoff durch Vermittlung der bretonischen Legende erhalten haben sollte, hätte er ihn doch selbstständig verarbeitet, und sein Verdienst ist daher in beiden Fällen dasselbe. Denn die Art, wie Christian diesen Kern zur Schürzung und Lösung des Knotens verwendet, ist eine solche, dass sie, inhaltlich betrachtet, keltisch *nicht sein kann*. Der Held nimmt, um durch Verliegen seinen Ritterwert nicht einzubüssen, Urlaub von der eben gewonnenen Gattin und zieht auf Abenteuer aus. Er lässt die ihm bewilligte Frist verstreichen und, von der Gattin verstossen, wird er wahnsinnig.¹ Durch eine Zaubersalbe Morgan's der Fee (er konnte

¹ Foerster here adds a note which shows his characteristic method of reasoning about this subject: "Dieses Motiv kehrt auch sonst in Artusromanen wieder. Ist es keltisch oder hat Christian es zuerst angewandt und so in die Artuslitteratur eingeführt? Fragen, die sich nicht entscheiden lassen, die aber unsere Ansicht nicht beeinträchtigen." Foerster is evidently entirely at a loss to explain the "madness motive," and yet it is evident that any theory, to hold its ground, *must* explain such a curious feature of the story as this. He continues: "Die keltische Legende (wenn es wirklich eine solche gegeben hat, die zu den Franzosen gekommen) kann im besten Fall nur die einzelnen Mosaiksteinchen geliefert haben, daraus dann die französischen Künstler die feinen bunten Gemälde

natürlich auch anders genesen oder gar nicht wahnsinnig werden : blosser Zierrat) genesen, erwirbt er sich unter dem fremden Namen des Löwenritters hohen Ruhm und wird endlich, ohne eigentliche Sühne, äusserlich durch einen Kunstgriff der Zofe, mit seiner Herrin wieder ausgesöhnt. Diese beiden treibenden Ideen nun: 'Verliegen und Ritterehre' sind *rein französisch*,¹ und können daher ebenso wenig aus der Bretagne (sei es der grossen und der kleinen) stammen, wie der vom Helden befreite und ihn begleitende Löwe, der zwar in Nordafrika (Androclus!) vorkommt, aber nicht bei den Kelten."

These views of Foerster's were speedily objected to by Gaston Paris.² Paris said: "Je crois qu'il va trop loin dans la réaction légitime qu'a provoquée le celticisme à outrance; mais c'est là une question qui demande un examen long et spécial. Je me borne ici à remarquer que jè ne comprends pas comme M. F. le sujet primitif du récit que Chrétien a mis en vers. Il y voit une variante du conte de la *Matrone d'Ephèse*; j'y vois bien plutôt une forme altérée du thème que nous retrouvons dans *Guingamor*, dans *Oger le danois*, dans *Tanhäuser*, etc.: le héros quitte une fée, dont il est devenu

zusammenstellten" (p. xxiii). So far as this means that Chrétien dressed up his Celtic material in the costume of the age of chivalry, it is certainly justified, but the figure of a mosaic made up of stones gathered here and there is an unwarranted one to use till it has first been proved that Chrétien could not have found the greater part at least of the separate incidents of the *Iwain* already in combination. *A priori*, the probabilities are against any patchwork theory.

¹ Foerster's main argument against the Celtic theory is really that the Arthurian romances in the form in which they have come down to us are full of the ideas of the age of chivalry, and therefore can have no foundation in rude antiquity. I have already called attention to the weakness of this argument, in an article (*The Round Table before Wace*) in *Harvard Studies and Notes*, VII, 193-194, note: "It is not true, as has been sometimes carelessly maintained, that the chivalrous setting in which Arthurian stories have come down to us disproves their foundation in rude antiquity. A primitive story may be beautified and adorned as civilization advances, and may, so to speak, change its costume in accordance with the fashion of later times. . . . Many cases are known in which rude incidents have been dressed up in the chivalrous costume of later times. The French *Horn et Rimenhild*, e.g., represents the same story as the cruder English *King Horn*, only 'expanded by many courtly details of feast and tournament' (Ward, *Catalogue of Romances*, I, 455)."

² *Romania*, XVII, 334-335 (1888).

l'époux, avec l'intention de revenir, et il oublie une promesse qu'il lui a donnée ou une défense qu'elle lui a faite; l'anneau que la 'dame de la fontaine' (certainement une fée dans la version originale) fait enlever à Ivain rappelle des incidents analogues de plusieurs contes qui ont la même donnée. Ce nom de 'dame de la fontaine,' devenu incompréhensible (cf. *Guingamor*, v. 122), a fait insérer ici l'histoire de la fontaine dont l'eau agitée provoque l'orage (croyance d'ailleurs celtique), et de la manière chevaleresque dont le héros s'en empare; mais ces épisodes, pas plus que celui du lion reconnaissant, n'appartiennent au fonds primitif."

In his smaller edition of *Yvain* in 1891¹ Foerster replied to Paris by (1) stoutly asserting, without offering any proof, that *Laudine is not a fée*, and (2) by admitting that Chrétien may have borrowed the "forgotten promise" episode from some [*fée*] story like those mentioned by Paris: "Mag nun auch der Dichter wirklich das folgende (Vergessen des Versprechens) sich aus einem solchen Stoff geholt haben, sicher ist, dass die Episode, welche ich auf die Witwe von Ephesus zurückführte, damit unter keinen Umständen etwas zu thun hat."²

This passage contains a fatal admission of the true character of Foerster's method of dealing with literary origins. He searches about for sources and finds one incident here and another there. Chrétien, he says, must have combined these various incidents. To such a theory the addition of a few more entirely disconnected

¹ *Romanische Bibliothek*, V, xiv, footnote.

² In this same introduction to *Yvain* Foerster dwells particularly on his comparison of the Matron of Ephesus. He says (p. xiii): "Diese leicht getröstete Witwe [Laudine] ist ein direkter Nachkomme der bekannten 'Witwe von Ephesus.' Kein einziger aller der boshaften Züge, die das Original besitzt, fehlt dem neuen Abbild desselben." The central point of the whole episode is, he thinks, indicated by the lines

C'est cele qui prist
Celui qui soñ seignor ocist (vv. 1809-10),

and this he regards as proved by the following reflection of the poet's:

Mes or est mes sire Yvains sire,
Et li morz est toz obliëz.
Cil qui l'ocist est mariëz
An sa fame et ansanble gisent (vv. 2164 ff.).

sources can make little difference. A view like this cannot be refuted, just as it cannot be established. It can hold the field only in default of any explanation that shows, already combined, most of the elements which Foerster asks us to believe were brought together by Chrétien. The mosaic character of Foerster's theory is clearly shown by the analysis of Chrétien's *Iwain* which he has very recently published in his edition of the *Lancelot*¹: "Ivain: örtliche Quellsage + Ring des Gyges + Wittwe von Ephesus + Löwe des Androklos." This, then, is the best outline Foerster is able to make of his theory, and it indicates four entirely disconnected sources. Moreover, there are, on his own admission, one or two other sources (e.g., for the Forgotten Promise and the Madness Motive) which he has simply omitted, not explained away.

Such a theory is manifestly unfair. Everybody knows that the most complicated story can be taken apart into simple elements, and these simple elements can then be found separately almost anywhere. It is not the finding of a single element that proves a source. The combination of elements alone is significant. The more elements already in combination a supposed source can show, the stronger, other things being equal, is the probability of its being the true one. These are the simplest principles of reasoning, but Foerster's method of dealing with this problem in literary origins seems to ignore them.

Of course this theory of Foerster's did not pass without challenge. In 1889 Mussafia² said: "So viel gestatte ich mir zu bemerken, dass ich die Ansicht, nach welcher das Motiv der leicht getrösteten Wittwe den eigentlichen Kern der Erzählung bilden soll, so bestechend sie auch erscheinen möge, als durchaus unhaltbar betrachte. Das wesentlichste Merkmal der weit verbreiteten Mähre bildet doch deren satirische Tendenz; sie will den Wankelmuth eines der sinnlichen Lust fröhnenden Weibes geisseln. Ein solcher Stoff lässt sich nicht veredeln und vertiefen, ohne dass er seine Existenzberechtigung einbüsse; Chrestien, welcher die Liebenden der Vergangenheit im Gegensatz zur Entartung der Zeitgenossen preist, kann doch nicht

¹ Christian von Troyes, *Sämtliche erhaltene Werke*, IV, lxxxi (1899), *Der Karrenritter und das Wilhelmsleben*.

² A. Mussafia, *Literaturblatt f. germ. u. rom. Phil.*, 1889, col. 221.

eine solche Untreue an dem heimgegangenen Gemahle als den eigentlichen Vorwurf seiner Dichtung gewählt haben."

Similarly, in 1890, Muret¹ remarked with reference to Foerster's theory that the *Chevalier au Lion* is only a variant of the story of the Matron of Ephesus: "A ce point de vue, le noyau du récit serait formé par les trois ou quatre cents vers où Laudine, pressée par les arguments de Lunète, se décide à épouser le meurtrier de son mari bien-aimé. La fontaine enchantée de la forêt de Brocéliande, Arthur et sa cour, les aventures du chevalier Ivain — presque toute la narration en un mot, — ne fourniraient que des accessoires, habilement disposés pour charmer un public engoué des héros de la Table-Ronde. Il est certain que la plupart des épisodes ne convergent nullement autour du prétendu centre du poème. Comme celui-ci compte près de sept mille vers, on s'attendrait à ce que M. F. le jugeât un des ouvrages les plus mal composés qu'il y ait dans aucune littérature. Nous sommes donc un peu surpris de lire, en tête de la présente édition [1887] du *Chevalier au Lion*, que ce roman représente l'art d'un Chrétien de Troyes parvenu à son plus haut point de perfection."

Finally, in 1896, Ahlström² replied to Foerster's arguments at length: "M. Foerster affirme d'abord que notre roman est le seul où Chrétien ne donne aucune indication sur l'origine du sujet. Cela prouve — selon M. Foerster — que l'auteur doit avoir eu une raison toute spéciale pour garder le silence, résidant dans ce fait que l'auteur ne devait sa matière à aucun livre ni à aucun conte, mais seulement à sa propre imagination.

"La vérité des prémisses est au moins bien douteuse; la conclusion semble l'être encore plus.

"D'abord, on ne peut pas dire qu'il manque à notre roman toute mention d'origine. M. Holland a déjà attiré l'attention sur les vers 6816 et suiv.³ . . . :

¹ Ernest Muret, *Revue Critique*, XXIX, 67 (1890).

² Axel Ahlström, *Sur l'Origine du Chevalier au Lion*, in *Mélanges dédiés à Carl Wahlund*, Mâcon, 1896, pp. 289-303.

³ Ahlström quotes also vv. 33 ff., but I have omitted them, for it seems clear, as Paris pointed out in 1897 (*Romania*, XXVI, 106), that they are not in particular about Ivain, "mais en général d'Arthur."

v. 6814 Del Chevalier au lion fine
 Crestiens son romanz ein si;
Qu'onques plus conter n'an oï
 Ne ja plus n'an orroiz conter
 S'an n'i viaut mançoige ajoster.

"Il nous semble que dans ces quelques vers l'auteur se prononce assez positivement sur l'origine de son thème. Il l'a entendu conter. . . . A notre avis, cela doit indiquer que Chrétien a rimé son roman d'après un conte en ce temps populaire chez les Bretons. . . .

"Nous croyons donc que le poète a voulu lui-même indiquer un conte français ou breton comme ayant été la base de son roman; quand même il aurait gardé un silence complet, une conclusion comme celle de M. Foerster resterait toujours très incertaine" (pp. 290-291).

Ahlström then quotes Foerster's explanation of the story as a development from the theme of the Easily Consoled Widow, and adds: "En lisant ces lignes, ne croirait-on pas que la fameuse veuve d'Éphèse ait, elle aussi, commencé par maudire le meurtrier de son mari, qu'elle ait grondé sa pauvre suivante et que peu à peu elle ait changé d'avis pour finir par épouser le meurtrier?" On the contrary, as Ahlström points out, *there is in the Matron of Ephesus no marrying of the murderer of the husband.*

"D'un autre côté M. Foerster dit en propres termes qu'il ne manque à la copie aucun des vilains traits de l'original. Où M. Foerster trouve-t-il donc dans le poème de Chrétien le trait le plus fameux et le plus affreux du conte: l'attentat de la veuve contre les restes de son mari?¹ . . . Il n'existe, en vérité, aucune de ces infamies

¹ Ahlström brings forward several other traits of the mediæval *Matron of Ephesus* story which separate it entirely from that of Laudine. I have omitted these points because Paris, who entirely agrees as to the vast chasm that separates any forms of the two stories, admits that Ahlström "n'aurait pas dû citer, comme les plus connus et les plus essentiels, des traits qui ne sont ni dans Phèdre ni dans Pétrone et n'appartiennent qu'aux rédactions médiévales contenues dans le roman des *Sept Sages*" (*Romania*, XXVI, 106). For references to various forms of the story, see Keller, *Li Romans des Sept Sages*, 1836, pp. clix ff.; Grisebach, *Die Wanderung der Novelle von der treulosen Wittwe durch die Weltliteratur*, Berlin, 1886 (2d ed., 1889); Cesari, *Come pervenne e rimase in Italia la Matrona d'Efeso*, Bologna, 1890.

dans le beau roman de Chrétien. La dame de la fontaine pleure sincèrement son époux et honore son corps et sa mémoire.

"Mais, dit à la fin M. Foerster, celui qui n'est pas encore convaincu le sera sans doute par les mots que le poète lui-même a mis dans la bouche de la veuve :

v. 1809 C'est cele qui prist
Celui qui son signor ocist,"

which the poet repeats in v. 2166.

"Selon notre opinion, le poète accentue dans ces lignes précisément et exclusivement un des points dans lesquels le roman s'éloigne le plus du conte, savoir ce fait que la veuve du roman épouse le meurtrier de son mari. Il est donc peut-être un peu hardi de vouloir ainsi prouver la relation intime entre les deux sujets.

"La ressemblance entre le roman et le conte se borne, en effet, à ce point commun qu'une veuve désolée change de sentiments en peu de temps et veut se remarier. Tous les détails sont différents. Il y a pourtant, dans la littérature comme dans la vie, trop de jeunes veuves qui désirent se remarier le plus tôt possible, pour que ce fait seul puisse prouver l'existence d'un rapport plus intime entre le conte et le roman."

Up to the present time, then, a violent controversy has raged about the *Matron of Ephesus* theory, in which, on the whole, it has been rather badly damaged. It will be the purpose of the next chapter to examine the question afresh.

CHAPTER II.

THE *MATRON OF EPHEBUS* AND CHRÉTIEN'S *IVAIN*.

IN order to bring out as fairly as possible the fatal difficulties that stand in the way of Foerster's hypothesis, it will be necessary to quote in full the story to which he refers and to follow it with a tolerably complete summary of Chrétien's *Ivain*.

The version of the *Matron of Ephesus* given by Petronius is longer than that of Phædrus¹ and more favorable than any other to Foerster's hypothesis. It is therefore the one here selected.

THE MATRON OF EPHEBUS.²

Matrona quaedam Ephesi tam notae erat pudicitiae, ut vicinarum quoque gentium feminas ad spectaculum sui evocaret. Haec ergo cum virum extulisset, non contenta vulgari more funus passis prosequi crinibus aut nudatum pectus in conspectu frequentiae plangere, in conditorium etiam prosecuta est defunctum, positumque in hypogaeo Graeco more corpus custodire ac flere totis noctibus diebusque coepit. Sic afflictantem se ac mortem inedia persequentem non parentes potuerunt abducere, non propinqui; magistratus ultimo repulsi abierunt complorataque singularis exempli femina ab omnibus quintum iam diem sine alimento trahebat. Assidebat aegrae fidissima ancilla, simulque et lacrimas commodabat lugenti, et quotienscunque defecerat positum in monumento lumen renovabat. Una igitur in tota civitate fabula erat, solum illud affulsisse verum pudicitiae amorisque exemplum omnis ordinis homines confitebantur, cum interim imperator provinciae latrones iussit crucibus affigi secundum illam casulam, in qua recens cadaver matrona deflebat. Proxima ergo nocte, cum miles, qui cruces asservabat, ne quis ad sepulturam corpus detraheret, notasset sibi [et] lumen inter monumenta clarius fulgens et gemitum lugentis audisset, vitio gentis humanae concupiit scire, quis aut quid faceret. Descendit igitur in conditorium, visaque pulcherrima muliere primo quasi quodam monstro infernisque imaginibus turbatus substitit. Deinde ut et corpus iacentis conspexit et lacrimas consideravit faciemque unguibus sectam, ratus scilicet id quod erat, desiderium extincti non posse feminam pati, attulit in monumentum cenulam suam coepitque hortari lugentem, ne perseveraret in dolore supervacuo ac nihil profuturo gemitu pectus diduceret: omnium eundem esse exitum [sed] et idem domicilium, et cetera quibus exulceratae mentes ad sanitatem revocantur. At illa ignota consolatione percussa laceravit vehementius pectus ruptosque crines super corpus iacentis imposuit. Non recessit tamen miles, sed eadem exhortatione temptavit

¹ For the story in Phædrus, see Hervieux, *Les Fabulistes Latins*, II, *Phèdre et ses Anciens Imitateurs*, Paris, 1884, pp. 66-67 (2d ed., 1894, pp. 72-73). See also p. 269 (2d ed., pp. 340-341).

² Petronius, *Satirae*, Buecheler's 3d ed., Berlin, 1882, chaps. 111, 112, pp. 77-78.

dare mulierculae cibum, donec ancilla vini certe ab eo odore corrupta
 primum ipsa porrexit ad humanitatem invitantis victam
 The Lady's Maid
 takes the Sol-
 dier's Part. manum, deinde refecta potione et cibo expugnare dominae
 pertinaciam coepit et "quid proderit" inquit "hoc tibi, si
 soluta inedia fueris, si te vivam sepelieris, si antequam fata
 poscant, indemnatum spiritum effuderis?"

id cinerem aut manes credis sentire sepultos?

vis tu reviviscere? vis discusso muliebri errore, quam diu licuerit, lucis com-
 modis frui? ipsum te iacentis corpus admonere debet, ut vivas." Nemo
 invitatus audit, cum cogitur aut cibum sumere aut vivere. Itaque mulier
 aliquot dierum abstinentia sicca passa est frangi pertinaciam suam, nec
 minus avide replevit se cibo quam ancilla, quae prior victa est. Ceterum
 scitis, quid plerumque soleat temptare humanam satietatem.

The newly Be-
 reaved Widow re-
 marries suddenly. Quibus blanditiis impetraverat miles, ut matrona vellet vivere,
 isdem etiam pudicitiam eius aggressus est. Nec defor-
 mis aut infacundus iuvenis castae videbatur, conciliante
 gratiam ancilla ac subinde dicente:

"placitone etiam pugnabis amori?"

Nec venit in mentem, quorum consederis arvis?"

Quid diutius moror? Ne hanc quidem partem corporis mulier abstinuit,
 victorque miles utrumque persuasit. Iacuerunt ergo una non tantum illa
 nocte, qua nuptias fecerunt, sed postero etiam ac tertio die, praeclusis
 videlicet conditorii foribus, ut quisquis ex notis ignotisque ad monumentum
 venisset, putaret expirasse super corpus viri pudicissimam uxorem. Ceterum
 delectatus miles et forma mulieris et secreto, quicquid boni per facultates
 poterat, coemebat et prima statim nocte in monumentum ferebat. Itaque
 unius cruciarii parentes ut viderunt laxatam custodiam, detraxere nocte
 pendentem supremoque mandaverunt officio. At miles circumscriptus dum
 desidet, ut postero die vidit unam sine cadavere crucem, veritus supplicium,
 mulieri quid accidisset exponit: nec se expectaturum iudicis sententiam,
 sed gladio ius dicturum ignaviae suae. Commodaret ergo illa perituro
 locum et fatale conditorium familiari ac viro faceret. Mulier non minus
 misericors quam pudica "ne istud" inquit "dii sinant, ut eodem tempore
 duorum mihi carissimorum hominum duo funera spectem. Malo mortuum
 impendere quam vivum occidere." Secundum hanc orationem iubet ex
 arca corpus mariti sui tolli atque illi, quae vacabat, cruci affigi. Usus est
 miles ingenio prudentissimae feminae, posteroque die populus miratus est,
 qua ratione mortuus isset in crucem.

THE IVAIN OF CHRÉTIEN DE TROIES.¹

I. The story opens at Carduel in Wales, where Arthur is holding court. King Arthur and the queen have withdrawn to their chamber, and Calogrenant has begun a tale to the assembled knights, of whom Iwain is one. The queen enters to hear it also, and he begins again at her request (vv. 1-174).

II. "About seven years ago," says Calogrenant, "I wandered all day through the Forest of Broceliande till I came to a strongly fortified place. The lord of the *forteresse* gave me a splendid welcome, and a fair maid disarmed me and entertained me in a meadow till supper. The supper was entirely to my taste because of the maid who sat opposite to me. I spent a pleasant night in that castle" (vv. 175-269).

III. "In the morning I set out, and not far off I found fierce bulls fighting and a black creature with a head larger than a horse's, armed with a club, guarding them. Finding that this creature could speak, I asked him to direct me to some adventure. He showed me the path to a fountain [the Fountain Perilous], telling me also what I might do" (vv. 270-409).

IV. "I reached the Fountain about noon. By it stood the most beautiful tree that ever grew on earth. I took a basin of gold that was attached by a chain to the tree, and, dipping up some water, I poured it on the rock" (vv. 410-438).

V. "Forthwith there ensued a terrible storm of wind and rain; then a calm in which the birds sang sweetly on the tree. After this there appeared a knight on horseback, who attacked and overthrew me. I came home on foot like a fool and like a fool have told my story."

During the talk that follows, Arthur comes out of his chamber, hears the story repeated, and declares that he will go with his knights within a fortnight, namely just before St. John the Baptist's Day, to essay the adventure. Iwain, however, is anxious to try it alone; so

¹ Summarized from Foerster's *Yvain, Romanische Bibliothek*, V.

he steals away secretly. He is entertained at night by the Hospitable Host; next morning he sees the Giant Herdsman, and he comes at last to the Fountain Perilous. He pours water on the rock. The storm follows (vv. 439-810).

VI. After this the armed knight appears and attacks Iwain. They fight till Iwain deals the knight a blow that cleaves his helmet and wounds him in the brain. The knight flees, pursued by Iwain, through the streets of a town and up to the gate of a palace (vv. 811-906).

VII. The knight rides under a sharp iron gate, which is arranged to drop like the fall of a rat trap if one touches the spring. Iwain follows hard after, and his horse accidentally touches the spring. The gate falls close behind Iwain and with its knife edge cuts his horse in two, cutting off the hinder part of the saddle and also the rider's spurs. Another gate at the same time descends in front, and Iwain is imprisoned in a *sale* (vv. 907-969).

VIII. But a damsel, called Lunete, issues from a narrow door and recognizes him as Iwain, son of King Urien. She was once sent on a message by her lady to King Arthur's court, and, perhaps because she was not so courteous as a damsel ought to be, no knight deigned to speak to her except Iwain. He honored and served her, and she is glad to recompense him now (vv. 970-1019).

IX. She gives Iwain a magic ring that, when the stone set in it is enclosed in the hand, makes its wearer invisible, and she brings him food to eat (vv. 1020-1054).

X. Presently men come with clubs and swords, seeking him who slew their lord, Esclados le Ros. They do not find Iwain, for the ring renders him invisible. Lunete's mistress, whose name is Laudine, a most beautiful lady, now enters, weeping for her lord, who is carried on a bier (1055-1172).

XI. When the corpse is brought into the hall where Iwain is, it begins to bleed. The men feel confident that the murderer must be hidden there, and they renew their search (vv. 1173-1242).

XII. When Iwain sees Laudine, he is smitten with violent love for her. He even watches the funeral, so as to catch a better glimpse of her. He refuses to go when Lunete offers to help him to escape.

Effects of the
Lady's Beauty. Lunete persuades her lady that she ought to feel no hatred against the knight who slew her husband. She reminds her that the Dameisele Sauvage has sent word that King Arthur is coming within a week to essay the Fountain. Laudine feels that a knight is needed to defend it. Lunete tells her that the knight who slew her husband would undertake to do it. When Laudine learns that his name is Iwain she consents (vv. 1243-1942).

XIII. Iwain is terrified when ushered into Laudine's presence and says that anything she may lay upon him, even death, he will take without ill will. She receives him kindly when Marriage with
the Lady. he promises to defend the Fountain. Iwain and the lady are speedily married, and there is great joy (vv. 1943-2169).

XIV. The wedding feast lasts till King Arthur comes to essay the adventure of the Fountain. Kay is assigned to the adventure. The Arrival of
King Arthur. king pours water on the rock, and presently Iwain appears mounted on a powerful horse and overthrows Kay. Iwain then reveals himself to Arthur and escorts him and his knights to the castle, where they are entertained for a week (vv. 2170-2475).

XV. When Arthur departs, Iwain is persuaded to accompany him. Laudine does not give Iwain permission to go till he has promised Departure of
Iwain. to return within a year. If he does not come back by that time, "her love will turn to hate." She gives Iwain a ring that will protect him from imprisonment and be his shield and hauberk (vv. 2476-2638).

XVI. A year has passed, and Iwain is busy in tournaments. Suddenly he recollects that he has overstayed his time. The same Broken Promise
and Madness. instant a damsel rides up and calls him a hypocrite, and a thief who has stolen her lady's heart and forgotten his promise to return. She demands back the ring. When Iwain does not reply, she snatches the ring from his finger and departs. Iwain goes mad and runs into the forest, where he lives like a beast. A hermit supplies him with musty bread (vv. 2639-2884).

XVII. At length one day a lady, accompanied by two damsels, finds a naked man asleep in the forest. One of the damsels recognizes Iwain by a scar on his cheek. At her request the lady allows the damsel to bring a box of ointment, a gift from Morgue the Wise,¹ by means of which Iwain is cured of his madness. In return Iwain frees the lady from the oppression of a powerful enemy, Count Alier (vv. 2885-3340).

XVIII. As Iwain is riding through a deep forest, he finds a serpent and a lion fighting. He succors the lion and slays the serpent. The lion kneels down before Iwain and indicates by his tears that he thanks him. After this the lion accompanies Iwain everywhere. Iwain comes to the Fountain Perilous and finds Lunete shut up in the little chapel near by. She tells Iwain a wicked seneschal has accused her of treason in persuading Laudine to marry Iwain. She is to be burned to-morrow unless a knight can be found who will fight the seneschal and two others, in order to prove her innocence. Iwain promises to undertake the combat but is obliged to go some distance before he finds lodgings for the night at a castle (vv. 3341-3816).

XIX. This castle is beset by a giant, Harpin of the Mountain, who will kill the lord's sons or carry off the daughter of the house in the morning unless a champion can be found to fight him. Iwain promises to fight the giant if the latter appears early in the morning; otherwise he shall be obliged to go to keep his promise and save Lunete (vv. 3817-4087).

XX. In the morning Iwain waits till prime for the giant to appear, and, as he does not come, is distracted in his mind whether to go or stay. At last Harpin comes and Iwain subdues him, aided in the struggle by his faithful lion (vv. 4088-4312).

XXI. Iwain rides hurriedly to the Fountain Perilous, and arrives in time to rescue Lunete by fighting at once the wicked seneschal and two others. The lion again helps Iwain. Laudine does not know who Iwain is. He calls himself the Knight of the Lion (vv. 4313-4702).

¹ That is, Morgain la fée.

XXII. Iwain is met by a messenger from the younger daughter of the lord of La Noire Espine. The lord is dead, and the elder
Daughters of the daughter has usurped all the land and secured Gawain
Black Thorn. to defend her claim. Iwain, who does not know that his opponent will be Gawain, agrees to fight for the younger daughter. He does not reveal his own name but is called the Knight of the Lion (vv. 4703-5106).

XXIII. Iwain and the messenger come to a place called the Castle of Ill Adventure and are advised not to enter. They do enter, however, and find three hundred girls behind a row of stakes.

The Castle of These girls are pale and thin and obliged to toil at
Ill Adventure. working silk with thread of gold. It is explained that many years ago the King of the Isle of Maidens went like a fool in search of adventure. He fell into the power of two "fiz de deable" who own this castle. Being not yet eighteen years old, he ransomed himself as best he could by swearing to send each year thirty maidens as tribute till the monsters should be vanquished. Iwain is well entertained for the night by the lord and lady of the castle, but in the morning he is obliged to fight the monsters. He overcomes them, with the aid of his lion, and frees the maidens (vv. 5107-5811).

XXIV. Iwain arrives at Arthur's court clad in armor and known as the Knight of the Lion. Gawain, too, is disguised by his armor,
Combat of and the two friends fight a terrible battle. When
Fratres Jurati. night comes on, they grow tired, and reveal themselves to each other. There is great joy, and people are surprised to see how evenly they are matched (vv. 5812-6526).

XXV. Iwain soon returns to the Fountain Perilous and stirs up
Reconciliation such a storm that the castle is almost destroyed.
between the Hero Lunete is sent to find out who is at the Fountain, and
and the Heroine. by her mediation Iwain is reconciled to Laudine. Now Iwain has peace and through joy the past is forgotten (vv. 6527-6818).

Every reader who compares the *Iwain* with the *Matron of Ephesus* will at once observe that they belong to two entirely different kinds of writing. Chrétien's *Iwain* is romantic in the highest degree. It is far removed even from realistic literature, and much more from that class of disillusioned, cynical stories to which the *Matron of*

Ephesus so evidently belongs.¹ The strongest proofs in the world would barely suffice to make one believe that Chrétien drew the theme of his curiously high-spirited, un-matter-of-fact romance from a cheap satire on women.

But what *are* the proofs? Merely similarities of incident. Historical evidence is of course unobtainable. Now there are but two incidents in the two stories that are similar. The first is, that in both there is a lady's maid who takes the hero's part. Surely not much can be based on this. Every lady has a maid, and from time immemorial approach to a lady has been by means of her maid. The other incident, upon which so much stress has been laid, is, not that in both stories the widow marries the slayer of her husband, — a parallel that might have some significance, — but simply that in both stories a newly bereaved widow marries again suddenly. As Ahlström has well said, it is not necessary to go to the *Matron of Ephesus* for this. The incident is not unknown in real life. One should also remember that in the Middle Ages every widow left in possession of a fief was practically forced to marry again to protect her possessions. Such a marriage might follow the death of the widow's husband almost immediately if there was danger of invasion or attack.

Some one may remind me that it has been urged also that a similarity lies in the heartlessness of the lady's treatment of her husband in both stories. This is the weakest point of all. Laudine is not described by Chrétien as heartless. So far as can be made out, he represents her as respecting her husband's memory to the last.

Furthermore, stretch the *Matron of Ephesus* theory to its greatest conceivable limits, it still will not account for more than five or six hundred lines out of the almost seven thousand of the *Ivain*. The remainder of the romance would have to be explained as a mere compilation from various disconnected sources. Even, therefore, if

¹ The cynical side of the *Matron of Ephesus* is brought out in a still more repellent way in the mediæval versions of the tale, which Chrétien would naturally have known. In them the widow with her own hands mutilates the body of her husband to make it resemble the stolen corpse, which had lost its ears and some teeth.

there were no other theory in the field, it would seem as if the hypothesis which derives the plot from the *Matron of Ephesus* would have to be rejected. It has, so far as I can see, not a leg to stand on.

CHAPTER III.

HISTORY OF THE CELTIC THEORY.

THE view which would explain the *Iwain* as in origin a Celtic story of a "fairly mistress" was first distinctly set forth by Alfred Nutt in 1887.¹ "The Lady of the Fountain seems to me to be an expansion of a Goldenlocks story. The hero leaves his wife (breaking a taboo thereby), is forsaken of her, becomes rough and hairy, rescues her from three successive dangers, is recognized by and reunited to her. It is to be noted that the hero is accompanied by a helping animal. The opening incident of this story may be compared to Joyce's Pursuit of the Gilla Dacker [i.e. the story of Diarmat].² . . . In both stories the heroes drink of the fountain, the lord of the fountain appears, and a fight ensues in which the hero proves victor."

This view was expressed by Paris in his usual felicitous way in the passage already quoted³ from *Romania*, 1888. It is also the view of Muret, set forth in 1890 in the article from which a quotation has

¹ *The Celtic Magazine*, XII, 555. Osterwald, *Iwein, ein keltischer Frühlingsgott*, 1853, pointed out that Laudine is an other-world person, and that this is the clue to her sudden marriage to the slayer of her husband. His article, however, is overlaid with vague mythologizing. The remark of Alexander Macbain in 1884 should also be noted: "Visits of the nature of that undertaken by Ulysses, in Homer, to the Land of the Shades, were made by at least three champions of the Gael, . . . Cuchulainn, Cormac and Diarmat. . . . We find a double account of Diarmat's visit to *Tír-fa-tonn*, one Irish, one Gaelic. The Irish one is in its main features the counterpart of the Welsh Mabinogion, 'The Lady of the Fountain'" (*Celtic Magazine*, IX, 278).

² Rhys (*Lectures on Celtic Heathendom*, London, 1888, pp. 187 ff.) has made this same comparison, and so has Ferdinand Lot (*Romania*, XXI, 67-71).

³ Pp. 5-6, above.

already been made.¹ He thinks that it is clear to any unprejudiced person that the principal *donnée* of the *Chevalier au Lion* is one of those stories of a mortal loved by a *fée* so common in popular tradition. He points to the existence of analogous situations in many of those *lais bretons* of which nobody disputes the Celtic origin, and concludes: "A des yeux non prévenus, les circonstances singulières du mariage d'Ivain avec la *Dame de la Fontaine* n'ont que le plus vague et le plus lointain rapport avec l'anecdote de la Matrone d'Éphèse." Muret thinks that Chrétien's original was probably some prose recital he had heard, though he admits that a few "aventures banales" may be of the poet's own introduction.

Ahlström, who expresses himself at some length in the article already referred to,² agrees that the original of the *Ivain* story is the well-known account of the union of a mortal to a supernatural being, whether, as in *Cupid and Psyche*, the hero is supernatural, or as in *Graelent*, *Lanval*, *Guingamor*, *Guigemar*, *Désiré*, *Partenopeus de Blois*, *Florian et Florete*, *Bel Inconnu*, *La Châtelaine de Vergi*, *Perceval* (several times), *Erec*, *Lancelot*, and *Ogier le Danois*, it is the heroine who is a *fée*. In one or two of these stories, as Ahlström thinks, the *fée* was originally a swan-maiden caught by stealing the swan-vestment which she had temporarily laid aside while bathing in a fountain. It is certainly true that in *Graelent* and *Guingamor* swan-maiden features have been mixed up with the story, for in both the hero obtains the love of the lady, surprised while bathing in a fountain, by possessing himself of her clothes. In neither case, however, has this confusion destroyed her real character as a *fée* princess. In neither case, as Schofield has clearly pointed out,³ is the heroine like the maiden in *Dolopathos* (which he shows to be a genuine swan-maiden story) "a weak, defenceless captive." She is "a queenly princess. She does not humbly accept a marriage forced upon her, but comes from a distant land solely to carry back the hero whom

¹ *Revue Critique*, XXIX, 67.

² *Mélanges Wahlund*, 1896, pp. 294-303.

³ See his important articles, *The Lay of Guingamor*, in *Harvard Studies and Notes*, V, 236 ff., and *The Lays of Graelent and Lanval*, in *Publ. of the Mod. Lang. Association of America*, XV, 145.

she loves,—not in the future to be a wife patiently enduring all sorts of indignities, but a proud supernatural mistress whose commands when not followed to the letter bring sorrow to him whose life even is in her hands.”¹ In both cases she speaks her mind with dignity and is not really surprised, while a swan-maiden is always taken unawares. Dr. Schofield’s view that these heroines are true *fées* to whom the authors, confused by the resemblances of their stories to tales like that in the *Dolopathos*, have ascribed certain swan-maiden features, is altogether the most reasonable. Ahlström, however, holds the opposite opinion, that the swan character of the lady was original and has been modified by stories of *fées*. He also maintains that *Désiré*, where it is the lady’s maid that is caught at the fountain, and *Lanval*, where two maids are met while carrying water to their mistress, are in origin swan-maiden stories which have lost most of their primitive character. Not content with this, he goes on to draw the unwarranted inference that *Iwain* is another such swan-maiden story. He admits that no trace of this supposed origin can be found except the name “Lady of the Fountain,” but this single hint is enough, he thinks, to enable him to reconstruct the whole.

The weakness of Ahlström’s argument becomes apparent when one reflects that it would prove practically all fairy mistresses to be swan-maidens. They are nearly all first seen near a spring or river or lake or by the seaside. Especially is this the case in Celtic fairy stories, because of the belief, strongly held by the Celts, that the approach to fairyland lay across the sea or beneath the waves. There are plenty of ways in which a fairy might come to be called a lady of the fountain without her having been in origin a swan-maiden at all. Nor is this swan-maiden feature at all necessary to the rest of Ahlström’s explanation.

Ahlström’s confusion of *fées* with swan-maidens leads him to explain that Laudine’s sudden remarriage is due to her *fairy* nature,² which (he seems to think) places her at the *disposal* of the conqueror of the Fountain. Any one who studies the Celtic *fée*, however, will see

¹ Schofield, l.c., p. 236.

² See *Mélanges-Wahlund*, pp. 296-297.

that she was originally bound by no restrictions and at nobody's disposal. (The sudden remarriage is really due to the fact that the slain warrior was originally a supernatural being in the service of the *fée*, and not her husband at all.) Ahlström, with some probability, explains the ring given to Ivain as originally the ring that brought the fairy mistress at any time and place, while she remained invisible to every one but the hero. It is easy to see how this might get changed to a ring that renders its wearer invisible. Its being taken away when Ivain is unfaithful is paralleled in *Désiré*. It would be absurd, therefore, to regard it as an adaptation of the ring of Gyges.¹

Ahlström's most interesting suggestion is that the Joy of the Court episode in *Erec* is really a defective version of the fairy mistress story. As *Erec* was written before *Ivain*, it becomes clear that a fairy mistress story in which the knight was obliged to do battle with all who approached his lady existed before *Ivain* was written. Chrétien's original, then, must have been a story of some length, comprising at least three of the chief incidents of the poem: the fight at the fountain, the remarriage, and the thankful lion.² This story, he believes, came from Brittany, where it had been localized. "C'est donc, si l'on veut, un sujet breton; mais on ne peut dire qu'il soit né dans ce pays ni que le poète l'ait directement emprunté des Bretons" (p. 303).

In 1897 Baist,³ in a short but important note, discussed the whole question of the sources of *Ivain*. With regard to Ahlström's swan-maiden explanation he says: "Ich bin von jeher der Meinung gewesen, dass in Laudine sich eine Wasserfrau verberge." He naturally, however, fails to see that she can be made such a water-nymph, simply because she happens to be a *fée*. Baist divides the romance of *Ivain*

¹ Ahlström believes also that he has found a parallel to the madness of Ivain in *Lanval*, v. 416: "Mult dotouent qu'il s'afolast"; but Paris and Tobler more properly translate this by "do injury to himself" (*Romania*, XXVI, 107; *Zt. f. rom. Phil.*, X, 168).

² Ahlström regards the episode of the thankful lion as an invention to explain the title "Chevalier au Lion," which he, without good reason, thinks came in the first place from the name of a country, *Léonois* (pp. 299-300).

³ *Zt. f. rom. Phil.*, XXI, 402-405.

into two parts. The second part, beginning immediately after the hero loses Laudine, he believes to be Chrétien's own invention or compilation. The madness of Iwain is, he thinks, borrowed from that of Tristan. (But surely this must have been a part of the original fairy mistress story, of which it is a well-recognized feature.) The introduction of the thankful lion he with much reason ascribes to Chrétien. He points out that the interest centres in this brilliant piece of decoration up to the time of the combat of Iwain and Gawain. None of the adventures related in this second part could belong, he thinks, to an original Journey of Wonders that led the hero back to his fairy mistress, except that of the Castle of the Black Thorn, and that shows no evidence of having belonged to such a tale. The Maiden Castle comes from some *Märchen*. The reconciliation at the end is, according to Baist, entirely the invention of Chrétien, because it is only a variant of the way in which the lady was at first persuaded by Lunete to receive the hero. (Yet Baist could hardly deny that a happy ending, though not perhaps a feature of the most primitive form of the theme, might easily have become attached to it long before it reached Chrétien.)

The first part of the romance Baist ascribes to "ein genau lokalisiertes bretonisches Märchen." He finds in it, to be sure, a verbal borrowing from Wace :

Einsi alai, einsi reving,
 Au revenir por fol me ting.
 Si vos ai conté come fos
 Ce qu'onques mes conter ne vos. — YVAIN (vv. 577 ff.).

Fol m'en reuinc, fol i alai,
 Fol i alai, fol m'en reuinc,
 Folie quis, por fol me tinc. — ROMAN DE ROU (vv. 6418 ff.).

This parallel might at first make one think that Chrétien developed his story of the Fountain out of the hint given in the *Roman de Rou*, but Baist shows that this cannot be, for the Giant Herdsman who points out the way is plainly "eine märchenhafte Gestalt" whose invention is not to be ascribed to Chrétien. There remains, however, the possibility that Chrétien transferred a story about some Magic Fountain to the particular Fountain of Barenton of which he

learned from the poem of Wace.¹ That this part of the *Ivain* is based on a popular tale is proved, Baist thinks, by the repeated pointing out of the way, both at the Hospitable Castle and by the Giant Herdsman, by the contrasting of a first adventurer who fails with a second who succeeds, and by the repetition in both cases of the various particulars, all of which is "ganz genau im Märchenstil." One may guess, says Baist, that originally the Hospitable Castle and the Giant Herdsman "stood in more intimate relations with the adventure than Chrétien has cared to preserve." The change which Chrétien has made from the stags and hawks mentioned by Wace² to a herd of wild cattle, Baist believes to be significant, for marvellous herdsmen are common in insular Celtic stories. They are generally giant swineherds, but in the *Voyage of Maelduin*³ there is a gigantic cattle driver who points out the way. The figure, Baist thinks, is surely traditional. Finally, Baist declares that to the Welsh it was a matter of course that the Fairy of the Fountain belonged to the Winner of the Fountain. The French did not understand this, and so Chrétien introduced out of his own head the long psychological discussion by which Laudine is persuaded to marry the conqueror. To the Welsh the lady was a mere prize.⁴

¹ It seems more probable that the Other-World fountain had been already localized at Barenton before the time of Chrétien and Wace.

² *Roman de Rou*, 6409 ff. (ed. H. Andresen, II, 284):

La [Barenton] seut l'en les fees ueeir,
 Se li Breton nos dient ueir,
 E altres merueilles plusors;
 Aires i selt aueir d'ostors
E de granz cers mult grant plente;
 Mais vilain ont tot deserte.
 La alai io merueilles querre,
 Vi la forest e ui la terre,
 Merueilles quis, mais nes trouai.

Then follow the three lines just quoted (p. 23).

³ D'Arbois de Jubainville, *Cours de Litt. Celtique*, V, 472.

⁴ Baist compares *Kulhwch and Olwen* (J. Loth, *Les Mabinogion*, I, 188-189), in which Kilydd asks where he shall find a wife: "'I know one who will please you,' said one of his counsellors, 'that is the wife of King Doget,' and they resolved to fetch her, slew the king and carried away the lady." In the next sentence she is the wife of Kilydd. That she has become so the narrative does not think it

A brief but powerful statement of the view whose development has just been sketched, and one that may be appropriately quoted in conclusion, was published by Kittredge in 1898.¹ "The *Cligés*, we may remark in passing, formed no original part of 'the matter of Britain'; its Arthurian relations are due entirely to Chrétien. On this point there is no controversy. If now the 'Cligés' be compared with those works of the same author which are commonly thought to be referable to Celtic sources, the essential difference will be found striking, and in our opinion, significant.² . . . In the *Knight of the Lion* we have an admirable specimen of what one means by a 'romance of the Round Table.' . . . The lady is of course a *fée*, whose fate it is to marry whoever can overcome the (eldritch) knight who guards the well in the forest. But her husband can retain her favor only on terms of obedience and fidelity. Just as actual unfaithfulness to a fairy wife or fairy mistress always brings disaster and sometimes death, so, in this softened and rationalized form of the tale, the forgetfulness of Iwain and his failure to keep his day come near costing him the love of his lady. Her implacability is originally an essential trait of her fairy nature, though Chrétien himself may not have understood it in this way or have been aware that she was a *fée* at all, any more than Shakspeare fully understood the mythological antecedents of the Scandinavian Norns whom he found in Holinshead's account of Macbeth."

Every one, it will be observed, who has advocated what may be called the fairy mistress explanation of the romance of *Iwain*, has looked for a source in Celtic tradition. This is evidently the natural view. Chrétien practically tells us that he is following a *conte*, which he evidently expects us to regard as based on Celtic tradition; nearly

necessary to mention. This parallel is of course interesting, but the real point is not the brutality of Welsh customs, but the fact that Laudine was a fairy, and not originally the wife of Esclados at all.

¹ In a book review in the *New York Nation*, Feb. 24, 1898, LXVI, 150-151.

² Important evidence for the theory of a different origin of the *Iwain* from that of the *Cligés* is here brought forward. No one can pass directly from the former to the latter without being struck by the absence of those peculiarly Celtic features of fairy, wild man, and magic forest which give a distinctive flavor to the *Chevalier au Lion*.

all the names of the *dramatis personae* are Celtic; and the scene is laid in Wales or Armorica. There is, moreover, a special reason why this antecedent probability that the story of *Ivain* comes from Celtic sources is very great. The Celtic *fées* are distinctly superior beings, never surprised and taken captive by the hero, as the Germanic fairies regularly are, but dwelling like Laudine in a magic land, which must be visited by the hero, who thus puts himself in their power before his courtship even begins. They retain their superiority, and, like Iwain's mistress, insist on being obeyed even in the verbal details of a promise or else they punish and forsake their lover, who is always thought of as in their power.¹ Evidently it is from creatures like these, as distinguished from Germanic and other fairies, that such a character as Laudine must be derived.

¹ The important suggestion that the typical heroine of the French Arthurian romances of the twelfth century, who is thought of as far above her lover or her husband, was derived essentially from the ancient Celtic *fée* is due to Alfred Nutt (*Studies on the Legend of the Holy Grail*, pp. 232 ff.). Nutt points out that in Teutonic fairy stories the man plays the chief part, sometimes even forcing the fairy maiden to become his mistress. It is otherwise with the Celts: "Connla and Bran and Oisín must all leave this earth and sail across ocean or lake before they can rejoin their lady love; even Cuchullain, mightiest of all the heroes, is constrained, struggle as he may, to go and dwell with the fairy queen Fand, who has wooed him. Throughout, the immortal mistress retains her superiority. . . . This type of womanhood, capricious, independent, severed from ordinary domestic life, is assuredly the original of the Vivians, the Orgueilleuses, the Ladies of the Fountain of the romances; it is also one which must have commended itself to knightly devotees of mediæval romantic love. Their '*dame d'amour*' was as a rule another man's wife; she raised in their minds no thought of home or child. In the tone of their feelings towards her . . . they were closer akin to Oisín and Neave, to Cuchullain and Fand, than to Siegfried and Brunhild, or to Roland and Aude." In a more recent publication (*Voyage of Bran*, I, 156, note) Nutt has also said: "There is no parallel to the position or the sentiments of a Celtic heroine like Fand in the post-classic literature of Western Europe before Guinevere." (He might have said, before Laudine.)

CHAPTER IV.

ANCIENT CELTIC STORIES OF THE JOURNEY TO THE
OTHER WORLD.

I. THE TYPE.

To reach any just conclusion with respect to the question of the dependence of Chrétien's *Iwain* on Celtic Other-World stories, it is indispensable to secure as clear a conception as possible of what a typical Celtic fairy mistress story really was. It is extremely important, therefore, to have before us, at least in outline, all significant tales of this character which are unmistakably attested, on manuscript or other evidence, as belonging to a period more ancient than that of Chrétien.

In the case of Irish materials the evidence is of the most satisfactory sort imaginable. All of the Irish stories that will be quoted or summarized in the text of this chapter are preserved, at least in part, in one of two ancient manuscripts, the *Lebor na h-Uidre* and the *Book of Leinster*, which were written before the period of the rise of French Arthurian romance. The *Lebor na h-Uidre* (LU) was compiled and transcribed about the year 1100 by Moelmuiri mac Ceileachair, who died in 1106.¹ The *Book of Leinster* (LL) is as old as the year 1150.² These two manuscripts have preserved a mass of Irish Other-World lore of greater proved antiquity and of a more distinctive character than the fairy tales of any other Western people.

In Welsh, as in most other modern languages, there exist no manuscripts of so ancient date containing fairy tales. In view of this fact, the method adopted in this chapter is to develop the idea of the typical Celtic fairy mistress story on the basis of Irish material, using the two or three Welsh tales whose ancient character is perhaps most universally admitted,³ only as illustrative of incidents the presence

¹ Zimmer, *Kuhn's Zt.*, XXVIII, 417 (1887). Cf. Henderson, *Fled Bricrend*, pp. xxiv ff.

² Windisch, *Irische Texte*, I, 60.

³ The Welsh tales used are: *Pwyll Prince of Dyvet* (from the *Red Book of Hergest*) and *The Victims of Annwn*. The Red Book is a fourteenth-century MS.,

of which in Celtic story before the time of Chrétien has been established by the Irish narratives. Thus the validity of the method cannot be impugned on the score of dates. It can only be attacked, therefore, by questioning the closeness of the resemblances between the *Ivain* and Irish story,—a matter which is perfectly open and definite, so that every reader may decide for himself.

It ought, moreover, to be observed that there is *a priori* no reason to insist that, if the Celtic origin of the *Ivain* story be admitted, the resemblances between it and Irish tales must necessarily be very marked. The Brythonic stories were probably only parallel to the Goidelic, not identical with them, and it is only through the lost Brythonic stories that Celtic influences could have reached Chrétien. Irish tales are therefore two removes from Chrétien. The fact, then, that we do find marked resemblances between them and the *Ivain* must under the circumstances be regarded as doubly significant.

Apparently the most primitive in form of Celtic fairy mistress stories is that describing the adventures of Connla the Fair, which is proved by considerations of language to have been originally written down as early as the ninth century. The manuscript in which the tale is preserved is the *Lebor na h-Uidre*.

ECHTRA CONDLA CHAIM.¹

Why is he called Art All-alone? Not hard! One day Connla, son of Conn of the Hundred Battles, was at his father's side when he saw a woman

but mistakes in spelling and the actual existence of some fragments in a thirteenth-century MS. show that the scribe was copying an older text. Loth (*Les Mabinogion*, I, 18) thinks the tales of the Red Book were written down toward the end of the twelfth century. *Pwyll Prince of Dyvet*, however, is one of the four genuine Mabinogion concerning which Loth says (p. 9): "Elles appartiennent au cycle gallois le plus ancien et sont sans doute un reste du patrimoine commun aux Gaëls et aux Bretons." Elsewhere (p. 20) he says: "Elles plongent dans le plus lointain passé de l'histoire des Celtes." *The Victims of Annwn* is put by Stephens (*Lit. of the Kymry*, 2d ed., p. 273) in the twelfth or thirteenth century, but it shows no signs of the influence of French romance. It is preserved in a manuscript dating from the early part of the fourteenth century.

¹ Summarized from the Irish text as printed by Windisch, *Kurzgefasste Irische Grammatik*, pp. 118–120. For a French translation, see d'Arbois de Jubainville,

in wonderful garments coming to him. She invited him to the Fields of the Living, to enjoy "perpetual feasts without preparation, where king Boadag is an everlasting king without complaint and without grief in his land since he took the kingdom." The land is one of peace, and the people are the peaceful people.¹ The woman declared that she was young, beautiful, of noble race, not subject to age or decay. She loved Connla and had come to invite him to Mag Mell. She was invisible to every one but Connla, so that at first Conn wondered to whom his son was speaking. When he grasped the situation, he had his druid called to drive away the fairy by the use of spells.

Before the woman departed she gave Connla an apple. On this apple he lived for a month, for it was not diminished, however much he ate of it, but continued entirely untouched. No other food seemed to him worthy to be eaten except his apple. He was, moreover, seized with longing for the woman that he had seen.

At the end of a month the woman appeared again to Connla. She spoke to him of the delights of her land, where death was unknown, and invited him to enter her boat:

We must embark in my ship of glass
 If we are to reach Sid Boadaig.
 There is another land, —
 It were not worse for thee to visit it.
 I see the bright sun is setting.
 However far it is, we shall arrive before night.
 It is a land where is joy
 Passing the thought of everyone who visits it (?).
 There is no one dwelling there
 Except women and maidens.

Unable to resist his longing for the woman, Connla made a spring into her ship of glass, which thereupon withdrew gradually across the sea. He has not been seen since that time, nor is it known whither he went.

Art, thus deserted by his brother Connla, returned alone to the assembly.

L'Épopée Celtique, I, 385-390, and F. Lot, *Romania*, XXVII, 559 ff. For one in German, see Zimmer, *Zt. f. deutsches Alt.*, XXXIII, 262 ff. See Nutt, *Voyage of Bran*, I, 144 ff.

¹ "Æs side." This may mean rather "Her land is the land of the *Síd* [fairy hill] and her people the people of the *Síd*." Probably the words in the text are an attempt to etymologize *æs side*.

When his father saw him approaching thus unaccompanied, he exclaimed : " Art is All-alone to-day ; probably so is not his brother." So from this time the name " All-alone" [*Óenfer*] clung to Art.

Like most Irish fairy tales, this story evidently owes its preservation, not to its intrinsic charm, which surely for a modern reader is very great, but to the purely accidental fact that it has been at some time altered to explain, in a popular way, the name of one of Conn's sons, Art Óenfer. Fortunately the alterations in this case appear to have been very slight, — a mere tag at the beginning and the end, so that there is reason to hold that we have here a Celtic folk tale in practically its primitive form.¹ The story well illustrates the exalted character of the primitive Celtic *fée*. She is really a queen of the Other World. She woos the mortal hero with an almost haughty condescension. There is no thought of his capturing or outwitting her, as is regularly the case in Germanic fairy tales. She seeks out the hero and lures him away to her own land, from which he never returns.

The story is really an Other-World Journey. The *fée* lives across the sea, so that we have a hint of what is technically known as the *imram*.² The landscape of the Other World is not described. We learn, however, that it is a land of perpetual youth, where, without the intervention of a throng of servants, a never-ending feast is always ready. It is a land inhabited by women only. It possesses magic food that fails not, and is reached in a magic boat that accomplishes any distance before night. The *fée* herself has the power of being invisible to every one except him whom she seeks. All these traits reappear continually in later tales. Their occurrence in this very ancient story is evidence of the substantial continuity of Irish tradition.

¹ Probably the number of tales of this sort current in Ireland from pagan times on was very considerable, as indeed it continues to be down to the present day. Only a few of these, either because they were connected with some historical personage, or because they were made to explain some proper name, had the good fortune to be written down and preserved in MS.

² I distinguish between the genuine *imram*, a literary product, where stress is laid on the incidents of a voyage by sea and on the different islands visited, and the simple Other-World Journey, where, as here, though a voyage is mentioned, no importance is attached to it.

Another very ancient tale, which has, however, suffered complete remodelling by euhemeristic hands, is that called *The Debility of the Ultonian Warriors*. This is one of the *remscéla* ("introductory tales") brought into close connection with the famous *Táin Bó Cúailgne*. An original fairy mistress story has been altered to explain in a popular manner the extraordinary debility that befell the Ultonian warriors in the *Táin Bó* at the moment when they were attacked by the forces of Medb.¹

NOINDEN ULAD.²

Whence comes the Debility of the Ultonians? Not hard! Crunniuc, son of Agnoman, was a wealthy farmer. One day, as he was alone in his house, a woman of stately appearance entered. She seated herself and began to prepare food as if she had been in the house before. [She passed a whole day there without exchanging a word with any one.]³ When it was night, she gave directions to the servants without a question. She slept beside Crunniuc that night and remained with him for a long time.

One day there was an assembly held by the Ultonians to which they were accustomed to go, both men and women, sons and daughters. Crunniuc made ready to go with the others. ["Go not, said his wife, lest you run into danger by speaking of us; *for our union will continue* only if you do not speak of me in the assembly."⁴] "That shall not be," said he.

¹ This debility, which lasted for five nights and four days, whence the name *Noinden*, was perhaps really a sort of *couvade*: see Rhys, *Hibbert Lectures*, pp. 140, 363, and, for references on this strange custom, Suchier, *Aucassin und Nicolette*, 4th ed., pp. 54-55; Tylor, *Researches into the Early History of Mankind*, pp. 289-297. Miss Hull, however, suggests that it originated rather in a sort of *tabu* (*Cuchullin Saga*, p. 293).

² Summarized from the Irish text in the *Book of Leinster* as printed by Windisch, *Berichte der Gesellschaft der Wissenschaften zu Leipzig*, Phil.-hist. Classe, XXXVI, 336 ff. (1884). The story is found also in the later MSS. *Harleian 5280* (about 1560), *The Book of Fermoy* (fifteenth century), *The Yellow Book of Lecan* (fourteenth century). The Harleian text with a translation was printed by Windisch (l.c.). For a French translation, see d'Arbois, *L'Épopée Celtique*, I, 320 ff.; cf. E. Hull, *Cuchullin Saga*, pp. 77-100.

³ This sentence is not in LL. I insert it from the Harleian text.

⁴ This sentence is from the Harleian MS. In place of it LL. reads: "'It befits you,' said his wife, 'not to be overconfident and speak recklessly.'"

The assembly was held. Toward the end of the day the king's chariot with its horses won the victory. The people cried: "There is nothing swifter than these horses!" But Crunniuc said: "My wife is swifter." He was instantly seized by the king and ordered to be put to death unless he could prove his rash words. A messenger was sent to tell his wife. "It is truly a misfortune for me," said she, "that I must go to free him, for I am with child." The woman, however, went to the assembly and ran the race to save her husband. She reached the goal before the horses, but was delivered of twins on the spot and died. In her agony she screamed, and all the men who heard her cry fell into a weakness like that of a woman in travail for five nights and four days. This weakness returned periodically till the ninth generation: hence the *Noinden Ulad*. The woman's name was Macha, daughter of Sainreth mac Imbath.

In the above outline I have at two points (marked by brackets) followed the Harleian manuscript rather than the *Book of Leinster*, because at these points the later manuscript seems to me to have suffered less from the hands of the euhemerizer. In any case, the original fairy character of the lady appears beyond dispute. Her ancestry as given in the *Book of Leinster* is enough to indicate this: "Macha, daughter of Sainreth ('strange'), son of Imbath (ocean)."¹ That is to say: daughter of the Stranger and granddaughter of the Sea. She is therefore of the race of Manannán son of Ocean, who, as we shall see, plays an important part in most Celtic fairy tales.²

This story is important because its great antiquity is supported, not only by the external evidence already set forth, but by the primitive savagery attributed in it to the king, a bit of internal testimony sufficiently significant of itself. Taken together, these two stories, the *Connla* and the *Noinden*, whose ancient character is assured, seem to show that of the different conceptions of the *fée*, that which regarded her as a supreme being to whom every one else in the Other World is subject, was the older. In the *Connla*, to be sure, a king (Boadag) of Mag Mell is mentioned, but, as nothing is told about

¹ D'Arbois de Jubainville has pointed this out (*L'Épopée Celtique*, I, 325). The meaning of *imbath* (= ocean) is supported by Cormac's *Glossary*, p. 94.

² Manannán mac Lir, who appears in the Welsh tales of the *Red Book of Hergest* as Manawyddan ab Llyr, an Other-World power.

him and as the land is said to be inhabited by women only, perhaps he is a mere name inserted because it was felt that every land must have a king. Certainly it does not appear that he had power to limit in any way the liberty of the *fée*. In the euhemerized *Noinden* the most distinguishing feature of the original story, so far as we can make out, must have been that in it the position of the *fée* was so exalted that a single disobedience to her directions brought as its punishment¹ perpetual separation.

In the Irish tales next to be taken up (which are perhaps of later origin or at least are not preserved in so primitive forms as the

¹ A parallel to the *Noinden* may be found in the Latin of Walter Map, *De Nugis Curialium*, ii, 12. The tale is told of Wild Edric, who was lord of Ledbury North, a place in Hereford on the borders of Wales, and therefore very likely goes back to Welsh tradition. If so, it has suffered modification under Teutonic influence, for it represents the hero as carrying off the fairy, an incident never found in genuine ancient Celtic story. The true Celtic *fée* is never surprised. She is far too exalted for that. She always comes of herself, as in the *Noinden*, — an important distinction between it and the tale of Edric. In other respects, however, the story is so much like that of the *Noinden* (in both the *fée* is silent at first for a long time; in both she disappears when the prohibition is broken) that it may rest at bottom on a Welsh fairy mistress tale. If so, it is an example of the substantial parallelism of Welsh and Irish tradition. "One day as Edricus Wilde was returning from the hunt, accompanied only by a lad, he lost his way in the forest. About midnight he came to a brilliantly lighted house (*ghildhus*), within which he saw a band of noble women engaged in a solemn dance. One, more beautiful than the rest, charmed him beyond measure. Fired with love, he rushed into the house and forcibly carried off the object of his passion. She remained mute for three days, though she did not refuse his caresses. On the fourth day she spoke, saying: 'Hail, my dearest! You will be happy and prosperous till the day that you reproach me concerning the place or the wood in which I was found or concerning anything of the sort.' Edric promised to be faithful in his love. But some years later he chanced to return from the hunt at the third hour of the night. He called for his wife, and when she was long in appearing, he cried angrily: 'Pray, is it your sisters that have so long detained you?' At the words she instantly vanished. Edric mourned exceedingly, and visited again the place whence he had carried her off, but he was unable to call her back by any entreaties. He wept day and night even to the point of foolishness toward himself, for he wore out his life in perpetual grief." Cf. also Liebrecht, *Die Todten von Lustnau, Germania*, XIII, 161 ff. (and *Zur Volkskunde*, pp. 54 ff.), where many similar tales are cited.

Connla and the *Noinden*), although the *fée* retains the exalted position which is a distinctive mark of Celtic tradition, she is no longer absolutely independent. There are kings as well as queens of the Other World. The *fée* is regarded as the wife or the daughter of the king of Mag Mell. With the intrusion of the masculine element has come also the idea of combat. The Other World is no longer altogether a Land of Peace.

It is easy to see how these ideas may have been developed from the notion of a king of the Other World found already in the *Connla*. It is possible also that they may have existed from the earliest times side by side with the conception of the *fée* as supreme in authority over a land of peace. But the fact that the latter view is indicated in the two oldest tales is at least significant.

More important, however, is the consideration that in the *Serglige Conculaind* (the most complete of all the ancient tales of this *genre*), in which the *fée* is represented as the wife of Manannán, and in which a combat in the Other World is an important feature, all the leading parts are played by women. It is a fairy woman, Liban, who comes as a messenger to Cuchulinn and conducts him through the dangerous passage, and a woman, the *fée* herself, comes part way to meet him. The other-world actors in the story are all women. It looks, therefore, as if the men were originally mere servants or dependents of the *fée*.

Although the story of *Cuchulinn's Sick Bed* is tolerably accessible, yet, on account of its importance to this investigation, I have ventured to outline it at considerable length, following the Irish text as edited by Windisch.¹

SERGLIGE CONCULAIND.

Two birds linked together by a chain of gold visited a lake in Ulster and by their song put the host to sleep. Cuchulinn, though warned that

¹ *Irische Texte*, I, 197-227, from the *Lebor na h-Uidre*, where it is said to be extracted from "The Yellow Book of Slane," evidently an earlier MS. For English translations of the tale, see O'Curry, *Atlantis*, I, 362-392, II, 98-124 (1858); O'Looney in J. T. Gilbert, *Facsimiles of National MSS.*, I, 27-28, II, App. iv (1874-78). For a French translation, see d'Arbois de Jubainville, *L'Épopée Celtique*, I, 170-216. Cf. Zimmer, *Kuhn's Zt.*, XXVIII, 594 ff.

there was "some power behind the birds," sought to slay them (§ 7).¹ Being unsuccessful, he went away in bad spirits, and, sitting down against an upright stone, fell asleep. He saw two women come towards him, one in green and one in a five-folded crimson cloak. The woman in green went up to him and laughed and gave him a stroke of a whip. Then the other, coming up, also laughed and struck him, and this they did alternately till they left him nearly dead (§ 8).²

He was carried into a house, where he lay till the end of a year without speaking to any one (§ 9). Then, as he lay in the bed, a man mysteriously appeared, who sang verses promising him health and strength if he would accept the invitation of the daughters of Aed Abrat, one of whom, named Fand, wished to marry Cuchulinn (§ 10). The man departed after that, and they knew not whence he came or whither he went (§ 12). Cuchulinn rose up and spoke and went back to the upright stone, where he saw again the woman in the green cloak. From her he learned that Fand, deserted by her husband Manannán mac Lir, had fallen in love with him. Her own name is Liban. She is sister to Fand and wife to Labraid Swift-Hand-on-Sword, who has sent her to ask Cuchulinn for one day's assistance against Labraid's enemies, Senach Síabortha, Eochaid Iúil, and Eogan Inbir, promising in return to give him Fand to wife.

Cuchulinn sent his charioteer Loeg to see the mysterious land from which she came (§ 13). Liban and he went till they came to the place where Fand was waiting for them. Then, it is said, Liban took hold of Loeg by the shoulder. "O Loeg," said Fand, "thou wilt not come out alive to-day unless a woman protect thee!" "I have not been much accustomed to woman's protection," was Loeg's reply. Then they came to the water's edge, where they entered a boat of bronze and crossed over to an island (§ 14). Loeg saw Labraid and his palace and returning told his story to Cuchulinn and to every one else (§§ 16, 20).

Again³ Liban came to invite Cuchulinn to Mag Mell. She sang:

Labraid is over a pure lake
In a place that bands of women frequent.

¹ The references are to Windisch's sections.

² Cf. *Perlesvaus*, Potvin, I, 7, where a squire, wounded in a dream, wakes and finds the knife in his side.

³ Zimmer, *Kuhn's Zt.*, XXVIII, 600, in his demonstration of the compilatory character of the sagas in LU, well says that this double preliminary visit of Loeg, as well as the double invitation by Liban, must have arisen from the contamination of two different versions of Cuchulinn's adventures.

It would not be tedious to thee to go to his people
If thou art to visit Labraid Luath.

.
A bridle of gold is on his horses,
And it is not only this,
A pillar of silver and of glass, —
This it is which is in his house (§ 31).

“I will not go,” said Cuchulinn, “at a woman’s invitation.” “Let Loeg come then,” replied Liban, “to know everything.” “Let him go,” said Cuchulinn. Loeg therefore went with Liban and came to the place where Fand and Labraid were. Fand said: “Let Cuchulinn come with speed, for it is to-day that the battle is appointed” (§ 32). Thus admonished, Loeg returned, in company with Fand, to Cuchulinn, and sang these verses in praise of the land he had seen:

I came in the fraction of a moment
To a place wonderful although known,
Up to a cairn with a band of twenty,
Where I found Labraid Long-Hair.

.
There were two kings in the house,
Failbe Find and Labraid.
Three fifties about each of them,
This was the number of one house.
Fifty beds on the right side
And fifty their burden (?),
Fifty beds on the left side
And fifty their burden (?).
Front rails to the beds of wood,
Their posts of white gilded over,
And the light that they have
Is a precious glittering stone.
There is at the door toward the west,
In the place where the sun goes down,
A stud of pale horses with gay manes;
There is another, purple brown;
There are at the door toward the east
Three trees of shining purple
From which calls down the flock of birds,
Always gentle to the youths from the royal city.
There is a tree at the door of the enclosure,
Not hateful the harmony from it,
A tree of silver; against it the sun shines,

Like unto gold its great splendor.
 There are three-score trees,
 Their tops barely touching.
 Three hundred men are nourished by each tree,
 With fruit manifold, without rind.
 There is a well in the noble *síd*,
 With three fifties, gay mantled;
 And a brooch of gold, fair its color,
 In every one of the gay mantles.
 There is a cask there with joyous mead,
 Which is distributed to the household.
 It continues ever, enduring is the custom,
 So that it is always constantly full.
 There is a woman in this noble house;
 She is superior to the women of Ireland;
 With golden hair she comes out
 In her accomplished beauty.
 Her speech to the men of each king
 Is beautiful, is wonderful.
 She breaks the heart of every man
 For her love and her affection.

Loeg declared that so great was her beauty as to cause him "to fear for his honor." He added :

If there were to me all Ireland
 And the kingdom with the yellow hills,
 I would give it — no slight temptation —
 For the company in the place to which I came (§ 33).
 If I had not come away quickly,
 They had wounded me so that I had been powerless.

.
 The woman whom I speak of there,
 She robs the hosts of their wits (§ 34).

Cuchulinn, persuaded by these words, mounted his chariot and accompanied Loeg and Fand to Mag Mell (§ 35). The combat now took place. At early dawn, Cuchulinn transfixed with his spear Eochaid Iúil, who was washing himself at a well. After that, he slew Senach Síabortha and won a victory for Labraid (§ 36). In return, he received Fand, with whom he lived for a month. When he departed she said to him: "I will meet thee in whatever place thou shalt appoint for me to come."

After Cuchulinn returned home, he revealed to his wife Emer the appointed place of meeting. The jealous queen lay in wait with knives

to murder Fand. Cuchulinn rescued her (§ 39), but when Manannán mac Lir heard of it, he suddenly appeared, visible to Fand alone. When she saw him she sang :

See the son of the host of Lir
Across the plains of Eógan Inbir !
It is Manannán more beautiful than the world.
There was a time when he was dear to me.

.
I see over the ocean yonder —
No foolish person sees him —
The Horseman of the Hairy Sea.
He is not accompanied by a boat.
In his approach he has passed by us here.
No one sees him except fairy folk (§ 45).

Thereupon Fand forsook Cuchulinn and went with Manannán (§ 46). When Cuchulinn perceived his loss of Fand, "he sprang three leaps upward and three leaps to the right of Lúacra, so that he was for a long time without drink and without food among the mountains, and 'tis there that he slept every night upon the road of Midlúacra" (§ 47).

Emer persuaded Conchobar to send "poets and people of wisdom and druids of the Ulstermen" to heal Cuchulinn, but "he sought to murder the people of wisdom. However, they sang their druidical charms over him till they captured his feet and hands and till he recovered a little of his senses. He asked for a drink then. They gave him a drink of forgetfulness." As he drank the drink, there was no recollection to him of Fand nor of anything that he had done. Manannán shook his cloak between Cuchulinn and Fand so that they should never meet again (§ 48).

This is the oldest known example of that particular type of Celtic fairy mistress story to which, on the hypothesis of a Celtic source, the original tale of Iwain must have belonged. The story, it will be observed, shows no noticeable modification by either Christian or classical influences. It appears, therefore, to embody genuine pagan tradition,¹ though, as I have hinted, it may not be so old a form of the type as that which represents the *fée* as altogether supreme. The

¹ Whether the primitive Celtic character of the story be admitted or not, is, however, of no consequence to the question of Chrétien's source. For the purposes of this study, it is enough to know that the story in its present form was current among the Celts at the time when LU was written.

tale of course owes its preservation to the fact that it is told of the great hero Cuchulinn, who was regarded as an historical personage.¹ In the same way, the original tale of Iwain, from which, according to the hypothesis, Chrétien drew, was connected no doubt with the historical Owen, a hero of the Brythonic Celts.

The resemblances between the story of Cuchulinn's Other-World Journey and the *Iwain* may be put somewhat compactly as follows: In the *Serglige*, it is the account given by a previous adventurer, Loeg, that stirs Cuchulinn to undertake the Other-World Journey. The same is true in the *Iwain*, where the tale of Calogrenant supplies the incentive. In both stories the encounter with the Other-World folk is provoked by going to a particular spot and performing a particular act. Cuchulinn sits down against an upright stone; Iwain pours water on the stone at the Fountain Perilous. The Other-World landscape as described by Loeg reminds one distinctly of the marvellous scenery at the Fountain Perilous. In both there is a tree from which a flock of birds sings with harmony, while close at hand is "a noble well." Loeg's description of the beauty of Fand, "which robs the hosts of their wits," reads like an extract from Iwain's reflections at the sight of Laudine. There is a dangerous passage on the way to the Other World, according to the *Serglige*, from which Loeg is told that he will not return alive unless a woman protects him. Liban therefore takes him by the shoulder at this point. Similarly in the *Iwain* the hero escapes from the peril at the falling gates by the aid of a woman, Lunete, who is, like Liban, the messenger and *confidante* of the lady.² In both stories the hero must be

¹ The best authorities still so regard him (see Zimmer, *Keltische Studien*, II, 189).

² Chrétien does not say that Lunete is, like Liban, the sister of the lady, but he represents her as occupying such a position of influence that it is natural to think that she may have been, in a more primitive form of the tale, the lady's sister. Cf. *Iwain*, vv. 1589 ff.:

La dameisele estoit si bien
De sa dame que nule rien
A dire ne li redotast,
A quoi que la chose tornast,
Qu'ele estoit sa mestre et sa garde.

In *Le Bel Inconnu* the messenger is a sister of the enchanted lady for whom she seeks help at Arthur's court, and so in other similar stories.

the victor in a combat before he secures the lady's hand. Cuchulinn slays Eochaid Iúil and Senach Síabortha. Iwain slays Esclados the Red.* In both, the hero marries the lady. In both, he leaves her to return to his own land. In both, for a slight offense (in the *Serglige*, because of his having revealed to his wife the appointed place of meeting; in the *Iwain* for having overstayed his time), he loses her. In both, the result is the madness of the hero, who runs wild in the forests or on the mountains.¹ In both cases he is cured by a marvellous remedy: Iwain by an ointment of "Morgue la sage," Cuchulinn by a druidical "drink of forgetfulness." In carrying this parallel out, Laudine naturally equates with Fand,² Lunete with Liban,

¹ Cuchulinn, it is said, "went without drink and without food." Iwain's hunger in the same situation is thus described in v. 2852: "Mes li fains l'angoisse et esforce."

² The meaning of the name Fand is given in the *Serglige* ("Fand ainm na dére": Windisch, *Irische Texte*, I, 210) as "tear-drop." Manannán, son of Ocean, is evidently a sea divinity. Rhys is perhaps therefore right in identifying this Liban, daughter of Aed Abrat, with a Liban, daughter of Eocho, who, in the story called the *Destruction of Eocho mac Mairredo* (in LU, 39, a 22 ff., edited and translated by Crowe, *Proceedings of R. H. and A. A. of Ireland*, 187c, pp. 94-112; the same tale, from a late MS., is in O'Grady, *Silv. Gad.*, II, 267 ff.), is a woman in charge of a magic well, which, neglected by her, overwhelmed her and changed her into a mermaid, half salmon, half woman (Rhys, *Hib. Lect.*, p. 463, mistakenly says into "an otter"), while the water formed Loch Neagh. After she had ranged the sea for three hundred years, Beon heard her singing beneath his boat. She told him that she had come on purpose to make an appointment to meet him a year hence. On that day she was caught. Comgall baptized her *Muirghein* (sea-birth).

The Land *beyond* the Waves, where the fairy folk are represented as dwelling (cf. Labraid's Isle in the *Serglige*), was no doubt confused with the Land *beneath* the Waves, just as Zimmer has shown that the Fairies of the Síd and the Fairies of the Land beyond the Waves are never kept separate (*Zt. f. deutsches Alt.*, XXXIII, 276). It is not, therefore, surprising to find the people of the Other World provided with names appropriate to the waters (cf. Macha, granddaughter of the Sea, in the *Noinden*). That the Celtic Other World was early confused with the Land beneath the Waves is clear from the tale of *Loegaire mac Crimthann* in the *Book of Leinster*. This story has never been translated from the ancient manuscript. A translation from a fifteenth century manuscript may be found in O'Grady, *Silva Gadelica*, II, 290-291. The following outline is made from the R. I. A. *Book of Leinster Facsimile*, 275, β, 22-276, β, 20:

and Esclados with Manannán, son of Ocean, for Cuchulinn secures the love of Fand after the departure of Manannán, just as Iwain does that of Laudine after the death of Esclados. The *fée* is in both tales already married to a husband, with whom possession of her must be disputed.

Crimthann Cas, king of Connaught, held a great assembly by Bird Lake in the plain of Aei. When the host arose early in the morning, they saw approaching through the mist a man in a five-folded purple mantle. A gold-rimmed shield was slung on him, a gold-hilted sword was in his belt, and golden hair streamed behind him. The stranger was welcomed by Loegaire, the king's son, to whom he declared that he was Fiachna mac Retach of the Fairy Folk. His wife has been carried off by a hostile prince. He has fought several unsuccessful battles to recover her, and this very day another battle is appointed. It is to solicit help that he is come. "Not to aid this man were a shameful thing," said Loegaire, and together with fifty fighting men he stepped out after the stranger, who, still preceding them, dived into the *loch*, and they followed him [*Gaibidside remib fón loch. Gabaitseom dono ina dhiaid.* 276, a, 20]. When they reached Mag Mell, they engaged in the battle against Fiachna's enemy Goll. Goll was slain, and Fiachna's wife was rescued. That night Fiachna's daughter was bestowed on Loegaire, and on his fifty lads fifty other women. So to a year's end they abode.

One day Loegaire asked leave to go and seek tidings of his land. "If ye would come back," Fiachna enjoined, "take horses with you and by no means dismount from them." So when he and his companions had reached their own land of Connaught, their friends rushed forth to meet them, but were warned off by Loegaire, who said, "Touch us not; 't is to bid you farewell that we are here." "Leave me not!" implored his father Crimthann. But Loegaire sang: "One night of the nights of the Síd I would not give for thy kingdom." So he turned from them and entered the Síd, where with Fiachna he exercised kingly rule and the daughter of Fiachna beside him.

A striking parallel to this prohibition of dismounting is to be found in what we must regard as essentially the Welsh tale of Herla (Walter Map, *De Nugis*, It 11), "a king of the very ancient Britons," who visited the Under World and on returning was given a dog and warned not to allow any of his train to dismount till the dog had done so. Herla, on coming out into daylight, found that he had been absent more than two hundred years, though it seemed but three days. One of his train dismounted, disregarding the injunction respecting the dog, and forthwith fell in a heap of dust. As the dog has not yet dismounted, Herla and his train are compelled to wander over the world. On the punishment for dismounting, cf. the fate of Nechtan, *Voyage of Bran*, § 65, and that of Guingamor (see Schofield, in *Studies and Notes*, V, 221 ff.). Other parallels might easily be collected.

The diligent reader of Arthurian material must feel a certain probability in this parallel between Esclados le Ros and Manannán, the tricky magician and shape-shifter of the Celts.¹ The mysterious

¹ Rhŷs, *Hib. Lect.*, pp. 370-371, suggests a connection between Manannán and the Irish stem *mon-* ("a trick"). The shape-shifting character of Manannán is well established. In a quotation from the *Tain Bó* (LU) in O'Curry's *Manners and Customs*, II, 310, it is said: "Cuchulinn threw his mantle of invisibility over him, manufactured from the precious fleeces of the land of the immortals, which had been brought him by Manannán mac Lir." In the *Book of Leinster*, 152, β, 16, we read that one of Manannán's messengers, Fer-Fí, had the power of assuming at pleasure a woman's shape. In some fragmentary Annals in *Egerton 1782*, a fifteenth century MS. (translated by O'Grady, *Silva Gad.*, II, 425), it is said: "The notable Mongan was son to that same Fiachna; for albeit certain dealers in antiquarian fables do propound him to have been son to Manannán, and wont to enter at his pleasure into diverse shapes, yet this we may not credit," where the connection felt between Manannán and shape-shifting is clear. In the *Legend of Eithne*, in the *Book of Fermoy*, a fifteenth century MS. (summarized by Todd, *R. I. A., Irish MS. Series*, I, i, 46), we are told that Manannán was the great astrologer and magician of the Tuatha De Danaan. He settled them in the most beautiful valleys, drawing round them an invisible wall, impenetrable to the eyes of other men, and impassable. Manannán also supplied them with the ale of Goibhenn the Smith, which preserved them from old age and death, and gave them for food his own swine, which, although killed and eaten one day, were alive again and fit for eating the next, and so would continue for ever. In the *Sons of Usnech*, edited and translated in *Irische Texte*, II, ii, 109-184, Naisi exclaims (p. 171): "Behold the sword of Manannán mac Lir. It leaves no relic of stroke or blow behind." In the *Fate of the Children of Tuirenn* (translated by Joyce, *Old Celtic Romances*, pp. 36 ff., from a fifteenth century MS.) Luge is described as possessing a full set of Manannán's belongings: "He rode Manannán's steed *Enbarr* of the flowing mane. No one was ever killed on this steed, for she travelled with equal ease on land and on sea. He wore Manannán's coat of mail, through which no one could be wounded. He had on Manannán's breast plate, that no weapon could pierce, and Manannán's helmet *Cannbarr*, that glittered with dazzling brightness (p. 49). Manannán's sword, *The Answerer*, hung at his side; no one ever recovered from its wound. Those who were opposed to it in battle had no more strength in looking at it than a woman in violent sickness." (There is a remarkable parallel in this sword to Caliburnus, Geoffrey, ix, 4.) Manannán is connected with the Isle of Man, which was perhaps confused by the early Celts with the Land beyond the Waves. There is in Cormac's *Glossary* and in the *Yellow Book of Lecan* (Skene, *Four Books*, I, 79; Rhŷs, *Hib. Lect.*, p. 664) a strictly euhemerized account of him, which yet lays stress on his shrewdness: "Manannán mac Lir, a celebrated merchant between Erin, Alban and the Isle of Man. A druid

red knight¹ who encountered Iwain at the fountain has absolutely no character of his own. One cannot but fancy that he was, in an earlier form of the story, some one in disguise.

It is convenient for the purpose of illustration to arrange the incidents of the *Serglige* and those of the *Iwain* in parallel columns, as on the following page.

From this table it will be seen that of the seventeen incidents which make up the main portion of the *Iwain*,² ten may be traced

(i.e. magician) was he also, and he was the best navigator, and used to know through his science the calms and storms." Modern Celtic folk-tales agree in representing Manannán as a shape-shifter (cf. Larminie, *West Irish Folk-Tales*, p. 64, and especially *Gloss Gavlen*, Larminie, pp. 1-9).

It is plain, from a poem in the *Black Book of Caermarthen* (written before 1189) that this character of Manannán was shared by the ancient Welsh Manawyddan ab Llyr. See Skene, *Four Books*, I, 262 (text, II, 51):

Manawydan the son of Llyr,
Deep was his counsel.
Did not Manawyddan bring
Perforated shields from Trywruidd?

In the *Book of Taliesin* (fourteenth century MS.), Skene, I, 276 (text II, 153), he is connected with the Other World:

Complete is my chair in Caer Sidi . . .
It is known to Manawyddan and Pryderi.

In the *Mabinogi of Manawyddan ab Llyr* (Loth, *Les Mabinogion*, I, 97 ff.) he is represented as outwitting Llwyd ab Kilcoet, the greatest enchanter of Britain. Perhaps the numerous different trades that Manawyddan successively takes up in this tale are a relic of his habit of assuming different shapes.

¹ See pp. 114 ff., below.

² The *Serglige* furnishes no parallel to the latter portion of the *Iwain*. Celtic fairy mistress tales usually end, as the *Iwain* appears to do, with a reconciliation between the hero and the *fée*, and his permanent residence with her in the Other World. Whether the original tale of Fand ended in this way or not, such a *dénouement* could not be retained when the story was worked up into its present form as a definite part of the Cuchulinn saga, for the later adventures and the death of Cuchulinn are there related. We may suppose, therefore, that the original ending of the *Serglige* has suffered modification. The first part of the *Serglige* is not paralleled in the *Iwain*. It is to be noted, however, in regard to the coming of Liban to invite Cuchulinn to the Other World (incident 4 of the table), that Lunete is made to say in the *Iwain* (vv. 1004 ff.) that she had been sent once as

SERGLIGE CONCLAIND.	CHRÉTIEN'S IVAIN.	MATRON OF EPHESUS.
1. Visit of Mysterious Birds	<i>Calogrenant's Previous Visit.</i> <i>Hospitable Host.</i> <i>Giant Herdsman.</i> <i>Marvellous Landscape.</i> <i>Rain-Making Fountain.</i> <i>Combat with Esclados.</i> <i>Falling Gates.</i> <i>Protection by Lady's Confidante.</i> <i>Invisible-Rending Ring.</i> <i>Warrior is the Lady's Husband.</i> <i>Corpse bleeds before the Slayer.</i> <i>Effects of the Lady's Beauty.</i> <i>Marriage with the Lady.</i> <i>Arrival of King Arthur.</i> <i>Departure of the Hero.</i> <i>Broken Promise and Madness.</i> <i>Cure by Magic Remedy.</i> <i>Helpful Lion.</i> <i>Conflicting Appointments.</i> <i>Combat with Giant Harpin.</i> <i>Rescue of Damsel by Judicial Combat.</i> <i>Daughters of the Black Thorn.</i> <i>Castle of Ill Adventure.</i> <i>Combat of Frates Jurati.</i> <i>Reconciliation of Hero and Lady.</i>	1. —
2. Sickness of the Hero		2. —
3. An Other-World Visitor		3. —
4. Meeting with Lady's Confidante		4. —
5. Loeg's Visit to the Other World		5. —
6. A Perilous Passage		6. —
7. Protection by Lady's Confidante		7. —
8. Other-World Landscape		8. A kindly Confidante.
9. Effects of Fand's Beauty		9. —
10. Combat in the Other World		10. —
11. Marriage with Fund		11. —
12. Departure of Cuchulinn		12. —
13. Broken Faith and Madness		13. Remarriage of newly bereaved Widow.
14. Cure by Magic Remedy		14. —
		15. —
		16. —
		17. —
		18. —
		19. —
		20. —
		21. —
		22. —
		23. —
		24. —
		25. —

[Not paralleled in the *Serglige*.]

more or less distinctly in the older tale. The arrangement of the episodes, too, is essentially the same, for incidents 6 and 7 of the *Serglige* have been inserted in the table from Loeg's narrative. It would be fair to transpose them to the later journey of Cuchulinn, of which of course they must have been episodes also.

The table is given at this point as an aid to the study of the Other-World Journey type of story. It is not maintained that by itself it proves much. Doubtless one or two of the parallels noted, as perhaps that between the perilous passage encountered by Loeg and the falling gates in the *Iwain*, may for the present seem not to be significant. But the matter does not end here. We are able, and this will be our next task, to trace these motives through the mass of Celtic Other-World story and thus determine their typical development. In this way it will be possible to ascertain what the significance of the parallels here indicated really is. The table serves to make it plain that parallels of some sort to most of the incidents of the main portion of the *Iwain* can be pointed out in this one ancient story, which, it must be remembered, is, so to speak, two removes from Chrétien. In the first place, it is a Goidelic and not a Brythonic tale, and, in the second place, Chrétien either did not understand the Other-World character of what, according to the hypothesis, we must suppose to have been the essentially Brythonic material he was using, or else he deliberately rationalized it so far as he was able.

For the present, it is plain that enough striking resemblances have been observed to make the theory that the *Iwain* is at bottom an Other-World tale parallel to the *Serglige*, at least very plausible. If we take but four significant parallels, — (1) the fact that both Cuchulinn and Iwain are persuaded to their journey by the tale of a previous adventurer; (2) Loeg's description of the Other-World landscape, which is very like that at the Fountain Perilous; (3) the parallel between Liban, the messenger and *confidante* of Fand, and Lunete; (4) the madness of the hero consequent upon the loss of the mistress in both stories, — surely we have here at least a better framework,

a messenger by her lady to Arthur's court. Perhaps, therefore, an older form of the tale of Iwain had a parallel here. Lunete may have been sent to Arthur's court to invite one of his knights to the marvellous land where her lady dwelt.

out of which we may suppose that Chrétien built up his romance, than the *Matron of Ephesus* could ever furnish. In the *Matron of Ephesus* one can find at most but two motives parallel to the *Ivain*, — the remarriage of a newly bereaved widow, and the presence of a lady's maid or *confidante* who favors the suitor. Whatever discretion, therefore, at this point the reader may exercise about drawing too definite conclusions as to the certainty of a Celtic origin for the *Ivain*, the *Matron of Ephesus* hypothesis must, it would seem, from now on, be regarded as permanently disposed of.

CHAPTER IV (*Continued*).

ANCIENT CELTIC STORIES OF THE JOURNEY TO THE OTHER WORLD.

II. THE COMBAT MOTIVE.

FROM the *Serglige*, as well as from the *Tale of Loegaire* (where as a reward for his aid the hero receives the daughter of the fairy king), it is clear that participation in a successful combat in the Other World was very early¹ represented as a necessary condition for winning the hand of a *fée*. In these two stories, however, the parallel to the *Ivain* is not very close, because it is a general battle, not a single combat like that with Esclados, which is described. It is interesting, therefore, to compare at this point an ancient Welsh tale in which a distinct account of a single combat in the Other World appears:

PWYLL AND ARAWN.²

Arawn, a king of the Other World (*Annwn*), appeared to Pwyll, prince of Dyfed in Wales, and proposed an exchange of kingdoms, his object

¹ Though, as has been hinted, perhaps not in the earliest tales.

² Summarized from *Pwyll Prince of Dyvet*, one of the four genuine Mabinogion. See Loth, *Les Mabinogion*, I, 27-38, and, for the Welsh text, Rhys and Evans, *Red Book*, I, 1-8.

being to have the other take his place in a single combat which had been appointed for a certain day one year from that time.¹ The antagonist was Hafgan, an Other-World king with whom Arawn was continually at war. Arawn declared to Pwyll: "I will set thee in my place in Annwn and give thee the most beautiful woman thou hast ever seen to sleep with thee every night. And I will put my shape and semblance on thee, so that not a page of the chamber that has always followed me shall know that it is not I. I will take thy kingdom and will cause that no one in all thy dominions shall know that I am not thou." Pwyll agreed to this, and went to *Annwn* in Arawn's shape, where he took his place beside a queen of wondrous beauty.² When the day appointed for the combat was at hand, the fairy hosts assembled. An officer made this announcement: "The battle is between two kings, and between them only. Each claims the other's land and territory. Ye are to remain quiet and allow the two to decide the fight." Pwyll wounded Hafgan mortally. Afterwards he re-exchanged³ with Arawn, who "gave to Pwyll his own proper semblance while he himself took his own." When Pwyll returned to Dyfed he found that no one had been aware of his absence, and that his kingdom had been better governed than usual that year.

In this tale Arawn takes the place of Manannán as the husband of the *fée*. It will be observed that, like the latter, he is a shape-shifter. He has power to exchange his appearance with that of Pwyll. As in the *Serglige*, a contest between the husband and the mortal hero for the possession of the *fée* seems to be hinted at. Cuchulinn enjoyed the company of Fand, after she had been forsaken by Manannán, and lost her when her husband returned. So Pwyll was entertained in Annwn during the absence of Arawn.

There is in the same mabinogi another tale in which the element of contest for the possession of the *fée* comes out clearly:

¹ Similarly in the *Serglige* (§ 32) and in the *Tale of Loegaire*, the time of the Other-World combat was already *fixed* before the message came to the mortal hero urging him to participate. This is a good example of the parallelism of Welsh and Irish story.

² The Welsh tale, however, with unprimitive scrupulosity, makes him respect the chastity of Arawn's queen.

³ The second meeting of Pwyll and Arawn occurs at the same particular spot as the first, just as Cuchulinn returned to the same upright stone (*Serglige*, § 13). Another parallel between Welsh and Irish story.

PWYLL AND GWAWL.¹

Pwyll visited the summit of a mound concerning which the tradition was that whoever sat there would see a prodigy. Pwyll had no sooner seated himself than he saw a lady riding past on a white horse. She was clad in a garment of shining gold. As no one could tell who she was, he despatched one of his followers to pursue her. After a chase on foot, the man returned, saying that he could not overtake her. Pwyll gave him the swiftest horse he had, but the man was even then unsuccessful. "There was some magic about the lady that kept her always the same distance ahead, though she appeared to be riding slowly." The next day Pwyll returned to the mound. Again he saw the lady. Again he despatched a mounted servant, and again pursuit was unsuccessful. The third day Pwyll himself, mounted on a swift steed, pursued the lady. Finding himself unable to gain on her, he exclaimed: "For the sake of the man whom you love, wait for me!" At his cry she stopped and waited for him to come up. Pwyll never saw a lady so beautiful. She told him she came solely for love of him. She is Rhiannon, who is to be married to Gwawl, a suitor whom she detests. She will have no one unless it be Pwyll. At her suggestion, Pwyll promised to come at the end of a year to rescue her for himself.

At the appointed day Pwyll went, and was received by Rhiannon at a feast. But a petitioner came in and sought a boon. Pwyll rashly promised him whatever he should ask. He asked for Rhiannon. It was Gwawl, the hated suitor, who had disguised himself as a petitioner in order to trick Pwyll.² Pwyll's princely honor kept him from breaking his word once given, and he handed Rhiannon over to Gwawl. However, she persuaded Gwawl to depart for a year's time, and before sending Pwyll away she gave him a magic bag, and instructed him how to entrap his hated rival.

At the end of a year the two suitors returned to Rhiannon, and Pwyll entrapped Gwawl in the bag. His enemy once in the bag, Pwyll wound his horn. His warriors, who were in ambush without, entered and seized all who attempted to resist. Each warrior as he passed dealt a blow at the bag. At length, to escape the punishment of the bag, Gwawl consented to release Pwyll from his rash promise. Thus Pwyll remained in possession of Rhiannon.

¹ Summarized from Loth, *Les Mabinogion*, I, 38-52. For the Welsh text, see Rhys and Evans, *Red Book*, I, 8 ff.

² No one recognizes Gwawl. It is probable, therefore, that he, like Manannán and Arawn, had the power of shape-shifting.

Several of the motives traced in the previous tales recur distinctly in this. There is ever a particular spot to which one must resort in order to meet the fairy folk. Cuchulinn returned to the upright stone. Pwyll, in the previous tale, made his way to the spot where he first met Arawn. In the present narrative, it is from the top of a particular mound that Pwyll on three successive days describes the approach of the *fée*. So in the *Iwain*, whoever makes his way to the Fountain Perilous and pours water on the rock, will encounter the hostile knight. One of the notes of the Other-World Journey is that the coming of the hero is always expected. He may fancy that he has stumbled upon the *fée* by chance, but as a matter of fact she has chosen him long before and lured him to her. Not always, as in the *Echtra Condla*, and as here, does she come in person to escort him. But when her messenger appears, as Liban did to Cuchulinn, it is none the less surely at her suggestion.¹

Although in this tale of Pwyll a set combat with the unearthly suitor for possession of the *fée* is lacking, yet in the episode of the bag a situation of the sort is closely approximated. Certainly, from a story of this type the idea of representing the *fée* as guarded by a suitor or a husband, who must be overthrown before she can be approached, might naturally be developed. In the first place, as we have seen, it is likely that the *fée* was supreme. She dwelt in a Land of Women, where, though there may have been a king, he was a mere name and did not interfere with the perfect liberty of the *fée*. But the tendency to make the Other World a counterpart of this earth was strong. In the *Serglige*, the *Loegaire*, and their Welsh analogues, the notion of fighting is present, and the *fée*, except in the *Tale of Loegaire*, has a husband or a suitor like any mortal woman. From this the step to regarding her as more or less in the power of a warrior, who must be overthrown before she can be reached, is a natural one. Originally this opposing warrior was probably only a creature of the *fée*, sent out by her to test the hero's valor. He may have appeared for this purpose in various gigantic shapes. If so,

¹ For this reason it is probable that the previous visit of Lunete to Arthur's court, referred to in *Iwain*, vv. 1004 ff., was at bottom for the purpose of persuading Iwain to his marvellous journey.

the tendency for confusion to arise between this situation, and the common incident of a giant who has a charming wife, or a pretty daughter, who gladly yields herself as prize to the hero who can slay the tyrant, would be strong. Even, therefore, if our analogues stopped here, we might safely explain the situation of Laudine with respect to Esclados, as a natural development of the combat-episode found in the *Serglige* and in the Welsh parallels, most probably helped by confusion with the well-known motive of the giant¹ and the lady. There is evidence that Esclados may have been represented as a giant in an earlier form of the tale. Calogrenant's description of him ("[Il] fu sanz dote Plus granz de moi la teste tote," v. 521. 2) and of his lance ("n'estoit mie legiere, Einz iert plus grosse au mien cuidier Que nule lance a chevalier ; Qu' einz nule si grosse ne vi," vv. 534-537) is borne out by the description of the corresponding warrior in the analogous episode of "La Joie de la Cort" in the *Erec*: "Qui mout estoit granz a mervoilles" and

Estoit un pié plus granz
A tesmoing de totes les janz,
Que chevaliers que l'an seiist (vv. 5900-5905).

¹ Whoever doubts that the popular tale of a giant with a beautiful captive was current among the ancient Celts should read a passage from the *Tochmarc Emere* (LU, 126, α 11-41), translated and discussed by Zimmer in *Haupt's Zt.*, XXXII, 240-241. The whole saga has since been published by K. Meyer in *Zt. f. Celt. Phil.*, III, 229 (from MS. Harl. 5280). Cuchulinn, on his way to Ireland, stops at an island. He finds the daughter of the king about to be given to two giants (*fomoir*) unless a champion can be found. Cuchulinn slays the giants. Many go to the palace of the king and pretend to have done the deed, but the girl recognizes Cuchulinn. The king thereupon offers his daughter to Cuchulinn, who refuses her and departs. The incident of others who claim credit for the rescue, while the hero alone is recognized by the girl, marks this as essentially a popular tale. Rhys has pointed out (*Hib. Lect.*, pp. 342 ff.) that in one of Cuchulinn's expeditions to the Other World (preserved only in a fourteenth-century manuscript: see *Irish Texts*, II, i, 173-209) a giant has to be fought. Cuchulinn goes in a mysterious boat belonging to the Prince of Alban to a beautiful island surrounded by a wall of silver and a palisade of bronze, where he is entertained. He is directed to an adjoining island, where he encounters the giant Coirpre. After a long battle, the giant is overcome. He thereupon becomes very hospitable, brings Cuchulinn to his house, and bestows on him his daughter.

By good fortune, moreover, there is another ancient fairy-mistress story told of Cuchulinn, in which an exact parallel to the incident of Laudine's speedy marriage to the slayer of her husband appears. It is therefore certain that a development similar to that just assumed had actually taken place among the Celts before the time of Chrétien. The story occurs in a *Dinnshenchas* which gives only the summary of an ancient tale, rationalized so as to read like history. It runs in brief as follows¹:

THE TALE OF CUROI.

Curoi mac Dairi's wife Bláthnat, daughter of Menn, king of Falga, loved Cuchulinn and urged him to come and take her from Curoi. Cuchulinn did so. At an appointed signal, he stormed the fort, slew its owner, and married Bláthnat. Together with her he secured the famous cows and cauldron belonging to Curoi.

Falga is glossed in the manuscript "the Hebrides of to-day,"² but there can be no doubt that it was a synonym for the Other World.³ It is sometimes identified with the Isle of Man,⁴ which, as we noted when treating of Manannán, was confused by the ancient Celts with the Land beyond the Waves. Menn (or Mider), king of the Isle of Man (or Fairyland), is well known.⁵ It is clear, then, that Bláthnat was a *fée*.

Curoi, her husband, is an exactly parallel figure to Manannán mac Lir.⁶ He is a magician and shape-shifter, and also Lord of

¹ *Facsimile of the Book of Leinster*, 169, β, 42 ff. Printed by O'Grady, *Silva Gadelica*, II, 482 (translation at p. 530).

² "Inse Gall indiu" (LL, 169, β, 46).

³ It is so used in the Bodley *Dinnshenchas* (see Nutt, *Voyage of Bran*, I, 213, and *Folk Lore*, III, 471).

⁴ Henderson, *Fled Bricrend*, p. 142; Rhŷs, *Hib. Lect.*, p. 476.

⁵ He so appears in the *Tochmarc Étaíne* in the *Lebor na h-Uidre*, edited by Windisch, *Irish Texts*, I, 127 ff.; cf. I, 204, note.

⁶ O'Grady, *Hist. of Ireland*, p. 220, note (cited by Henderson, *Fled Bricrend*, p. 195), views Curoi "as the great Southern marine genius, corresponding to Manannán amongst the Northern Irish." Henderson (p. 197) calls him "a great magician, really an Other-World power, at any rate a water-demon like Grendel."

the Sea. His combat with Cuchulinn is referred to in an ancient Welsh poem, *Marwnat Corroi map Dayry*,¹ which shows that his story was famous among the Brythonic as well as the Goidelic Celts.

¹ No. xlii in the *Book of Taliessin*, a manuscript considered by Skene (*Four Books*, I, 3) to belong to the beginning of the fourteenth century. The text is printed by Skene, II, 198, with a translation, I, 254-255. I quote a more recent translation by Rhŷs in *Proc. of Roy. Soc. of Ant. of Ireland*, XXI, 642 ff. (1891).

A LAMENT FOR CORROI.

Thy broad fountain replenishes the world:
 It comes, it goes, it hurries to Dover.
 The death-wail of Corroi has startled me;
 Cold the deed of him of rugged passions,
 Whose crime was one which few have heard of.
 Daire's son held a helm on the Southern Sea,
 Sung was his praise before his burial.
 Thy broad fountain replenishes Nonneu:
 It comes, it goes, it hurries to Dover;
 But mine is the death-wail of Corroi;
 Cold the deed of him of rugged passions,
 Whose crime was one that few have heard of.

Thy broad fountain replenishes thy tide,
 Thine arrow speeds for the . . . strand of Dover,
 Subjugator, vast is thy battle-front,
 And after Man it is to the towns
 They go . . . of Gwinionydd.
 Whilst victorious the space of . . . morning
 News I am told of men on the ground,
 The adventures of Corroi and Cuchulainn,
 Of many a turmoil on their frontier,
 Whilst the head of a gentle host was . . .
 The noble fort that falls not nor quakes.
 Blessed is the soul that meant it.

Instead of "Daire's son held a helm," etc., Skene translates, "Mac Daire, lord of the southern sea." In any case, it is plain that the poem calls the ocean Curoi's "broad fountain," which is enough to mark him as a kind of sea-divinity. It is fair to add that O'Curry, *Manners and Customs*, III, 81, quotes a story that represents Cuchulinn as having in the first place carried off Bláthnat from her father Mider; Curoi stole her from him, and therefore Cuchulinn, in slaying the latter, was only regaining his rights. Even if this be a part of the old tale, it in no way modifies any conclusions reached above. Curoi is as surely an Other-World king as Mider.

Curoi appears in the Irish *Fled Bricrend*¹ as a magician dwelling in a revolving castle beside a loch. The three champions of Ulster

¹ Edited by Henderson, from the *Lebor na h-Uidre* and later manuscripts. The story, like most of the texts in LU, shows evidence of having been compiled from various older sources. Henderson says (p. xlv): "One is assuredly right in holding that a tale like the Emain-Curoi story was current in Erin during the last quarter of the ninth century. For anything to the contrary I see no reason why, in the main essentials, it should not *orally* go back to the earliest period of Irish Saga." The story is, that, — at the feast given by Bricriu, — Loigaire, Conall, and Cuchulinn fell to quarrelling as to which should have the Hero's Portion. They were directed to go to Curoi mac Dairi:

"'He will adjudge ye truly. To ask him demandeth courage.'"

Loigaire set out first. When he approached the place, "a dim, dark, heavy mist overtook him, confusing him in such wise that it was impossible for him to fare farther on the way." A huge giant now appeared and overthrew him, robbing him of his horses, his chariot, and his arms.

"Not long thereafter Conall the Victorious took the same way and arrived at the plain where the druidical mist overtook Loigaire." The like hideous, black, dark cloud overtook him, and he fared in the same way at the hands of the giant.

Cuchulinn then set out, and overthrew the giant, bringing back with him his own horses and arms, as well as those of his fellows. [It is not said that the giant is Curoi, but as they set out to go to Curoi it is natural to suppose that they found him.] His two rivals still refused to yield Cuchulinn the championship. After another quarrel, the three heroes are told to go to the ford of Yellow, son of Fair. "He will adjudge ye." Yellow felt that the task was too difficult. "But I know," he added, "one who will venture it, viz., Terror, son of Great Fear . . . , at yonder loch." Off then in quest of him they went. Terror was "a big powerful fellow. . . . He used to shift his form into what shape he pleased, was wont to do tricks of magic and such like arts. He in sooth was the wizard from whom Muni, the Wizard's pass, is named. [This reminds one of Rhys's connection of Manannán with *mon* : see p. 42, note.] He used to be called wizard from the extent to which he changed his divers shapes."

Terror proposed the beheading game. He allowed Loigaire to cut off his head, picked the head up and went with it into his loch. On the morrow the giant returned, but Loigaire shirked his part of the bargain. The same was true of Conall, but Cuchulinn stood the test. Terror spared him and awarded him the supremacy, because he did not shrink.

As soon, however, as the heroes had returned to the palace, "Loigaire and Conall disputed the verdict given in favor of Cuchulinn. . . . The Ultonians advised them to go for judgment unto Curoi. To that too they agreed." They set off for Fort Curoi, where they were entertained by Bláthnat, Mind's daughter,

betook themselves to his mysterious fort to secure his decision as to which was the greatest warrior. He knew beforehand of their coming (as is always the case in the Other-World journey) and arranged

wife of Curoi. "That night on their arrival Curoi was not at home. But knowing they would come, he counselled his wife regarding the heroes."

When bedtime came, she told them that each was to take his night, watching the fort until Curoi should return. "In what airt soever of the globe Curoi should happen to be, every night o'er the fort he chaunted a spell, till the fort revolved as swiftly as a mill-stone. The entrance was never to be found after sunset." Loigaire was sentry the first night. He was attacked by a monstrous giant from the sea, who tossed him out over the wall of the fort into the mire of the ditch. The second night Conall fared in the same way.

The third night Cuchulinn kept watch. First he was attacked by twenty-seven warriors, whom he slew one after another. Then the monster of the loch came towards the fort "opening its mouth so that one of the palaces could go into its gullet." Cuchulinn dispatched it. "Then a giant approached westwards from the sea." Cuchulinn overcame him, and only spared his life on condition that he grant him the sovereignty of Erin's heroes. "It shall be thine," quoth the giant, who thereupon vanished, he knew not whither. Cuchulinn then by a tremendous effort sprang over the wall of the fort, as he supposed his fellows to have done. When he had entered the house "Bláthnat made speech: 'Truly, not the sigh of one dishonored but a victor's sigh of triumph,'" for she knew full well the struggle Cuchulinn had had that night. It was not long when they beheld Curoi coming towards them. He complimented Cuchulinn, and assigned to him the sovereignty. The heroes thereupon returned to Emain.

But Cuchulinn's superiority was again disputed; whereupon, as the Ultonians were assembled, an ugly black giant entered the hall. He was clad in an old hide and had ravenous yellow eyes protruding from his head, each the size of an ox-vat. In his left hand he carried a club, a burden for twenty yoke of oxen, and in his right hand an axe. He proposed the beheading game, in which Loigaire and Conall were found wanting. [Here the ancient manuscript (LU) breaks off. The remainder of the tale is supplied from a fifteenth-century manuscript, which agrees so perfectly with what precedes that it must be regarded as authentic.] Cuchulinn does not flinch when his turn comes to put his head on the block. The giant, however, merely taps him with the blunt side of the axe and exclaims:

"O Cuchulinn, arise! The sovereignty of the heroes of Erin is thine henceforth."

"Then the giant vanished. It was Curoi mac Dairi who had come in that guise to fulfill the promise he had given to Cuchulinn."

The present form of this story, with its many repetitions, has probably, as Henderson suggests, resulted from the addition of several variants of what was at

for them a warm reception. The failure of Loigaire and of Conall is contrasted with the success of Cuchulinn after a tremendous combat in which he won a compliment from Curoi's wife Bláthnat¹ (very much as in the *Iwain* the failure of Calogrenant is set off against the

bottom the same tale. Certainly, Terror, son of Great Fear, seems to be a mere variant of Curoi. He does the same things, and like Curoi is a water demon. He dives into the loch so that, like Fiachna in the *Tale of Loegaire*, his home must be beneath the waves. Furthermore, "Terror" can hardly be his real name. He is probably Curoi in disguise.

Whether this be so or not, I do not see how there can be any reasonable doubt that the giant whom Cuchulinn overcomes at Curoi's fort and compels to promise him the sovereignty, is Curoi in one of his magic shapes. Curoi has purposely absented himself just before the arrival of the heroes, and he returns directly after the sudden vanishing of the giant. What more natural than that he should himself test the heroes, just as we are expressly told that he did in the beheading game? Furthermore, if the giant is not Curoi, how can he promise the sovereignty, inasmuch as Cuchulinn is sworn to abide by the decision of Curoi?

If this explanation be correct, the kind words of praise bestowed by Bláthnat on Cuchulinn when he proves himself victor over her husband are significant. The *Fled Bricrend* may preserve another form of the tale of which the LL *Dinnshenchas* gives a euhemerized account. There is a combat in both, though only the *Dinnshenchas* represents Curoi as slain. But the killing of the husband would naturally be omitted in the *Fled Bricrend*, where it is needful to have Curoi come to the court at Emain in person in order to assign permanently the sovereignty to Cuchulinn.

It is interesting to compare a modern Irish tale in which Cuchulinn by overcoming a giant and entering a revolving castle wins a fairy mistress (see Curtin, *Myths and Folk-Lore of Ireland*, pp. 304-326). Cucúlin, as his name is here spelled, is represented as one of the champions of Finn mac Cool. He is persuaded to the adventure by the fairy herself, whose name is Gil an Og (Water of Life). She comes to the court of Finn with a magic shirt that would fit no one but Cucúlin. She also presents him with a marvellous speckled boat, in which to journey to the scene of the adventure. Cucúlin is obliged to overcome a *gruagach*, who lives in an island surrounded by a chain and a ring of fire seven miles wide. He has also to slay a creature called "Thin-in-Iron" and to enter a turning castle that has but one door, before he finally wins the hand of Gil an Og. "Thin-in-Iron" may plausibly be regarded as a magician in disguise, and therefore as a parallel figure to Curoi.

¹ Zimmer rightly interprets this as meaning that Cuchulinn alone could force his way to the under world: "Hierin liegt wol, dass Cuchulinn ursprünglich allein in die unterwelt vordrang" (*Zt. f. deutsches Alt.*, XXXI, 331).

success of the hero). One of Curoi's disguises in this story is the form of a black giant whom not even beheading can kill.

Keeping clear of theory, it is plain from a comparison of this ancient account with that in the *Dinnshenchas* in LL, that Cuchulinn was credited with an Other-World Journey, in which he slew a giant who dwelt in a revolving castle, and married the giant's fairy wife. No closer parallel to the incidents of Laudine's marriage to Iwain could be found. The situation in the *Matron of Ephesus*, which has been put forward as a close parallel to the remarriage of Laudine, falls far short of this, for in it the lady *does not marry* the *slayer* of her husband, but only a soldier appointed to guard the corpses of some criminals. The *Matron of Ephesus* theory, whose only claim to attention was its supposed ability to explain this situation, is thus shown to break down utterly, even at the central point of its supposed strength.

CHAPTER IV (*Continued*).

ANCIENT CELTIC STORIES OF THE JOURNEY TO THE OTHER WORLD.

III. THE IMRAMA.

THE germ of the *imram* is found in the oldest Celtic fairy tales. Connla was carried off in a boat of glass. In the *Serglige* the hero was ferried over to Labraid's isle in a ship of bronze. The term *imram*, however, is generally reserved for a particular class of Other-World journeys, in which stress is laid on the incidents of a voyage by sea and on the number of islands visited. In the *Imram Mailduin*, the best example of the type, more than thirty islands are described.

The *imrama* have been built up, apparently by scribes, out of the material of older Other-World journeys like the *Echtra Condla*.¹ The

¹ Zimmer (*Zt. f. deutsches Alt.*, XXXIII, 129-220, 257-338) has shown that the *Navigatio Brendani*, and especially the earlier *imrama* (such as the *Mailduin*), are based essentially on ancient Celtic tradition and story concerning the Other World. From the Latin *Navigatio* there arose, as he points out, a vast literature in all European languages.

motive that seems to have determined the special form was a fondness for variety of adventure.¹ The interest is centred, not, as in the tales just discussed, on the struggle necessary to win the hand of the *fee*, but on the strange incidents and dangers of the journey. (The *imrama* are essentially books of adventure.)

Another motive that strongly affected the later *imrama*, and even the *Voyage of Maillduin*, though it scarcely touched the *Voyage of Bran*, was a desire to identify the Other World with Christian conceptions and thus to take advantage of the interest that Christians have always manifested in visions of any sort relating to Paradise. A word of explanation may be allowed here. It was a Christian belief that the souls of certain just men had gone, not directly to heaven, but to an intermediate place of happiness, there to abide till the Day of Judgment. This region was commonly identified with the Garden of Eden and thought of as containing the Tree of Life and other familiar features of the landscape of Paradise. The Celts, noticing a similarity between this place and their Happy Other World, strove in their *imrama* to show that those heroes who found their way to the Other World caught also glimpses of the Earthly Paradise.² This is probably the explanation of the absence of the combat motive from all the *imrama*, for evidently, if fighting were pictured in the Other World, all chance of identifying it with the Christian Paradise would be at an end.

The process of identification of the Other World with the Earthly Paradise was a gradual one. The *Imram Brain* shows, as has been said, hardly a trace of it, and is indeed scarcely an *imram* at all. But two different islands are visited, and the incidents of the sea voyage are not much dwelt on. It might almost as well be classed with the Other-World journeys as with the *imrama*. This is an important fact, as showing how idle it would be to hold that the

¹ Zimmer (l.c., p. 331) thinks the *imrama* were patterned in the first place after Virgil's *Æneid*. They arose, he says, in the seventh and eighth centuries in imitation of Æneas's voyage.

² Zimmer holds (l.c., p. 286) that the definite descriptions of the Earthly Paradise found in mediæval literature after the twelfth century are based largely on Celtic conceptions of the Other World.

imrama could be essentially based on anything else than Celtic Other-World story. The *Imram Brain* is, indeed, a connecting link between the Other-World Journey and the *imram*.

In the *Mailduin* the identification with the Earthly Paradise appears at several points. It is rather clumsily done, however, so that it is plain that the great body of the tale must go back to Celtic story. It is perfectly safe, therefore, to use the incidents in it, as well as those in the *Bran*, to throw light on the development which various themes found in the *Serglige* may have taken in Celtic literature before the time of Chrétien.

Besides the importance which the *Voyage of Bran* has as an illustration of the development of a journey into an *imram*, it is valuable also for the good description of the Other-World landscape that it contains. The story is very briefly this:

IMRAM BRAIN MAIC FEBAIL.¹

A woman, a messenger from an unknown land, mysteriously appeared in Bran's house one day when the doors were closed and the house was full of chiefs and princes. She sang many verses describing her pleasant country (§ 1):

There is a distant isle
Around which sea-horses glisten. . . .
Lovely land throughout the world's age,
On which the many blossoms drop (§ 4). . . .
An ancient tree there is with blossoms,
On which birds call to the Hours.²
'T is in harmony, it is their wont
To call together every Hour (§ 7).

After inviting Bran to her land, the woman disappeared as suddenly as she had come (§ 31).

¹ Summarized from Kuno Meyer's translation, *The Voyage of Bran*, I, 1-35. Meyer has also edited the text (l.c., I, 1-35) from LU and later MSS. From considerations of language Meyer thinks (I, xvi) that it "was originally written down in the seventh century." To this period it had been previously assigned by Zimmer (*Haupt's Zt.*, XXXIII, 261), though with some caution. A summary of the tale is given by Zimmer (l.c., pp. 257-261).

² Meyer (p. 6) notes that this must mean "the canonical Hours" and be "an allusion to church music."

On the next day Bran chose his companions and put to sea. After sailing two days, they met Manannán mac Lir driving his chariot across the ocean, which was for him a flowery plain (§§ 32-33).

He, too, sang verses describing Mag Mell, which seems to lie beneath the waves :

Rivers pour forth a stream of honey
 In the land of Manannán, son of Ler (§ 36). . . .
 Though but one chariot rider is seen,
 In Mag Mell of many flowers,
 There are many steeds on its surface,
 Though thou seest them not (§ 39). . . .
 Along the top of a wood has swum
 Thy coracle across ridges.
 There is a wood of beautiful fruit
 Under the prow of thy little skiff.
 A wood with blossom and fruit,
 On which is the vine's veritable fragrance;
 A wood without decay, without defect,
 On which are leaves of golden hue (§§ 42-43). . . .
 Emne with many hues of hospitality
 Thou wilt reach before the setting of the sun (§ 60).

After Bran parted from Manannán, he came to the Island of Laughter, where he lost one of his men, who landed and fell to laughing like the rest of the men on the island (§ 61).

It was not long thereafter when they reached the Land of Women. There each man was provided with a partner in the usual manner. They remained there, supplied with all that they could desire, for what seemed to them a year. Then homesickness seized some of the men, and they persuaded Bran to depart (§§ 62-63).

When their ship reached the shore of Ireland, they found that they had been gone for centuries (§ 64). One of the men leaped from the coracle, but, as soon as he touched the earth of Ireland, he fell into a heap of ashes, as though he had been in the earth for many hundred years.¹ To the

¹ This supernatural lapse of time in the Other World appears in many Celtic tales. See for example the *Echtra Nera*, edited and translated by Stokes, *Rev. Celt.*, X, 214 ff. It is preserved only in a fourteenth-century MS., but, as its title appears in the celebrated list of Irish tales in the *Book of Leinster* (p. 245, β, 32 ff.), and as internal evidence is in favor of its having taken shape in very rude times, it is probably as old as the majority of the tales preserved in the oldest MSS. The story is that Nera left his people at a feast and entered a fairy hill (*sid*).

people that assembled on the shore Bran told all his wanderings from the beginning until that time. And he wrote these quatrains in Ogam, and then bade them farewell. And from that hour his wanderings are not known (§§ 65-66).

It will be seen that this tale does not differ essentially from the *Echtra Condla*. Both seem to draw from the same storehouse of Celtic fancy. The only distinct trace of Christian influence appears in the description of the Other-World landscape, where birds are said to sing "to the [canonical] Hours."

In the *Imram Maelduin*, on the other hand, are found all the marks of the *imram* type. Older Celtic material has been worked up to form a tale of adventure comparable to those of other peoples :

IMRAM CURAIG MAILDUIN.¹

Maelduin determined to set out on the sea to search for his father's murderers. He was directed by a druid to take seventeen companions only, but at the last moment his three foster-brothers, who had not been included in the seventeen, begged to accompany him. When refused, they threw themselves into the sea and swam after the vessel. Out of pity Maelduin received them into his boat, but he was soon punished for disobeying the druid's injunction, because, though he speedily found the murderers in an island, he was not able to slay them. A storm suddenly came up and drove Maelduin's boat into "the great boundless ocean" (§ 1).

The king of the *síd* assigned to him a single woman, with whom he dwelt and who conceived a son by him. After what seemed three days, he returned and found his people still around the same caldron, engaged in the same feast. He showed them the summer fruit of the *síd* in order to convince them of the truth of his tale, and then went back into the *síd*, "nor will he come out till the Day of Doom."

The supernatural lapse of time appears in the *Adventures of Teigue*, and in Walter Map's tale of Herla.

¹ Summarized and quoted from the text and translation of Whitley Stokes, *Rev. Celt.*, IX, 447-495; X, 50-95. The MS. for the greater part of the tale is LU. Zimmer (*Haupt's Zt.*, XXXIII, 148) holds that the tale took shape in the eighth or ninth century. The possibility of alterations and additions having been made as late as the beginning of the eleventh century is, however, to be admitted. For a French translation, see d'Arbois, *L'Épopée Celtique*, I, 449-500; for one in German, Zimmer, l.c., pp. 150 ff. Cf. Nutt, *Voyage of Bran*, I, 163 ff.

The Island of Enor- The first island they came to was inhabited by enor-
mous Ants. mous ants (§ 2).

Huge Birds. In the next island was a row of trees, and many great
birds on the trees. They slew and ate the birds (§ 3).

When they came to the next island, they saw therein a beast like a
Horselike Monster. horse. The legs of a hound he had, with rough, sharp nails,
and great was his joy at seeing them, for he longed to
devour them and their boat (§ 4).

Demons' Horses. In the next island they found enormous nuts and the
tracks of monster horses that had been eating them (§ 5).

Then they found an island having a great house, with a door above, and
Empty Banquet a door into the sea, and against that door there was a valve
Hall. of stone. This valve was pierced by an aperture, through
which the sea waves were flinging the salmon into the midst of the house.
Maelduin and his men entered that house, and therein they beheld a tes-
tered bed for the chief of the house alone, and a bed for every three of his
household, and food for every three before every bed, and a cup of glass
on every vessel. So they dined off that food and liquor (§ 6).

At the next island they found a cluster of three apples at the end of
Wondrous Fruit. a rod. For forty nights each of those apples sufficed
them (§ 7).

Thereafter they found another island, on which was "a huge beast,"
which raced round about the island swifter than the
Racing Beast. wind (§ 8).

Then they found a lofty island on which "were many great animals like
unto horses. Each of them would take a piece out of
Fighting Horses. another's side, and carry it away with its skin and its flesh,
so that out of their sides streams of crimson blood were breaking" (§ 9).

In the next island were "many trees full fruited with great golden
apples." The fruit was devoured in the day time by "red
Golden Apples. animals like swine" and in the night by birds. Maelduin
collected all the apples that were there. "Alike did the apples forbid
hunger and thirst from them" (§ 10).

Then they sighted an island "where stood a fort surrounded by a white,
high rampart as if it were built of burnt lime, or as if it
Treasure-House of were all one rock of chalk. Great was its height from the
the Cat. sea: it all but reached the clouds. The fort was wide open. Round the
rampart were great snow-white houses. When they entered the largest of
these they saw no one there, save a small cat which was in the midst of the
house, playing on the four stone pillars that were there." . . . After that

they saw three rows on the wall of the house, consisting of brooches and neck torques and swords made of gold and silver. "A roasted ox moreover and a flitch in the midst of the house and great vessels of good, intoxicating liquor. 'Hath this been left for us?' saith Maelduin to the cat. It looked at him suddenly and began to play again. Then Maelduin recognised that it was for them that the dinner had been left. So they dined and drank and slept." When they were ready to go, Maelduin's third foster-brother took one of the necklaces. But he got no farther than the middle of the enclosure, for the cat followed and sprang "through him like a fiery arrow, and burnt him to ashes," and then went back till it was on its pillar. Maelduin soothed the cat with his words, and, setting the necklace again in its place, they departed (§ 11).

They espied another island divided by a brazen palisade. All objects placed on one side of this became black, and those on the other side became white (§ 12).

Then they came to an island in which was a great mountain, "and they purposed to go and view the island from it. Now when the Rhymer and Germán went to visit the mountain, they found before them a broad river, which was not deep. Into this river Germán dipped the handle of his spear, and at once it was consumed as if fire had burnt it.¹ So they went no further. Then they saw on the other side of the river great hornless oxen lying down, and a huge man sitting by them, then Germán after this struck his spear-shaft against his shield to frighten the oxen. 'Why dost thou frighten the silly calves?' saith that huge herdsman. 'Where are the dams of those calves?' saith Germán. 'They are on the other side of yonder mountain,' saith he. So they went thence" (§ 13).

Thereafter they found an island with a great hideous mill, wherein was a huge hideous miller (§ 14).

Then they came to the isle of wailing, where another of Maelduin's foster-brothers was lost. Four other companions who landed were directed by Maelduin not to look at the land or the air, and to put their garments round their noses and their mouths, and not to breathe the air of the island, lest they should be detained like the foster-brother (§ 15).

Then they came to a lofty island divided into four parts. "A maiden went to meet them . . . and gave them food. They likened it to cheese ;

¹ In the Dutch poem *Walewein* there is a river of fire which has the appearance of water (see Paris, *Romania*, XII, 509).

and whatever taste was pleasing to any one he would find it therein. And she dealt liquor to them . . . so that they slept. When Hospitable Hostess. they awoke they were in their boat at sea. Nowhere did they see their island or their maiden" (§ 16).

Then they found an island that had a fortress with a brazen door and a bridge of glass, and when they went upon this bridge they fell down backwards. A woman came out of the fortress, pail in hand, Maiden. took water and returned to the fortress. "A housekeeper for Maelduin," said his men, but she scorned them, and when they struck the brazen door, it made a sweet soothing music, which sent them to sleep till the morrow. Three days and three nights were they in that wise. "On the fourth day the woman came to them, beautiful verily and wearing a white mantle with a circlet of gold round her golden hair. Two sandals of silver on her rosy feet. A brooch of silver with studs of gold in her mantle and a filmy silken smock next her white skin." She greeted each man by his name: "It is long since your coming here hath been known and understood." She took them into the house, she gave them food, "every savor that each desired he would find therein." His men urged Maelduin to offer himself to her, and proposed to her that she should show affection to him and sleep with him. But, saying that she knew not and had never known what sin was, she left them, promising an answer for the morrow. When they awoke, they were in their boat on a crag, and they saw not the island nor the fortress, nor the lady, nor the place where they had been (§ 17).

"As they went from that place they heard in the northeast a great cry and chaunt, as it were a singing of psalms. That night and the next day till none they were rowing that they might know what cry Chanting Birds. or chaunt they heard. They behold a high mountainous island full of birds, black and dun and speckled, shouting and speaking loudly" (§ 18).

The next island contained many trees and birds and a man whose clothing was his hair. He said: "The birds which thou beholdest in the trees are the souls of my children and my kindred, both men and women, who are yonder awaiting Doomsday" (§ 19).

The next island "had a golden rampart about it." Therein they saw a man "whose raiment was the hair of his own body." There was also a marvellous fountain, which on Friday and Wednesday yields water, on Sundays milk, but on feast-days wine. Magic Fountain. They drank of this fountain, which "cast them into a heavy sleep till the morrow" (§ 20).

Savage Smiths. Then they came to the island of the Savage Smiths, from which they fled (§ 21).

Sea of Glass. Then they voyaged over a sea resembling green glass. "Such was its purity that the gravel and sand of the sea were clearly visible through it" (§ 22).

Beast in Tree. "They afterwards put forth into another sea like a cloud, and it seemed to them that it would not support them or the boat. Then they beheld under the sea down below them roofed strongholds and a beautiful country. And they see a beast, huge, awful, monstrous, in a tree there, and a drove of herds and flocks round about the tree; and beside the tree an armed man with shield and spear and sword. When he beheld yon huge beast that abode in the tree he goeth thence at once in flight. The beast stretched forth his neck out of the tree, and sets his head into the back of the largest ox of the herd and dragged it into the tree, and anon devours it in the twinkling of an eye. The flocks and the herdsman flee away at once" (§ 23).

Shouting People. Thereafter they found an island around which rose the sea, making vast cliffs of water all about it. "As the people of that country perceived them they set to screaming at them and saying: 'It is they! It is they!' till they were out of breath" (§ 24).

Water Arch. Then they came to an island above which was an arch of water like a rainbow (§ 25).

Silver Column. "Thereafter they voyaged till they found a great silver column. . . . And not a single sod of earth was about it, but only the boundless ocean." From its summit hung a silver net, through a mesh of which the boat went under sail. And Diurán cut a piece from the net with his spear, saying: "I do this so that my tidings may be the more believed [when I reach Ireland]" (§ 26).

Subaqueous Door. "Then they see another island standing on a single pedestal,¹ to wit, one foot supporting it, . . . and they saw down in the base of the pedestal a closed door under lock. They understood that *that* was the way by which the island was entered" (§ 27).

¹ It is possible that these islands rising like a pedestal or like a wall (cf. § 11) were in the first place based on the exaggerated accounts of mariners. In *Le Tour du Monde*, supplement, *A Travers le Monde*, 5 nov., 1898, pp. 357-358, there is an account of an island called Rockall, which is situated in the Atlantic Ocean 295 kilometres from any land (the British Isles), which suggests the descriptions of the *imrama*. This island consists of a single rock, 75 metres around, which rises like a pillar from the sea. It does not occur in any charts before the seventeenth century.

After that they came to a large island, and there was a great plain therein, and on this a great table-land, heatherless but grassy and smooth. And near the sea was a fortress, large, high, and strong, and a great house therein, adorned, and with good couches. Seventeen grown-up girls were there preparing a bath. When the wanderers saw this Maelduin felt sure the bath was for them. But there rode up a dame with a bordered purple mantle, gold-embroidered gloves on her hands, on her feet adorned sandals. She alighted, entered the fortress, and went to bathe. One of the damsels then welcomed the seafarers. "Come into the court: the queen invites you." So they entered the fort, and they all bathed. The queen sat on one side of the house and her seventeen girls about her. Maelduin sat on the other side, over against the queen, with his seventeen men around him." Food and drink were served to them, and at nightfall the eighteen couples paired off, Maelduin sleeping with the queen. On the morrow she urged them to stay: "Age will not fall on you but the age that ye have attained. And lasting life ye shall have always: and what came to you last night shall come to you every night without any labour." Maelduin asked who she was, and she answered "wife of the king of the island, to whom she had borne seventeen daughters; at her husband's death she had taken the kingship of the island; and unless she go to judge the folk every day what happened the night before would not happen again." Maelduin and his men stayed three months, "and it seemed to them that those three months were three years." The men murmured and urged Maelduin to depart, and reproached him with the love he bore the queen, and one day, when she was at the judging, they took out the boat and would sail off. But she rode after them, and flung a clew which Maelduin caught, and it cleaved to his hand; by this means she drew them back to land. Thrice this happened, and the men accused Maelduin of catching the clew purposely. He told off another man to mind the clew, whose hand, when touched by it, was cut off by one of the seafarers. So in that wise they escaped (§ 28).

Then they came to an island with trees bearing marvellous berries. Maelduin drank some of the juice of the berries, which he threw him into a deep sleep till the morning. He said: "Gather ye this fruit, for great is its excellence" (§ 29).

Then they landed on an island where was a wood of yews and great oaks. Here they found great herds of sheep, a church, and an ancient cleric. Here, too, they saw an ancient eagle renewing its youth by bathing in a lake. Diurán also bathed in the lake, and he never suffered weakness or infirmity from that time forth so long as he lived (§ 30).

Island of Laughter. Then they came to the Isle of Laughter, where the last of Maelduin's three foster-brothers was lost (§ 31).

“After that they sighted another island, which was not large, and a fiery rampart was round about it, and that rampart used to revolve round the island. There was an open doorway in the side of the rampart. Now whenever the doorway would come in its revolution opposite to them, they used to see the whole island, and all that was therein, and all its indwellers, even human beings, beautiful, abundant, wearing adorned garments, and feasting with golden vessels in their hands.” And the wanderers listened to their ale-music (§ 32).

Then they came to the island of the hermit of Torach (§ 33).

They followed the direction in which they saw a falcon fly, and at length they sighted land like the land of Ireland. It was the small island on which they had found the murderers at the first. But Maelduin was now reconciled to them, and he returned to his own district in Ireland and declared his adventures (§ 34).

It has seemed necessary to outline very fully this charming voyage story, in order to bring out with fairness its curious character. Some incidents are plainly drawn from Christian tradition,¹ but in the case of only one island (§ 19) is there a definite attempt made at identification with the Earthly Paradise where the souls of the just await the Day of Judgment. The Christian and pagan materials are not thoroughly worked together, and it is easy to see, by comparison with the older Celtic tales already studied, that most of the material comes straight, as Zimmer thinks, from the mass of Irish Other-World lore. A study of this *imram*, therefore, ought to throw light on the development which the various incidents of the Other-World journey may have taken before the time of Chrétien.

In the *Imram Maelduin*, the idea of a single expedition to the Other World and return, as in the *Imram Brain* and in all the older stories, has been lost sight of. The compiler has either attached together several already existing variants of the same story, or else he or some preceding transcriber has divided up the adventures of a single Journey of Wonders, and the furniture of a single Other

¹ Traces of Christian influence appear in §§ 18, 19, 20, 30, 33, and 34.

World, among a number of different islands,¹ with the object of increasing the number of different adventures in his story. This point has been already made by Alfred Nutt, who sees a visit to the Other World not only in § 28 (The Isle of Maidens) but in § 17 (The Isle of the Chaste Maiden), which is, he maintains, a variant of the same episode. He also finds part of the gear of the Other World elsewhere in the story, and concludes that we are justified in making use of the several versions to recover the "original idea of Damsel Land as it existed in the material from which our story was drawn." He sees in § 32 (The Isle of the Fiery Revolving Rampart), for example, a part of the Other-World incident. It is tolerably clear, I think, that §§ 6 and 11 ought to be added to this list. In § 6 (The Empty Banquet Hall) we have a palace in which food is served by invisible means, — a well-established form of the Other-World story.² In § 11 (The Treasure-House of the Cat) there is the same empty palace, but it is guarded by a mysterious cat.

It is interesting to find the several repetitions of the Other-World story (§§ 6, 11, 17, 28, 32) arranged at tolerably equal intervals in the order of islands visited. This can be conveniently shown by placing the successive incidents in parallel columns as on pp. 68, 69.

A glance at this arrangement of the incidents of the *Mailduin* will show that, as § 28 is the longest and most characteristic description of the Other World, so, too, the adventures leading up to this capital episode are the most numerous and the most detailed. It appears, therefore, that this part of the tale (§§ 18–28) is either the original kernel of the whole, or else perhaps the most complete of several variants which have been put together to make up that whole. The incidents of this portion of the *Mailduin* should therefore form a basis for comparison.

If, now, we compare column IV with columns I, II, III, and V, a certain parallelism is discoverable. In all of the columns, except

¹ The manner in which a new island is brought in at every turn suggests the invention of a single transcriber who had a new idea and developed it *con amore* in the mediæval manner.

² Connla was promised "perpetual feasts without preparation," and at Labraid's isle in the *Serglige* there was a never-failing cask of mead.

I	II	III
§ 1. Island of the Murderers.	§ 7. Wondrous Fruit.	§ 12. Black and White Isle.
§ 2. Enormous Ants.		
§ 3. Huge Birds.		
§ 4. Horselike Monster.	§ 8. Racing Beast.	§ 13. Huge Herdsman.
	§ 9. Fighting Horses.	§ 14. Hideous Miller.
§ 5. Demons' Horses.	§ 10. Golden Apples.	§ 15. Magic Air.
		§ 16. Hospitable Hostess.
§ 6. Empty Banquet Hall.	§ 11. Treasure-House of the Cat.	§ 17. Isle of the Chaste Maiden.

III, marvellous birds or trees are encountered. In all, except column V, fighting beasts of one kind or another appear. In several of the columns, a difficult passage of some kind, such as a subaqueous door or a revolving rampart, is described. It is natural to conclude that these three themes, which recur over and over again in different shapes, must have been, like the love-making motive, stock incidents of the Celtic Other-World Journey. Otherwise it is not easy to explain why the compiler of this *imram* should have introduced them in so many forms.

The first of these three themes may be called that of the Other-World Landscape. We have already met it in the *Serglige* and in the *Imram Brain*. The "great chaunt of birds," in § 18, "as it were a-singing psalms," reminds us of the birds calling to the canonical Hours in the *Imram Brain*. Much light is thrown on this incident by § 19, where are described trees full of birds that are the souls of men. It is absurd to find ordinary birds singing psalms, but for transformed souls this would be natural. We may be sure, therefore, that the birds in § 18 were originally one with those in § 19, and, like them, souls in bird shape. The separation must have been made by a stupid transcriber, anxious to increase the number of islands visited. In § 20 there is a marvellous fountain which yields milk on Sundays. Of course it is here a Christian marvel, but if we remember the "noble well" hard by the tree with singing birds in

IV

V

§ 18. The Chanting Birds.	
§ 19. The Trees and the Pilgrim.	§ 29. Trees with Magic Fruit.
§ 20. Magic Fountain.	§ 30. Lake of Youth.
§ 21. Savage Smiths.	
§ 22. The Sea of Glass.	
§ 23. The Beast in the Tree.	
§ 24. Shouting People.	§ 31. The Isle of Laughter.
§ 25. The Water Arch.	
§ 26. The Silver Column.	
§ 27. Subaqueous Door.	
§ 28. The Isle of Maidens.	§ 32. The Revolving Rampart.

the *Serglige*, it seems certain that this Christian fountain has been substituted for the Other-World Fountain. Making proper allowances, therefore, for the way in which the transcriber of this *imram* has divided up his material, we see in the scenery of these three islands a parallel to the tree with birds who do "lor service" beside the Fountain Perilous in the *Iwain*.

The beast-like herdsman guarding cattle, in § 23 of the *Mailduin*, suggests the giant herdsman of the *Iwain*.

The third motive, that of the Perilous Passage, appears, as has been said, in the subaqueous door, in the revolving rampart, and, it may be added, in the brazen door of § 17, which, when struck, put Maelduin's men to sleep. It may be suggested that this danger, just at the entrance of the Other World, has been rationalized into the falling gates of the *Iwain*.

It is clear from what has been said that we have in the *imrama* important materials for the study of the Other-World Journey. For convenience, the different motives just outlined will be taken up one by one. Perhaps that of the Giant Herdsman should be discussed first, since it seems not to have been preserved except in the *imrama*.

CHAPTER IV (*Continued*).ANCIENT CELTIC STORIES OF THE JOURNEY TO THE
OTHER WORLD.

IV. THE GIANT HERDSMAN MOTIVE.

It will be remembered that, in the *Ivain*,¹ Calogrenant, after parting from the Hospitable Host, came upon wild and savage bulls fighting with such fierceness in the forest that he was fain to draw back and avoid them. He encountered, however, a monstrous and hideous churl, who resembled a Moor, and was so ugly, in fact, that he could not be described. This creature sat on a stump, holding a great club in his hand. He had a head larger than that of a horse and mossy ears the size of an elephant's. He had the eyes of an owl, the nose of a cat, his mouth was cleft like that of a wolf, and his boar's teeth were sharp and red. He leaned on his club and did not speak to Calogrenant any more than a beast would do. His only movement, as Calogrenant approached, was to mount upon a tree trunk. Naturally Calogrenant's first words to this creature were to ask him what he was. He replied that he was a man and was guarding these beasts of the forest. Calogrenant expressed doubts about any man's being able to control such savage creatures. The monster replied that he could seize one of the bulls by the horns in such a way that all the others would tremble for fear and would gather round as if to implore mercy; in this way he controlled the beasts. Calogrenant then asked the giant herdsman to direct him to some adventure. The herdsman obligingly described the adventure of the Fountain Perilous and showed the path that led thither.

This strange episode is plainly not the invention of Chrétien.² No one, however, has before pointed out exactly why it appears in

¹ *Ivain*, vv. 278-409.

² So Baist has expressed himself (*Zt. f. rom. Phil.*, XXI, 402-405). He has, moreover, compared § 13 of the *Mailduin*, but he has not noticed the parallels in §§ 4, 5, 9, and 23, nor has he explained how this adventure came to find its way into the *Ivain*.

the *Ivain*. I believe it to have been a stock incident of the Other-World Journey. The object of the giant herdsman is to point out the way to the Other World, i.e. to Laudine's castle. Chrétien has retained, almost without attempt at rationalization, one of the adventures of the type of Celtic story that we are studying. It is true that this theme does not occur in the *Serglige*, the norm for our comparisons, but it has left so many traces in the *Imram Mailduin* that we may feel confident that it was a stock incident.

The distinctive features of this adventure in the *Ivain* may be summed up thus: (1) a hideous beast-like giant, (2) who is perched upon a tree trunk, (3) is guarding a herd of animals. These (4) are not ordinary cattle, but savage beasts who fight each other arrogantly; yet (5) the monster herdsman is able to seize any one of them in a terrible way. (6) He points out to the traveller the road to a marvellous land.

In § 23 of the *Mailduin*, there is an adventure which unites features 1, 2, 3, and 5, and thus forms a striking parallel to the *Ivain*: "a beast, huge, awful, monstrous, in a tree, and a drove of herds and flocks round about the tree." "The beast stretched forth his neck out of the tree, and set his head into the back of the largest ox of the herd and dragged it into the tree and anon devoured it in the twinkling of an eye."¹ It is to be noted that this creature is seen in the Land beneath the Waves, that is, in the Other World.

¹ Compare the description of the herdsman in the *Ivain* (vv. 288 ff.):

Un vilain qui resanbloit mor,
 Grant et hideus a desmesure
 (Einsi tres leide creature,
 Qu'an ne porroit dire de boche),
 Vi je seoir sor une goche,
 Une grant mague an sa main.
 Je m'apochai vers le vilain,
 Si vi qu'il ot grosse la teste
 Plus que roncins ne autre beste,
 Chevos meschiez et front pelé,
 S'ot plus de deus espanz de le,
 Oroilles mossues et granz
 Auteus com a uns olifanz,
 Les sorciz granz et le vis plat,
 Iauz de choete et nes de chat,

To this incident of § 23 (in column IV) there is so striking a parallel in § 13 (column III) that we cannot doubt that they are variants of the same motive. In § 23 there are parallels to features 1, 3, and 6 of the adventure in the *Ivain*. The herdsman is here described as "a huge man" guarding "great hornless oxen." He gives the travellers information about the way, just as the Giant Herdsman directs Calogrenant and Iwain. Here again the creature

Boche fandue come los,
 Danz de sangler aguz et ros,
 Barbe noire, grenons tortiz,
 Et le manton aers au piz,
 Longue eschine, torte et boque. . . .
 Et fu montez desor un tronc,
 S'ot bien dis et set piez de lonc;
 Si m'esgarda et mot ne dist
 Ne plus qu'une beste feïst;
 Et je cuidai que il n'eüst
 Reison ne parler ne seüst.

That the herdsman was as much like a beast as a man is apparent, not only from this description, but from the reflections of Iwain (vv. 794 ff.):

Si vit les tors et le vilain
 Qui la voie li anseigna;
 Mes plus de çant foiz se seigna
 De la mervoille que il ot,
 Comant Nature feire sot
 Oevre si leide et si vilainne.

The fact that the guardian of the herd is called a "beast" in the *Mailduin* does not therefore injure the parallel.

It is not said in the *Ivain* that the creature could devour one of his cattle, but his description of his own powers is not unlike the words of the *Mailduin* (vv. 344 ff.):

N'i a celi qui s'ost movoir
 Des qu'eles me voient venir.
 Car quant j'an puis une tenir,
 Si la destraign par les deus corz
 As poinz que j'ai et durs et forz,
 Que les autres de peor tranblent
 Et tot anviron moi s'asanblent
 Aussi con por merci crïer;
 Ne nus ne s'i porroit fier
 Fors moi, s'antr'eles s'estoit mis,
 Que maintenant ne fust ocis.
 Einsi sui de mes bestes sire.

seems to be in the Other World. He is beyond a river that burns anything dipped in it as if it were a stream of fire.

Having thus found variants of this motive in two¹ of the columns (III and IV) of our *Mailduin* table, we are perhaps justified in regarding the fighting beasts of columns I and II as indistinct survivals or variants of the same theme. In §§ 4 and 5 (column I) are described monstrous beasts "like horses, having the legs of a hound with rough sharp nails." They are evidently ferocious, like the bulls in the *Iwain*,² for "they long to devour the travellers and their boat."

A closer parallel, however, to the fighting bulls of the *Iwain* is found in § 9 (column II), where the travellers see "many great animals like unto horses" which were fighting each other. "Each would take a piece out of another's side, and carry it away with its skin and its flesh, so that out of their sides streams of crimson blood were breaking." In this account and that in column I the animals are described as "horselike." Their actions, however, are not those of horses, and probably this adjective does not mark them off significantly from the cattle of §§ 13 and 23.

The six distinguishing features of the Giant Herdsman motive in the *Iwain* are thus all found in the older *Imram Mailduin*. They do not

¹ That this method of operation is justified will, I think, be admitted by any one who studies the case of what I have called the Other-World landscape motive. From the fact that singing birds appear in § 18 of the *Mailduin*, a marvellous tree in § 19, and a magic fountain in § 20, it was conjectured that these three features must (in the more primitive Other-World tales from which the *Mailduin* has been built up) have been united to form one landscape like that in the *Serglige*. This at first thought somewhat daring process turns out to be entirely justified, for in the *Navigatio Brendani*, which must go back to Celtic *imrama*, these three features, the birds, the tree, and the fountain, are found united in exactly the way assumed.

² The description in the *Iwain* runs thus (vv. 280 ff.):

Tors sauvages et espaarz
Qui s'antrecombatoient tuit
Et demenoient si grant bruit
Et tel fierté et tel orguel,
Se le voir conter vos an vuel,
Que de paor me tres arriere;
Que nule beste n'est plus fiere
Ne plus orgueilleuse de tor.

all, to be sure, occur united in one incident, but enough of them are found so joined to make the parallel hold good. Everything, therefore, seems to indicate that this is a stock episode of the Celtic Other-World Journey,¹ which has been preserved by Chrétien in his *Ivain*, with but little change from its more primitive form.

¹ An illustration of this character of the incident seems to be found in the *Echtra Thaidg mheic Chein*, an Irish Other-World tale preserved only in a fifteenth-century MS. I will summarize this tale, utilizing O'Grady's translation, *Silva Gadelica*, II, 385-401 (text, I, 343-359):

Teigue and his companions came to an island where they found no signs of human habitation, but only flocks of sheep. "The size of these creatures was unutterable; they were not less than horses of the largest [kind]." "One parlous great flock in particular they found there, of gigantic rams [of] which a single special one exceeded all: nine horns bedecked him, and on the heroes he charged violently butting." Teigue and his men had a battle with these rams. [It is possible, of course, that the likeness between these animals and those of the *Mailduin* is due to chance; but, as these beasts are described as horselike and as fierce creatures engaged in fighting, it is likely that we have here traces of the motive found in the *Mailduin* and in the *Ivain*.]

After leaving this island, Teigue and his men came to a beautiful land where it was summer, though at that time it was winter in Ireland. "Extraordinary was the amenity of the spot to which they now attained, but they left it and happened on a wood. Great was the excellence of its scent. Round purple berries hung on it . . . Birds, beautiful, brilliant, feasted on these grapes. As they fed they warbled music and minstrelsy, that was melodious and superlative, to which patients of every kind and the repeatedly wounded would have fallen asleep."

Going on from this spot, they found on the first hill "a white-bodied lady," "the fairest of the world's women"; on the second hill "a queen of gracious form draped in a vesture of golden fabric," and on the third hill a noble pair, a youth and a maid. It was Connla, son of Conn of the Hundred Battles, and the maid was "the young woman of many charms" that brought him hither. Connla "held in his hand a fragrant apple having the color of gold; a third part of it he would eat and still, for all he consumed, never a whit would it be diminished. This fruit it was that supported the pair of them, and when once they had partaken of it neither age nor dimness could affect them." They now entered "a jocund house with a silver floor." "Gems of crystal and carbuncle were set in the wall in such wise that with flashing of these precious stones day and night alike were bright there." "Then three birds enter to them into the house and perch on the thickly-furnished, wide-spreading apple tree that was in the court of the house. The birds eat an apple apiece and warble melody and harmony such that the sick would sleep to it." At length Teigue spoke of returning

CHAPTER IV (*Continued*).ANCIENT CELTIC STORIES OF THE JOURNEY TO THE
OTHER WORLD.

V. THE PERILOUS PASSAGE.

IN the *Serglige* there was a perilous passage on the way to Labraid's isle. Fand declared to Loeg that he would not escape alive unless a woman protected him; therefore, we are told, Liban put her hand on his shoulder. There are in the *Mailduin* many indications that a dangerous passage of some kind must have been a stock incident of the Other-World journey. When the voyagers came to the Island of the Chaste Maiden (§ 17), which is, as has been pointed out, a variant of an original Other-World episode, they found a bridge of glass and a bronze door. Whoever stepped upon the bridge of glass fell backward,¹ and whoever struck the brazen door was put to sleep till the morrow by the sweet music that it made. After two days of vain attempt the travellers are escorted through this mysterious passage by a woman.²

to his land. "These birds will go with you," said the lady. "They will give you guidance and make you symphony and minstrelsy, and till again ye reach Ireland neither by land nor by sea shall sadness or grief afflict you." They thought they had been in the island but a day. They found that it had been a year. They set sail, and after some adventures returned to Ireland.

¹ Cuchulinn on his way to Scáthach's abode (Scáthach, "the shadowy one," is evidently an Other-World creature) had to pass a bridge that was low at both ends, high in the middle, and so constructed that when a man stepped on the one end the other end would rise aloft, and he would be thrown down. See Rhŷs, *Hib. Lect.*, p. 451, quoting from the *Tochmarc Emer*, and Hall, *Cuchullin Saga*, p. 75. This is a variant of the well-known "Bridge of Dread" motive.

² Rhŷs, *Arthurian Legend*, p. 303, has not noticed this parallel, but he has compared the passage in the *Serglige* with Peredur's entrance into a revolving castle in the Welsh *Seint Greal* (ed. Williams, pp. 325-326; translation, p. 649). Peredur is escorted into this castle by a damsel, who goes before him, carrying his shield and his spear, to warrant him. This same incident, of course, is found in the prose *Perceval* (ed. Potvin, I, 196), and may possibly be a survival of the

The locked and apparently subaqueous door in *Mailduin* (§ 27) has been spoken of. It was seen just before the travellers reached the Isle of Maidens or the Happy Other World. When one recollects that in the *Tale of Loegaire* entrance to the Other World was effected by diving into the loch, and that Terror in *Fled Bricrend*, who is a mere duplicate of Curoi, departed after the head-cutting contest into the loch, it seems likely that we have in this door a surviving trace of a perilous under-water passage.¹

Obviously the revolving rampart of fire in *Mailduin* (§ 32), through a doorway in which, whenever it came opposite to them, the voyagers could see a land of marvellous splendor, is a variant of the Perilous-Passage motive. The beauty of the inhabitants seen within, their adorned garments, their perpetual feasting from golden vessels, and their far-prevailing music make the Other-World character of the place unmistakable. The revolving castle of the *Fled Bricrend*, in which Curoi lived with his wife Bláthnat, must also be regarded, as has been said, as an Other-World fortress. There are, then, in the most ancient Irish documents, two clear cases of the attribution of a revolving palisade to the Other World.²

motive appearing in Loeg's protection by Liban in the *Serglige*. The kind words of praise addressed by Bláthnat to Cuchulinn in the *Fled Bricrend*, after he has leaped into the revolving castle of her husband, should be remembered. In a modern tale, *The Bare Stripping Hangman* (*Waifs and Strays of Celtic Tradition*, III, 96-97), the hero, in distress at the castle of a giant, is rescued by the sister of the heroine, who takes him into the castle through an iron door in the wall and heals his wounds. (It will be remembered that Liban is sister to Fand.)

¹ The incident of reaching a land beneath the waves is common enough (see, for example, a tale of modern Brittany, *Rev. Celt.*, II, 308). An instance not before compared is in the *Romance of Reinbroun* (preserved in the Auchinleck MS., which dates from 1327), ed. Zupitza, E.E.T.S., sts. 80 ff. Reinbroun rides through a gate into a hill. The gate is shut and he rides half a mile in darkness. He comes to a palace surrounded by a broad water. He plunges, horse and all, into the water and goes to the bottom, thirty yards over helm, but reaches the palace at last. No one grows old there.

² Of course this does not prove that the incident was an invention of the Celts. Compare Hugo's palace at Constantinople, which, according to the *Journey of Charlemagne*, revolved on its axis by the operation of the wind (Child, *Ballads*, I, 276). Cf. also Chaucer, *House of Fame*, iii, 1918 ff., where the house of Dædalus is said to revolve.

There is a Welsh poem in the *Book of Taliessin*¹ called *The Victims of the Other World* which gives us reason to believe that this conception of a revolving barrier or a dangerous gateway at the entrance of the Other World was well known to the Welsh also. This poem, which is expressed in the obscure language of the early bards, tells of a voyage made by Arthur to Annwn for the purpose of rescuing the captive Gwair.² Like the Irish Other World, Annwn is regarded as an island lying beyond the sea :

PREIDDEN ANNWN.³

I.

I will praise the sovereign, supreme king of the land,
 Who hath extended his dominion over the shore of the world.
 Complete was the prison of Gweir⁴ in Caer Sidi,⁵
 Through the spite of Pwyll and Pryderi.
 No one before him went into it.
 The heavy blue chain held the faithful youth,
 And before the spoils of Annwvn woefully he sings,
 And till doom shall continue a bard of prayer.
 Thrice enough to fill Prydwen we went into it ;
 Except seven none returned from Caer Sidi.

¹ This MS. dates from the early part of the fourteenth century (Skene, *Four Books*, I, 3). As the poem bears no traces of the influence of French romance, it is fair to infer that it is based on early Welsh conceptions.

² This explanation is given by Stephens, *Literature of the Kymry*, p. 273, where also a text and a translation of the poem may be found (pp. 183-190). I have followed the later and more accurate translation in Skene.

³ Quoted from Skene, *Four Books*, I, 264-266; for the text, see II, 181-182.

⁴ There is a triad (*Myv. Arch.*, p. 80, l. 30, quoted by Stephens, *Lit. of the Kymry*, p. 190) that mentions the captivity of the family of Gair ap Geirion, lord of Geirionydd, as one of the three closest ever known.

⁵ Caer Sidi is mentioned also in another poem of the *Book of Taliessin* (No. xiv), part of which runs thus (Taliessin is the speaker):

Complete is my chair in Caer Sidi,
 No one will be afflicted with disease or old age that may be in it.
 It is known to Manawd and Pryderi.
 Three utterances, around the fire, will he sing before it,
 And around its borders are the streams of Ocean,
 And the fruitful fountain is above it,
 Is sweeter than white wine the liquor therein (Skene, I, 276; text, II, 154).

II.

Am I not a candidate for fame, if a song is heard?
 In Caer Pedryvan,¹ four its revolutions;
 In the first word from the cauldron when spoken,
 From the breath of nine maidens it was gently warmed.
 Is it not the cauldron of the chief of Annwvn? What is its intention?
 A ridge about its edge of pearls.
 It will not boil the food of a coward, that has not been sworn,
 A sword bright gleaming to him was raised,
 And in the hand of Lleinawg it was left
 And before the door of the gate of Uffern² the lamp was burning.
 And when we went with Arthur, a splendid labour,
 Except seven, none returned from Caer Vedwyd.³

III.

Am I not a candidate for fame with the listened song?
 In Caer Pedryvan, *in the isle of the strong door?*
 The twilight and pitchy darkness were mixed together.
 Bright wine their liquor before their retinue.
 Thrice enough to fill Prydwen we went on the sea,
 Except seven none returned from Caer Rigor.⁴

IV.

I shall not deserve much from the ruler of literature,
 Beyond Caer Wydyr they saw not the prowess of Arthur.
 Three score Canhwr stood on the wall,
 Difficult was a conversation with its sentinel.

From a comparison of these lines it will be seen that Caer Sidi is a Land of Youth surrounded by the sea. It is connected with the Other-World power Manawyddan (=Manawd), and with Pwyll and Pryderi. This is consistent with the Mabinogi, *Pwyll Prince of Dyvet*, which calls Pwyll "Prince of Annwn." Pryderi is his son and successor. Rhys, *Arthurian Legend*, p. 301, connects Sidi with the Welsh *sidyll*, "a spinning wheel," and translates *Caer Sidi* by "revolving castle."

¹ "The quadrangular enclosure": Stephens.

² "Hell": Stephens.

³ "The enclosure of the perfect ones": Stephens. "The Castle of Revelry": Rhys, *Arthurian Legend*, p. 301.

⁴ "The enclosure of the royal party": Stephens.

Thrice enough to fill Prydwen¹ there went with Arthur,
 Except seven none returned from Caer Golud.

Although in this poem Annwn is once called *Uffern* ("hell"); yet it has in the main the well-known characteristics of the Celtic Happy Other World. It contains a magic cauldron that presumably furnishes inexhaustible food, and the inhabitants are described as "drinking the bright wine." It is also called "The Enclosure of the Perfect Ones." That it can be entered by a difficult gateway only, is evident. It is called "The Island of the Strong Door" and is said to be "four times revolving."

It is perfectly clear, then, that a revolving barrier, or an active door of some kind,² was a widespread motive of Celtic Other-World

¹ The text of this refrain runs: "Tri lloneit prytwen yd aeth gan arthur." I venture to suggest that this peculiar expression refers to a magic quality of the ship Prytwenn, by virtue of which it could contain any number, however great. It is the ship in which Arthur journeys to the Other World. It is usual in Celtic tales for the ship that takes the hero to the Land beyond the Waves to be the gift of a *fée*, and of a marvellous character, often having the property of folding up or expanding. See *Harvard Studies and Notes*, VII, 199, note 1, where I have cited many references to boats of this sort. A typical example is in Curtin, *Hero-Tales of Ireland*, p. 249, where a staff thrown into the sea becomes a ship. It can be "put back into a staff again" and borne in the hand. It will be remembered that Arthur was finally carried off to Avalon in a mysterious ship. Prytwenn is probably the same sort of ship as the boat of glass that carried off Connla, which apparently could accomplish any distance before night, and as the bronze boat that ferried Loeg over to Labraid's isle. Doubtless, like Arthur's sword Caliburnus (Geoffrey, *Historia*, IX, 4), it was brought from Avalon. Layamon (vv. 22,736 ff.) ascribes to Arthur a magical table; Geoffrey, l.c., ascribes to him not only the sword Caliburnus, but a marvellous lance *Ron* and a shield *Priwen*; while in *Kulhwch and Olwen* (Rhys and Evans, *Red Book of Hergest*, I, 105) there is a considerable list of belongings, including Prytwenn, ascribed to Arthur. These objects all have names and are treated as very valuable. They are probably all magical. This at least is the conclusion to which analogy leads. See the list of magical things given by Manannán to Lugh (above, p. 42, note), among which is a sword very much resembling Caliburnus. There is no ship in the list, but there is a horse that travels equally well by land and sea. Doubtless he fills the place of a ship as a means of reaching the Other World.

² In Laistner, *Das Rätsel der Sphinx*, Berlin, 1889, I, 263, there is mentioned, as an obstacle on the way to the Other World, a door that ever slams to and fro. This reference I owe to Professor Kittredge.

story. *A priori*, therefore, we have reason to believe that it must have been present in the material that Chrétien used when he was writing his *Ivain*. What could he do with the motive, supposing he decided to keep it at all? Would he not naturally rationalize it into the familiar portcullis, to be seen at every castle gate? This I believe to have been the origin of the sharp iron portcullis in the *Ivain*, that descended, "aussi con deables d'anfer" (v. 944), behind the hero and cut his steed in two.¹ In view of the numerous

¹ An interesting parallel that should be quoted at this point, because it appears to show this motive at an intermediate stage of development, is the story of *La Mule sans Frein* (Méon, *Nouveau Recueil de Fabliaux*, I, 1 ff.). This is a French poem and was written about the year 1200, but its similarity to the kind of Other-World story that has been studied above is so great that its essential dependence on Celtic tradition can hardly be denied:

A damsel, riding a mule without a bridle, came to Arthur's court and asked for the help of a knight to recover her bridle for her. Kay set out first, and his unsuccessful attempt is contrasted with the victorious exploit of the hero Gawain, in the same way that the failures of Loegaire and Conall are set off against the success of Cuchulinn in the *Fled Bricrend*. Gawain rode over a bridge consisting of a single narrow iron bar which spanned a terrible river, and found a narrow path leading to a castle. A broad water encircled the castle. The walls were decked with the heads of former adventurers, set upon spikes, and but one spike was empty. The castle was always turning like a mill-wheel or a top. Gawain spurred the mule, and made a rush for the gate as it came round. The mule got through *with the loss of half her tail*. There was a *vilain* in the castle, black as a Moor, who played the beheading game with Gawain. When Gawain had come off successfully from this and other tests, he was entertained by a lady, sister to the Damsel of the Mule. She would fain have persuaded Gawain to remain with her and be her lord and lord of all her castles. But Gawain refused, took the bridle, and departed.

If the revolving-castle motive, which we know to have been a part of Celtic stories of the Journey to the Other World, had reached a form like this before it came to the hands of Chrétien, how easy it would have been for him to change the cutting in two of the mule's tail into the more thrilling incident of the horse and the portcullis!

The resemblance between *La Mule sans Frein* and the *Fled Bricrend* is obvious. In both there is a turning castle, and in both an ugly black giant who proposes the head-cutting game. When the heroes first visited Curoi in the *Fled Bricrend*, it will be remembered that they fell into a magic mist that caused them to lose their way. A parallel to this incident occurs in a turning-castle episode in *Wigalois* (ed. Pfeiffer, Leipzig, 1847, cols. 173-181, vv. 6714-7053). The hero, in

parallels to this development in modern Celtic stories quoted in the notes, this view appears highly probable, if not quite certain.

overcoming the enchanter Rôaz (a parallel figure to Curoi), was obliged to pass through a treacherous magic mist. He then came to a marble gate, before which ran a water-wheel upon an iron track:

Des ein rat von êre pflac:
daz lief umbe vor dem tor
ûf isenînen siulen enbor.
ez treip ein wazzer daz was grôz:
durch daz fûle mos ez flôz (vv. 6775 ff.).

The wheel was set with sharp swords and clubs. Wigalois at last entered the tower and was obliged to fight with a monster, half man, half horse, called "Marriên," before the fiercer conflict against Rôaz took place. On a pillar before the castle gate was a marvellous shining gem. There is a revolving castle which Gawain enters on horseback in *Diu Krône*, by Heinrich von dem Türlin (ed. Scholl, vv. 12,951 ff.), and also a giant who changes semblance in an extraordinary manner.

Revolving castles are rather common in modern Celtic Other-World tales. The modern tale of *Cucúlin* has been already cited (Curtin, *Myths and Folk-Lore of Ireland*, pp. 304-326). The tale of *Young Conall* is an interesting parallel (Curtin, *Hero-Tales of Ireland*, pp. 58-92, from County Kerry). When Conall arrived at the castle of the Yellow King, he saw three poles, of which two bore a skull apiece: "These are the heads of two kings' sons who came to win the Yellow King's daughter." Thought he, "I suppose mine will be the third." However, after a furious battle, Conall cut off the head of the Yellow King and married the daughter. He presently disregarded his mistress's injunction not to sleep in the open, and was punished by losing her. His adventures in recovering her were many, but she was at last found in a revolving prison-guarded castle. Similar tales containing the turning-castle incident are: *Blaiman, Son of Apple* (Curtin, *Hero-Tales*, pp. 373-406, from County Kerry), and *Coldfeet and the Queen of Lonesome Island* (Curtin, pp. 242-261, from County Kerry).

There are also a number of modern Other-World tales which contain variants of what may be called the active-door type. In the tale of *Morraha* (Larminie, *West Irish Folk-Tales*, pp. 10-30, from County Mayo), the hero set out in quest of the Sword of Light. His steed cleared three miles of fire at one leap, three miles of mountain at the next, and three miles of sea at the third. Morraha was well entertained by the young king and queen of the country in which he now found himself, and they directed him how to proceed. He took the best horse in the stable and went to the door of the giant Blue Niall. After having turned his horse's back to the door, he knocked and demanded the Sword of Light, at the same time putting spurs to his horse. But Blue Niall overtook him and, "as he was passing the gate, cut his horse in two." The next day Morraha

CHAPTER IV (*Continued*).ANCIENT CELTIC STORIES OF THE JOURNEY TO THE
OTHER WORLD.

VI. THE OTHER-WORLD LANDSCAPE.

THE extraordinary features of the landscape at the Fountain Perilous in the *Ivain* may be briefly recalled: The fountain, which boils like hot water, though it is in fact colder than marble, is shaded by the most beautiful tree in the world. This tree never loses its

had the same adventure, except that "as he was passing the gate" Blue Niall "cut the horse in two and half the saddle with him." On the third day, "as he was passing the gate," the giant "cut away the saddle and the clothes from his back." Morraha at last went at night and overcame the giant.

In the tale of *Art and Balor Beimenach* (Curtin, *Hero-Tales*, pp. 327 ff., from County Kerry), the hero has a similar adventure, thrice repeated; only in this case the giant cuts the horse in two as he is leaping the wall of the castle. "Art tumbled down from the wall with his life."

Another Irish tale containing the incident of the severed horse at a giant's castle, is printed by O'Foharta, *Zt. f. celt. Phil.*, I, 477 ff. In none of these tales, we should observe, is it said that the horse is cut in two *by* the gate, but only *at* the gate. However, the resemblance to the incident of the Falling Gates in the *Ivain* is certainly close. I suppose no one will maintain that these modern tales are a degradation of the *Ivain*. They certainly seem to corroborate the conclusion drawn from *La Mule sans Frein*, that the theme of a horse severed at the gate of the Other World, with great peril to the rider, may have been a part of Celtic story before the time of Chrétien.

There are at least two modern Irish tales that represent the perilous gate to the Other World as more or less in the form of a portcullis. In the story called *King's Son and White Bearded Scollog* (Curtin, *Hero-Tales* pp. 168-172, from Connemara), the gate of the giant's castle has "a pavement of sharp razors, edges upward." "Long needles set as thickly as bristles in a brush were fixed points downward under the lintel of the door and the door was low." The hero was obliged to make his horse leap into the castle over the razors and under the needles. Practically the same sort of gate to a giant's castle appears in *The King of Erin and the Queen of Lonesome Island* (Curtin, *Myths and Folk-Lore*, pp. 93-113).

There is a curious tale obtained by David Fitzgerald at Askeaton in Ireland in 1879 (*Rev. Celt.*, IV, 185-186). Lake Guirr, "all Munster knows, is enchanted; but

leaves, winter or summer. It is a pine, and the tallest¹ that ever grew on earth. Its foliage must be very thick, for, however hard it rains, not a drop can pass its branches. Singing birds gather so thickly on this tree that they entirely conceal its branches and its leaves. Though each bird sings a different note, their voices together make the most delightful harmony imaginable. No one will ever hear aught so beautiful unless he go thither to listen to them.

To sum up the chief features of the description, there is (1) a magnificent tree, (2) whose leaves do not fade summer or winter, and

the spell passes off it once in every seven years. The lake then, to whoever has the luck to behold it, appears dry; and the Tree may be partly seen at the bottom of it, covered with a Green Cloth. A certain bold fellow was at the spot one day at the very instant when the spell broke, and he rode his horse towards the tree and snatched away the Green Cloth (*Brat 'Uaine*) that covered it. As he turned his horse and fled for his life the Woman who sat on the watch, knitting under the cloth, at the foot of the tree, called out:

Awake, awake, thou silent tide!
From the Deád Women's Land a horseman rides,
From my head the green cloth snatching.

At the words the waters rose; and so fiercely did they pursue him that as he gained the edge of the lake *one half of his steed* was swept away, and with it the [Green Cloth], which he was drawing after him. Had that been taken, the enchantment was ended for ever."

I have quoted the story in full to show the confused form in which Fitzgerald obtained it. Apparently it must have been originally a fairy mistress tale. The tree would then be a part of the Other-World landscape, and the incident of the halving of the steed a survival of some active-door episode. Fitzgerald gives also a well-defined fairy mistress tale connected with this lake.

It is curious to remember that "the fountain such that if touched, or even seen by a man, it forthwith deluged the whole province" described by Giraldus Cambrensis (1146-1220) in his *Top. Hib.* (dist. ii, cap. 7, Rolls ed., V, 89), was in this same province, Munster. The fountain (*fons*), says Giraldus, would not stop deluging the province till a priest celebrated mass in an adjoining chapel.

The only inference I wish to draw from these modern tales is that the Strong Door attributed to the Other World in ancient Celtic story becomes naturally rationalized into a falling portcullis, while the incident of a horse being cut in two at this gate is a common embellishment.

¹ This translation is based on a variant ascribed by Foerster to MS. G. The reading that he adopts in his text (v. 414) is not "the tallest" but a repetition of what was said before, "the most beautiful."

(3) whose foliage is so dense that rain cannot pass through it, (4) standing by a fountain. (5) The tree is full of birds, who sing not in unison, but in harmony, and (6) their song is really a divine service.¹

This romantic landscape shows no signs of being a chance embellishment. It is described repeatedly, and one of Iwain's chief hopes, as he sets out on his journey, is that he may see the pine that overshadows the fountain. There is nothing, therefore, against an hypothesis that would explain this scene as a rationalization of an earlier Other-World landscape. On the contrary, no other adequate explanation has ever been suggested. With these facts in mind, we may turn to the study of the Other-World landscape in Celtic story.

In the *Serglige Conculaind*, which is the oldest extant tale of the precise type now under discussion, and which we have therefore used as a norm for comparison, the landscape of the Other World is rather fully described. It is marked by splendid trees full of singing birds. These trees bear fruit, and three hundred men are nourished by the fruit of each tree. One notable tree stands at the door of the Other-World palace, and the harmonious song of the birds upon it is particularly dwelt on. There is a noble well close at hand.

In the *Imram Brain*, the great antiquity of which seems certain, the same general features are described. One "ancient tree" is mentioned "from which birds call at the canonical hours" (§§ 6, 7).²

¹ S'escoutai tant qu'il orent fet

Lor servise trestot a tret (vv. 471-472).

² This singing to the Hours is obviously a borrowing from Christian conceptions of the Earthly Paradise. The birds are probably thought of as transformed souls (see *Mailduin*, § 19), awaiting the Day of Judgment, who chant the divine services at their appointed times. The fact that the influence of the Earthly Paradise has been at work at one point in this description naturally suggests that perhaps the notable tree may be a borrowing of the Christian Tree of Life (observe that its fruit feeds the Other-World people). At the same time, it must be remembered that the *Serglige* description (which bears no distinct marks of Christian influence), though it speaks of many trees, singles out one as of special prominence. A single tree with singing birds may well have been a part of pagan Celtic Other-World lore. The occurrence of an Other-World tree, perhaps due to Christian influence, in a document as ancient as the *Imram Brain*, has an important bearing on the vexed question of the origin of the ash Yggdrasill and the Scandinavian Other-World landscape in general. Christian influence may have operated *through* Ireland.

In another stanza (§ 43) "a wood without decay and without defect" is spoken of. This reminds one of the tree in the *Iwain*, whose leaves did not fade winter or summer.

The Celtic Other-World landscape, indeed, so far as it can be recovered from these two extremely early tales, closely resembles the scenery at the Fountain Perilous in the *Iwain*. In both there is (1) a remarkable tree, (2) whose leaves do not decay, (4) standing near a well, and (5) filled with singing birds, (6) who are performing a religious service. It will be observed that, except for the single feature (3) of the tree's having branches so thick that no rain could penetrate them, the list of important marks of the description in the *Iwain* would apply equally well to that of the Other-World landscape in these Irish tales. Even, therefore, if we were unable to trace this motive any farther, the probability that the scene in the *Iwain* is at bottom a rationalization of a Celtic Other-World landscape would be very great.

On the basis thus given, as has been said, it is entirely justifiable to assume that the birds singing psalms on Island 18 of the *Mailduin*, the souls in bird shape on the trees of Island 19, and the marvellous fountain of Island 20 must originally have been united in one landscape. A comparison of the later *imrama* establishes the truth of this inference beyond the possibility of doubt.

In the *Imram Snedgusa ocus Mic Riagla*, which is preserved in a fourteenth-century MS.,¹ but which has been shown by Zimmer² to have originated about the end of the ninth century or during the tenth, one of the adventures is as follows³:

Thereafter the wind wafts them to an island wherein was a great tree with beautiful birds on its branches. [Here follows a distinctly ecclesiastical account of "a great bird with head of gold and wings of silver" that told them tales out of the life of Christ (§ 17). The next section resumes:]

¹ *The Yellow Book of Lecan* (H. 2. 16. T. C. D.).

² *Haupt's Zt.*, XXXIII, 218 ff.

³ Quoted from the translation of Whitley Stokes, published, with the Irish text, in *Revue Celtique*, IX, 14-25. A summary of this tale is given by Zimmer, l.c., pp. 211-216.

"Melodious was the music of those birds a-singing psalms and canticles praising the Lord. For they were the birds of the Plain of Heaven and neither trunk nor leaf of that tree decays" (§ 18).

In this passage occur, *united*, features 1, 2, 5, and 6 of the description in the *Ivain*. Moreover, between the phrase last quoted and a part of the account of the tree in the *Ivain* there is an almost verbal resemblance¹:

SNEDGUS, § 18.

YVAIN, vv. 384-385.

And neither trunk nor leaf of that
tree decays.

An toz tans la fuelle li dure,
Qu'il ne la pert por nul iver.

In the Latin *Navigatio Sancti Brandani*, — which, as Zimmer has shown,² is based in great part on the Irish *imrama* (especially the *Imram Maílduin*), and is preserved in several MSS. considerably older than the time of Chrétien, — occur the fountain, the tree, and the birds united in a single landscape, forming a parallel to the *Ivain* that, as Kölbing has remarked, cannot be purely accidental.

In the *Navigatio*³ the voyagers arrive at an island which, as they have been previously informed,⁴ is called *Paradysus Avium*. They find the mouth of a river, and with the aid of a rope they tow their boat up the

¹ This and several other parallels discussed in the next few pages were pointed out by the late Professor Kölbing in an article entitled *Christian von Troyes Yvain und die Brandanuslegende*, in *Zt. f. vergleich. Litteraturgeschichte*, XI, 442-448. Kölbing justly felt that these coincidences could not be due to chance, but it did not occur to him that they proved a definite connection between the whole story of the *Ivain* and the *imrama*. He feels obliged to admit that Chrétien, in his description of the landscape at the Fountain Perilous, must have borrowed from various pieces of *imram* literature (he did not trace the theme back to fairy mistress stories like the *Serglige*); but he does not attempt to explain why Chrétien should have copied this material into his narrative. It is useless to the action and is scarcely the sort of ornament that a rationalizer like Chrétien would have gone out of his way to adopt. Why should it appear in the *Ivain* unless it was thrust upon him by the original story?

² *Haupt's Zt.*, XXXIII, 298. Zimmer dated the *Navigatio* not earlier than 1050; but Steinweg, *Rom. Forsch.*, VII, 1-48, cites a MS. of about 1000. Kölbing, l.c., p. 443, gives as date "the second half of the twelfth century."

³ *Sancti Brandani*, ed. C. Schröder, p. 11, ll. 19 ff.

⁴ P. 10, l. 18.

stream "dum ad fontem venerant ejusdem fluminis. . . . Erat autem super illo [sc. fonte] arbor mire latitudinis in gyrum et non magne altitudinis, cooperta avibus candidissimis: in tantum cooperuerunt illam, ut folia et rami ejus vix viderentur."

One of these birds addresses Brandan and tells him that they are really spirits in bird shape.¹ "Hic presentiam Dei non possumus videre, set in tantum alienavit nos a consortio aliorum qui steterunt, quia vagamur per diversas partes aeris et firmamenti et terrarum sicut alii spiritus qui mittuntur, sed in sanctis diebus atque dominicis accipimus corpora talia qualia tu nunc vides, ut commoremur hic laudemusque nostrum creatorem." . . . It is added²: "Cum autem vespertina hora appropinquasset, ceperunt omnes aves qui in arbore erant quasi una voce cantare percutientes latera sua atque dicentes: 'Te decet ymnus, Deus in Syon, et tibi reddetur votum in Jherusalem.' Et semper reciprocabant predictum versiculum quasi per spacium unius hore, et videbatur viro Dei et illis qui cum eo erant illa modulatio ex sonis alarum quasi carmen planctus pro suavitate."

Thus the birds sang at the various canonical hours: "ad terciam vigiliam noctis," "ad vesperum," "cum aurora refulsisset," "ad nonam." "Ita die ac nocte aves reddebant Deo laudem."

There are, as Kölbing has indicated, two remarkable verbal resemblances between this description in the *Navigatio* and that in the *Iwain*:

NAVIGATIO, pp. 11, l. 31; 12, ll. 26 ff.

YVAIN, vv. 462, 465 ff.

Ut folia et rami ejus vix viderentur.

Qu'il n'i paroît branche ne fuelle.

.

Ceperunt omnes aves que in arbore
erant, quasi una voce cantare.

Et trestuit li oisel chantoient,
Si que trestuit s'antracordoient.

It is, moreover, clear that in both cases the birds are engaged in a religious service, for this must be the meaning of the expression in the *Iwain*:

S'escoutai tant qu'il orent fet

Lor servise trestot a tret (vv. 471-472).³

¹ P. 12, ll. 16 ff.

² P. 12, ll. 26 ff.

³ Chrétien's words might possibly mean "until they had finished their office or duty"; but Kölbing points out that the phrase "feire servise" is regularly applied to a religious office, and compares the corresponding passage in the *Ívens Saga*, ii, 37: "þar til er þeir luku sǫng sínum ok tíðum [the canonical hours] er þeir sungu." Cf. Kölbing, *Ívens Saga*, Halle, 1898, pp. 16-17, footnote.

There is an Anglo-Norman version of the Brandan story which was composed by Benedeit about the year 1121. The corresponding incident in this is also strikingly like the description in the *Ivain*. The most important of these resemblances, which are occasionally even verbal, may be conveniently indicated by an arrangement in parallel columns:

BRANDAN,¹ vv. 489 ff.

Al chef del duit out une arbre
 Itant blanche cume marbre
 E les fuiles mult sunt ledes
 De ruge blanc taceledes
 De haltece par vedue
 Muntout le arbre sur la nue
 Des le sumet desque en terre
 La brancheie mult la serre
 E ledement s'estent par l'air
 Umbraiet luin e tolt l'eclair
 Tute asise de blancs oiseus
 Unches nul hom ne vit tant beus.

YVAIN, vv. 380 ff.

La fontainne verras, qui bout,
 S'est ele plus froide que marbres.
 Onbre li fet li plus biaux arbres
 Qu'onques poïst feire nature.
 An toz tans la fuelle li dure,
 Qu'il ne la pert por nul iver.

YVAIN, vv. 413 ff.

Bien sai de l'arbre, c'est la fins,
 Que ce estoit li plus biaux pins
 Qui onques sor terre creüst.
 Ne cuit qu'onques si fort pleüst
 Que d'iaue i passast une gote,
 Einçois coloït par desus tote.

YVAIN, vv. 459 ff.

Des que li tans fu trespassez,
 Vi sor le pin tant amassez
 Oisiaus (s'est qui croire m'an vuelle),
 Qu'il n'i paroît branche ne fuelle,
 Que tot ne fust covert d'oisiaus,
 S'an estoit li arbres plus biaux ;
 Et trestuit li oisel chantoient
 Si que trestuit s'antracordoient :
 Mes divers chanz chantoit chascuns.

¹ Quoted from Suchier's text, *Rom. Stud.*, I, 553-588. For convenience, abbreviations are here resolved and words are separated, but no punctuation has been attempted. Cf. Auracher's text, vv. 438 ff., *Zt. f. rom. Phil.*, II, 444 ff. On the date of Benedeit's *Brandan* (about 1121), see Suchier, p. 553. With this date Kölbing (l.c., p. 444) agrees and also G. Paris (*Rom.*, XXIX, 590, note 1).

All of the chief features of the landscape at the Fountain Perilous are to be found in this Anglo-Norman *Voyage of Brandan*, including even the dense foliage of the tree,¹ so that the summary which I have given of the features of the incident in the *Ivain* would apply equally well to the Anglo-Norman poem. In comparing the two narratives, Kölbing has directed attention to the identical rhyme-words² occurring at about the same point in the two episodes; also to the fact that in both the tree is described as especially adapted by the form of its branches for casting a shadow,³ and to the extraordinary height of the tree in the *Brandan*:

De haltece par vedue
Muntout le arbre sur la nue (vv. 493-494),

which is paralleled in the reading of one of the manuscripts⁴ of the *Ivain*:

Que ce estoit li plus hauz pins
Qui onques sor terre creüst (vv. 414-415),

and in the corresponding verse in Hartmann's *Iwein*:

Si ist breit *hōch* und alsō dic
daz regen noch der sunnen blic
niemer dar durch kumt (vv. 575 ff.).

From a comparison of these voyage-stories with the description of the scenery at the Fountain Perilous, Kölbing has come to the conclusion that Chrétien must have borrowed "dieses ganze Motiv von dem mit Vögeln dicht besetzten Baume" from the Brandan legend. He thinks the French poet must have had at hand the *Navigatio*, and probably also the Norman-French *Brandan*, and that he certainly must have known the incident in the *Imram Snedgus*.

¹ "La brancheie mult la serre" (v. 496).

² *Brandan*, vv. 489-490, *arbre, marbre*; *Ivain*, vv. 381-382, *marbres, arbres*.

³ *Brandan*, v. 498, "umbraie luin"; *Ivain*, v. 382, "Onbre li fet li plus biaux arbres."

⁴ This reading is more attractive than that adopted in the text of Foerster's editions, "li plus biaux pins," which merely repeats v. 382: "li plus biaux arbres." Kölbing thinks it certain that some texts of the *Navigatio* must have made the tree *high* (the version that we have reads "non magne altitudinis"), for in a fragment of an Old Norse version of the Brandan story the tree is called "einkar hátt" (Unger, *Heilagra Manna Sögur*, I, 275).

A moment's reflection will show that this is a very difficult hypothesis to maintain. Why should Chrétien have pieced together his description from various stories? The situation is not what it would be if the landscape formed an important element in Chrétien's plot. In that case one might possibly argue that Chrétien had been at great pains to put together his description from various hints. As it is, the accessories of the fountain (the tree, the birds, etc.) being mere ornaments, tending rather to interrupt the progress of the story, such a useless activity on his part is almost unthinkable. A far more probable inference to draw from the fact that Chrétien seems at one point to agree with the description in one story, while at another point he agrees with that in another,¹ is that we have not the particular originals that Chrétien used, but only stories containing the same theme, — namely, descriptions of the conventional landscape of the Celtic Other World, which had become identified with that of the Earthly Paradise. This will explain the presence in the *Ivain* of numerous apparently petty and purely decorative details, without our assuming that Chrétien purposely gathered them together out of different voyage-stories.

Kölbing, who does not attempt to explain how this extraordinary landscape made its way into the *Ivain*, recognizes distinctly its Other-World character. He compares the monkish *Visio Tnugdali*, which was composed between 1150 and 1160.² When Tundalus reached Paradise he found a scene unmistakably the same as that which we have traced in the Celtic *imrama*, in the *Navigatio*, and in the *Ivain*:

Et respiciens vidit unam arborem maximam et latissimam, frondibus et floribus viridissimam omniumque frugum generibus fertilissimam. In cujus frondibus, aves multe diversorum colorum et diversarum vocum cantantes et organizantes morabantur, sub cujus etiam ramis lilia et rose multe nimis et cunctarum herbarum specierumque odiferarum genera oriebantur.

¹ Thus the *Ivain* agrees with the *Snedgus* in the unfading leaves ascribed to the tree (a feature not mentioned in the *Navigatio*), while it agrees with the *Navigatio* in the birds' gathering so thickly that they obscure the branches and the leaves (a feature not mentioned in the *Snedgus*).

² Ed. A. Wagner, p. 50. Wagner discusses the date of the *Visio* on page xxv.

The extraordinary size of the tree in this scene, the numerous birds, and especially their singing in harmony, form, taken together, a parallel that cannot be due to chance. This passage, and others that might be cited, prove that the scene whose development is now under discussion must have been well understood in Chrétien's time as the conventional landscape of the Other World or the Earthly Paradise. There is, therefore, no reasonable hypothesis that will account for Chrétien's insertion of this theme *ab extra* into his *Iwain*. There are many things that show that he minimized the marvellous character of the incidents he was relating. It would be absurd, then, to hold that he went out of his way to drag in the landscape of the Other World. Its occurrence in the *Iwain* must be a survival from that Celtic story of a journey to the Other World which, as the cumulative evidence of many other incidents tends to show, lay at the basis of the tale of Iwain.

Practically every Celtic tale of a fairy mistress contains a description of the Other-World landscape. We have studied such descriptions in the *Serglige*, the *Bran*, the *Mailduin*, the *Snedgus*, and the *Adventures of Teigue*. Similar descriptions are to be found in less ancient tales, such as the *Imram curraig Húi Corra*,¹ the *Baile an*

¹ *The Voyage of the Húi Corra* exists in the *Book of Fermoy*, a fifteenth-century MS. It has been edited and translated by Stokes, *Rev. Celt.*, XIV, 22-70. Stokes puts the composition of the tale in the eleventh century. Zimmer (*Haupt's Zt.*, XXXIII, 198) thinks it "not earlier than the twelfth century." A passage in the early part of this *imram* runs thus:

"Thereafter I perceived that I was borne away to gaze at Heaven, and I perceived the Lord himself on his throne, and a bird-flock of angels making music to him. Then I saw a bright bird and sweeter was his singing than every melody. Now this was Michael in the form of a bird in the presence of the Creator" (§ 14).

Later the voyagers come to what seems to be the Earthly Paradise:

"Thereafter they row on for a long while, till another wonderful island was shewn to them, with a beautiful bright grove of fragrant apple trees therein. A very beautiful river flowed through the midst of the grove. Now when the wind would move the tree tops of the grove, sweeter was their song than any music. The Húi Corra ate somewhat of the apples and drank somewhat of the river of wine, so that they were straightway satisfied, and perceived not wound or disease in them" (§ 47).

Seal,¹ the *Echtra Cormaic*,² and many others. If, then, the material that Chrétien used in writing his *Ivain* was essentially a Celtic fairy tale, he must almost certainly have found in it an account of the Other-World landscape. The occurrence, therefore, of unmistakable

¹ The *Baile na Scail* is an Other-World Journey found in a fourteenth-century MS. It must, however, be at least as old as the eleventh century, for it was known to Flann of Monasterboice, who died in 1056 (O'Curry, *MS. Materials*, pp. 387-389, and Appendix, p. cxxviii). In it the Other-World tree is particularly dwelt on: "A kingly rath they saw with a beautiful tree at the door."

² The *Echtra Cormaic i Tír Tairngiri* exists in no MS. older than the fourteenth century. The text, according to Zimmer (*Haupt's Zt.*, XXXIII, 268) is at least somewhat older than that. It has been edited and translated by Stokes, *Irische Texte*, III, i, 183-212:

One day Cormac was alone in the plain near Tara when he saw a gray-haired warrior coming to him. He had in his hand a branch which when shaken put every one who heard it to sleep by the melody which it made. "Whence hast thou come?" said Cormac. "From a land," he replied, "where there is naught save truth and where there is neither old age nor decay nor gloom." Cormac asked for the music-making branch and received it after promising to give the warrior in return whatever three boons he should ask.

A year later the stranger reappeared and asked for Cormac's daughter, whom he took away with him. Again he came and took Cormac's son, and last of all his wife. Cormac endured this not, but followed after the stranger. He soon found himself alone on a plain with a wall of bronze around it. "He sees in the garth a shining fountain, with five streams flowing out of it, and the hosts in turn a-drinking its water. Nine hazels of Buan . . . drop their nuts into the fountain. . . . Now the sound of the falling of those streams is more melodious than any music that (men) sing." Cormac entered the palace and found a noble warrior with the loveliest of the world's women. He was entertained and bathed without the aid of any attendants. "The (heated) stones (of themselves went) into and (came) out (of the water)."

The warrior now brought forth Cormac's family and bestowed on him many gifts, saying: "I am Manannán mac Lir. To see the Land of Promise have I brought thee hither." After a banquet, all went to rest. When Cormac awoke in the morning, he found himself on the plain of Tara, and beside him were his wife, his son, and his daughter, and also all the presents that Manannán had given him.

It will be remembered that, when Teigue reached the Other World, he found Connla established there as a prince, having beside him "the damsel of many charms that brought him thither." Now in the *Dinnshenchas of Sinend* in the *Book of Leinster* (p. 156, a, 6) we read of an Other-World fountain called "Connla's Well":

traces of an Other-World landscape in the *Iwain* cannot but add much weight to the cumulative evidence of other incidents, which tends to show that the *Iwain* is at bottom a Celtic Other-World tale.

The Other-World landscape, as it appears in even the older Irish tales, is evidently in part, perhaps in very great part, a product of Christian influences. This fact in no way militates against the hypothesis that the episode reached Chrétien through Celtic channels.¹ The elements of the description, though perhaps in great

"Sinend, daughter of Lodan mac Lir, out of the Land of Promise, went to Connla's Well, which is under sea. That is the well at which are the hazels of wisdom, that is, the hazels of the science of poetry, and in the same hour their fruit, their blossom, and their foliage break forth." (See *Rev. Celt.*, XV, 457.)

Although this description may have been influenced by the classic fountain of the Muses, it certainly seems to show that, as early as 1150, a part of the Other-World landscape was definitely connected with Connla. Perhaps the *Echtra Condla* existed once in a more complete form, in which the Other-World landscape was described.

It will also be remembered that in the *Adventures of Teigue*, the hero, when he returns, is told that the Other World birds will go with him: "They will give you guidance and make you symphony and minstrelsy, and till again ye reach Ireland neither sadness or grief shall afflict you." These birds seem to be a part of the Other-World landscape, even if their guiding the hero suggests the possibility that classical influence has been at work in this passage. A guiding falcon is found in the *Mailduin*, § 34 (cf. *Æneid*, VI, 190 ff.). The birds of Riannon, the Other-World wife of Pwyll, should be compared at this point. In *Branwen, Daughter of Llyr* (Loth, *Les Mabinogion*, I, 91-93) Bran directs his followers to go to Harddlech, "where they will remain seven years at table while the birds of Rhiannon sing to them." They do as he tells them, and "three birds came and sang more beautifully than any birds they had ever heard. The birds kept far out over the sea, but they saw them as distinctly as if they were close at hand." This lasted for seven years.

The birds in the last two passages, though probably at bottom a part of the apparatus of the Celtic Other World, have perhaps been influenced a good deal by non-Celtic tradition. Professor Kittredge has called to my attention the birds to which the Monk Felix listened. Felix fell asleep at their music, and, when he awoke and returned to his monastery, he found that he had been absent two hundred years. For the text of this story and for references, see Waitz, *Göttinger Gesellschaft. d. Wiss., Hist.-phil. Classe, Abhandl.*, VIII, 7 ff.; cf. *Zt. f. d. Phil.*, XIV, 96; XXVIII, 35 ff.

¹ The same remark is to be made in general about the incidents discussed in this chapter. They have all been found as parts of Celtic fairy mistress story

part Christian, did not take their peculiar development except on Celtic ground. It is only on Celtic ground that stories written before the time of Chrétien can be pointed out that contain all of the important features of the landscape at the Fountain Perilous.

Few things are, therefore, more certain than that the marvellous landscape of Chrétien's Fountain is derived from Celtic sources. The long line of parallels to this incident, running back at least to the eighth century, is enough to establish this beyond a reasonable doubt.

CHAPTER IV (*Concluded*).

ANCIENT CELTIC STORIES OF THE JOURNEY TO THE OTHER WORLD.

VII. CONCLUSION.

THE result of the investigations in this chapter seems to be the complete establishment of all the parallels between the *Ivain* and the *Serglige* tentatively put forth on p. 44 above. The Marvellous Landscape at the Fountain Perilous has been shown to be the same as that in Labraid's isle. The Combat Motive in the *Ivain* has been exactly paralleled in an ancient Irish tale of the type of the *Serglige*. The Falling Gates have been traced by natural transitions to the Perilous-Passage Motive. The other parallels between the *Ivain* and the *Serglige*—the tale of a previous adventurer, the part played by the heroine's *confidante*, the departure of the hero to his own land, his broken faith, followed by his loss of the heroine and his madness—need no study to confirm their significance.

before the time of Chrétien. This is all that it is necessary to prove for our present purpose. That some of them are perhaps not of Celtic invention, but may have been early Celtic borrowings from what one writer has called "the common stock of European folk-lore," is of no consequence in the present argument, which is concerned with the question of Chrétien's immediate sources.

These coincidences between Chrétien's *Iwain* and a single particular type of ancient Irish and Welsh story cannot reasonably be regarded as due to chance. The *Iwain* must in origin be a Celtic story of a Journey to the Other World, of the type conveniently represented by the *Serglige Conculaind*.

CHAPTER V.

LATER CELTIC STORIES OF THE JOURNEY TO THE OTHER WORLD.

IN the great collection of tales called *The Colloquy with the Men of Old* (*Acallamh na Senórach*), preserved in manuscripts of the fifteenth century,¹ there is a story of the Journey to the Other World which illustrates very well the partial rationalization which the older themes generally undergo when they pass through the hands of later redactors. In this tale the Other-World heroine is represented as the daughter of the arch-ollave of Manannán mac Lir, and the hero is said to have eloped with her. These rather stupid attempts at rationalization² do not, however, prevent the original fairy character of the lady from coming out distinctly. Though the story in the *Acallamh* is only an episode, it will be convenient to give it a title from the name of the hero :

¹ The fragments occurring in the *Book of Lismore* (including this tale) are printed by O'Grady, *Silva Gadelica*, I, 94-234 (translation, II, 101-265). The whole *Acallamh* has since been edited, from four MSS., by Stokes, *Irish Texts*, IV, i, 1-438, with a translation of such passages as are not found in the *Book of Lismore*. The story which here concerns us is considerably older than the fifteenth century.

² The fact that the tale has suffered rationalization goes to show that its original form must be old.

THE STORY OF CIABÁN.¹

Ciabán put to sea with two strangers in a boat. Caught in a dreadful storm, the voyagers were like to perish when they saw a horseman on a dark green steed with a golden bridle, riding over the waves. He took the three travellers up on the back of his horse, while the boat floated along beside, and in this way they came to the Land of Promise (*Tír Thairrñ-gaire*). There they dismounted and went to Manannán's *cathair* (stone fort), "in which an end had just been made of ordering a banqueting hall for them."² "All four were served there: their horns and their cups were raised: comely dark-eyed gillies went round with smooth polished horns: sweet-stringed timpani were played by them and most melodious dulcet-chorded harps, until the whole house was flooded with music." "Now in the Land of Promise, Manannán possessed an arch-ollave that had three daughters. The three travellers eloped with these three daughters." Ciabán carried off the one named Clidna and reached Ireland with her.

Although in this tale the fairy character of the lady has been lost sight of, yet in some verses that are sung she is called "the queen of the distant gathering," an apparent survival of her primitive exalted position. The incident of meeting Manannán on the sea is found in the oldest tales. In the *Serglige* and the *Bran*, however, Manannán drives a chariot. Horseback riding is probably a later feature, though not necessarily very late. Loegaire, according to the *Book of Leinster*, returned from the Other World on horseback. In Celtic story the Other World is reached either in a marvellous ship, which is presumably the earlier motive, or by means of a horse that travels on the sea as well as on the land.³ The tale of Ciabán is interesting as showing one motive as it were in process of transformation into the other. The travellers start in a boat,⁴ but finish their journey on the back of a horse.

¹ Summarized from O'Grady, *Silva Gadelica*, II, 198-201. For text, see Stokes, *Irish Texts*, IV, i, 106 ff.

² I.e. the coming of the travellers is expected, as is always the case in the Other World.

³ For example, in the *Fate of the Children of Tuirean*, Lugh is said to have had Manannán's steed Enbarr, which travelled equally well by sea or by land.

⁴ A marvellous self-moving boat as a means of communication with the Other World appears in the fairy mistress story of Becuma (summarized by Todd, from

There are numbers of later Irish Other-World stories belonging to the type exemplified in the older literature by the *Serglige*, the *Loegaire*, and the Welsh *Pwyll and Arawn*. In these stories, it will be remembered, the hero is in each case invited to the Other World by a fairy chieftain, who is oppressed by a mysterious enemy and needs the aid of a mortal hero to free him from his foe. As a reward, the hero in every case is promised and receives the hand of a *fée*.

The precise form in which the stories of this type have been handed down to us can only be explained, I think, by assuming that they have suffered more or less at the hands of rationalizers, who have modified the original relations of the supernatural actors to make them conform to ordinary human situations. All the Celtic fairy stories, with the exception of the *Echtra Condla*, show traces of having been influenced by a general tendency to represent the fairy folk as merely human beings living in a marvellous or distant land. Fairy relationships are interpreted after a strictly human pattern.¹ Liban, the messenger of Fand, is made the wife of Labraid, a king of the Other World. The *fée* in the tale of Loegaire is represented as the daughter of Fiachna, whom he bestows in marriage just as any earthly monarch would bestow his daughter. The Other World is often identified with the Isle of Man or the Hebrides or some other remote land. In the more modern stories this process has gone so far that the Other World is commonly represented as Greece, and the heroine, whose fairy character has been forgotten,

the *Book of Fermoy*, a fifteenth-century MS., *R.I.A., Irish MS. Series*, I, 38 ff.). Manannán appears in this tale as a chieftain of the Tuatha de Danan. The tale of Finn and Bebind in the *Acallamh na Senórach* should also be compared (Stokes, *Irische Texte*, IV, i, 164 ff.; translation, O'Grady, *Silva Gadelica*, II, 238-242), where an Other-World personage escapes in a mysterious boat across the sea. Bebind (Bébind), a lady of supernatural beauty, visits Finn. She declares that she has come from the Land of Maidens across the Western Sea. She is the daughter of the king of that land, "who has nine daughters and one hundred and forty maidens." "There are no men there except the king and his three sons."

¹ It should be remembered that none of these story texts are much older, in their present form, than the tenth century. By that time the Irish had long been Christians, and doubtless already their conceptions of the fairies were becoming confused.

is called the daughter of the king of Athens. *Sorcha*¹ (Portugal) is another name applied to what must have been at first the Other World, while *Tír fá Thuinn*² is even explained as Holland.

If we make allowances for this progressive euhemerization, a more primitive form of the type of story now under discussion may be reconstructed as follows: The *fée* was probably always represented as supreme. She falls in love with a mortal and sends one of her maidens to invite him to her land. Several adventurers thereupon set out, but the *fée* appoints one of her creatures to guard the passage. Naturally, no one overcomes this opposing warrior but the destined hero, who is rewarded by the possession of the *fée*. But to the exalted character of the *fée* is joined a requirement of absolute obedience to her commands. Very often the hero offends in some way and is punished by instant dismissal. If he ever returns, it is only after many adventures.

If this be not the primitive form of the type of story with which we are dealing, how can one explain the fact that Labraid does not send some one of his officers to invite Cuchulinn to his land, especially after Cuchulinn has objected to going on the invitation of a woman? The coming of a woman, Liban, is an evident survival from an older form of the story, in which the *fée* and her maidens were the only real actors. Again, if this be not the original form of stories of this type, how can one explain the fact that Arawn offers his wife to Pwyll? "I will give thee the most beautiful woman thou hast ever seen to sleep with thee every night." This is a natural development if Arawn was at first only the creature of the *fée*, employed by her to lure the mortal on whom she had set her fancy to the Other World. The ruthless way, in the *Tale of Curoi*, in which Bláthnat marries Cuchulinn after the death of her husband, may also be taken as an indication that the giant was originally only a creature of the *fée*.

Of course, neither in the *Tale of Curoi* nor in any of the other tales just mentioned could the opposing warrior, in the most primitive form of the story, have been really slain. He was an Other-

¹ See Douglas Hyde, *The Lad of the Ferule*, p. xiv, note.

² "The Land beneath the Waves." See Hyde, p. 23, note.

World being, like the *fée*, and like her essentially immortal. This is clearly indicated in the case of Curoi, who, as we know from the *Fled Bricrend*, was thrice beheaded, but each time returned the next day as strong as ever. All of these supernatural creatures of the *fée*, Manannán, Arawn, Curoi, are shape-shifters. The opposing warrior is only apparently slain by the hero, not really put out of the way. The combat was in origin only a test of valor. Its object was to give the hero a chance to prove that he was worthy of the love of a *fée*.

When, however, the fairy nature of the Other-World people became more and more forgotten, the combat was regarded as a battle in earnest to get rid of a powerful opponent. The female *fées* were shorn of their absolute power, and men were introduced to play the leading parts, as on earth. Hence would naturally arise a situation like that in the *Serglige*, where the Other-World king is represented as oppressed by a foe and as sending for Cuchulinn to help him. The reward he promises is the hand of a *fée*, who is more or less rationalized and is represented as his sister-in-law. A slightly different turn in the rationalization would give the situation in the *Loegaire*, where the fairy king presents his daughter to the mortal hero who comes to his aid. Another and very natural turn would represent the Other-World power employed by the *fée* to test the hero's valor, as her husband.¹ This would give the situation in *Pwyll and Arawn*, in the *Tale of Curoi*, and, I may add, in the story of Laudine and Esclados.²

¹ The creature of the *fée* may have been thought of in the earliest times as her paramour, not of course as her husband in any strict sense, for the conventional relations of human marriage would not have been strictly applied to distinctly supernatural beings such as the primitive fairies undoubtedly were. Even if this supernatural being, really a god, were her paramour, she might have tired of him, as is hinted in the story of Fand and Manannán, and employed him to lure to her an earthly hero to take his place. In any case, it is easy to see how the creature of the *fée*, presumably a giant, might be rationalized into her husband or her oppressor.

² Important confirmation of the truth of this development is found in the curiously jumbled incident of *La Joie de la Cort* in Chrétien's *Erec*. The lady (represented as an enchantress), who is of course a rationalized *fée*, is said to have persuaded her lover to enter a garden surrounded by a mysterious wall of air, and

There are, then, in stories of the type represented by the *Serglige* and the *Tale of Curoi* but two original Other-World actors of any consequence: the *fée* and the shape-shifter. In the earlier form of tales of this type, the *fée*, we may assume, made use of the shape-shifter to guide the mortal hero on his way to the Other World and to test his valor before he was admitted there. In the form in which they have come down to us, the tendency to represent the fairy man as superior to the *fée* has asserted itself. The shape-shifter is distressed by a powerful enemy, from whom he can be delivered only by a mortal hero. He therefore, of his own accord, seeks out and guides to the Other World the appropriate hero, and as a reward for his services bestows on him the *fée*.

In the later Irish tales of this type, the various appearances of the shape-shifter in his task of luring and directing the hero to the Other World are made as puzzling as possible. This is perhaps chiefly because the actual character of the shape-shifter has been misunderstood or forgotten; but one cannot help feeling that sometimes mystification has been purposely introduced for the sake of keeping up the suspense and thus retaining the interest of the listener till the very end. Sometimes, at the close of a tale, a phrase or two is added to explain that the various creatures encountered by the hero were in reality different forms of the same Other-World power. More often

to have made him swear to remain there with her till a knight shall enter who can overcome him. Erec enters and overthrows the lover, who is of gigantic size. In this story, it will be seen, the opposing warrior is actually subject to the *fée* (practically her creature), just as must have been the case in the more primitive forms of the Celtic Other-World tale, as we have already inferred on other evidence.

The explanation here sketched of the development of Other-World tales of the *Serglige* type has been merely hinted at in previous chapters, and no arguments at all have been based on it. This has been done of set purpose, lest any reader should suppose that the proof that the story of Chrétien's *Ivain* depends on Celtic sources rested in any way on this reconstruction. The entire explanation may be rejected, without interfering in the least with the train of reasoning which has shown that the *Ivain* and tales like the *Serglige* belong to the same special *genre*, and therefore in all probability must be derived from the same sources. The explanation is inserted at this point as a necessary preliminary to the disentangling of various modern tales which, through centuries of oral transmission before they were written down, have often become extraordinarily confused.

all elucidatory hints are omitted, and the tale appears, at first sight, a mere jumble of disconnected incidents.

A fair example of an Irish tale of this type, which has been preserved only in a modern manuscript, and has suffered the usual confusions incident to constant retelling and careless transcription, is *The Gillie of the Ferule*:

GIOLLA AN FHIUGHHA.¹

The story begins with the appearance of a mysterious stranger, who presents the hero (Murough) with a brace of hounds sent by the Queen of Pride. He then disappears "like the mist of a winter fog or the whiff of a March wind," and no more is heard of him, or of the Queen of Pride and her message.

The next day Murough goes hunting with the strange hounds, and is led by them to a particular spot, where he meets an odd fellow in a black shirt, who asks to be taken into his service. Murough agrees to hire him and to give him as his wages whatever single request he shall ask at the end of a year. What he asks for is a ferule to fit his stick. The only ferule that will serve turns out to be at the bottom of a lake. The upshot of the matter is that Murough is obliged to dive through the lake into *Tir na n-Óg*, which lies below. There he finds that the King of Under-Wave Land has been robbed of all his possessions by a giant, and that the monster is coming that very evening to carry off the king's daughter. Murough slays the giant and rescues the daughter. He is now escorted to the palace of King Under-Wave, where he finds his Gillie of the Ferule sitting on a golden throne with a silver cushion at his feet. After spending what seem to be several days in perpetual feasting, Murough thinks of returning. When he reaches Ireland, he finds that he has been absent a year and a day.

The remarks of Dr. Hyde in his introduction to this tale throw so much light on the matter that I shall quote them at some length: "To those who are unaccustomed to the ways of the traditional Irish story-teller, *The Lad of the Ferule* will appear entirely wanting in sequence, though it really is not altogether so. . . . The reader familiar with Irish story-telling will understand at once that all this

¹ Edited, with a translation, by Douglas Hyde, for the Irish Texts Society, London, 1899, under the title of *The Lad of the Ferule*.

machinery of the hounds, the hunting, and the ferule was put in motion by a mysterious being, a god in fact (a similar being appears in some stories as Lugh, and in others as Manannán), to the end that he might save Tír na n-Óg. It is he who appears as the messenger with the two hounds, and an untrue tale about the Queen of Pride. It is he again who, having by means of his hounds placed Murough in a dilemma, takes service with him as his gillie; and it is he who finally entices him down into Tír na n-Óg, and makes use of him to set free the country. *I feel quite certain that this is the way the story would be understood, and was meant to be understood, by all native Irish readers.*¹ (The italics are mine.)

Our study of the older stories enables us to take a step farther and to understand that "the tale about the Queen of Pride" was not originally "untrue" at all. The Queen of Pride² is evidently the *fée* whose creature and servant, in an earlier form of the story, the Gillie of the Ferule really was. She no doubt sent him with the gift of the hounds, her object being to entice away the hero upon whom she had fixed her love. She must also have sent him, disguised as a gillie, to take service with Murough, and thus by the device of the Ferule to entrap him into diving into the lake. Probably she also sent out the giant, by combat with whom the hero could prove his valor. In the present form of the tale, the original thread of connection is all but lost, the only clear hint being the casual indication that the Gillie of the Ferule is identical with King Under-Wave.

The Gillie of the Ferule, however, though more or less confused, has not suffered any positive derangement. The same hero, Murough, still runs through the piece, and there is no evidence of any intentional remodelling. The story has apparently reached its present form as a result of successive slight and almost unintentional modifications. There are some Irish tales of this type that have not only suffered from such gradual decay, but have been actually

¹ Pp. viii-x.

² Dr. Schofield has reminded me of Lady Orgueltouse, who several times appears in the romances (e.g. in Chrétien, *Perceval*, ed. Potvin, III, 28, vv. 10,007 ff.) as dwelling in a mysterious castle. The name may come from some Celtic form like this.

remodelled by some stupid but ambitious transcriber. It happens that a tale of this kind, called *The Slothful Gillie*, is of importance in the present investigation because of a remarkable parallel it contains to Iwain's combat at the Fountain Perilous.

The Slothful Gillie will no doubt appear at first entirely disconnected to one who is not familiar with late Irish stories. It has, indeed, been stupidly remodelled in the latter part of the plot, and the original hero has been displaced by another. I must beg the reader, however, not to make up his mind that it is wholly lacking in sequence, even in its present shape, until he has run through at least half-a-dozen late Irish tales of the type to which it belongs,¹ and has observed how commonly different appearances of the same Other-World creature have been misunderstood and represented as separate and entirely unrelated adventures.

The tale of *The Slothful Gillie* exists unfortunately in no manuscript older than the eighteenth century. However, it is certainly at least as old as 1630, for it is mentioned in that year by Keating, the historian.² It will be necessary to summarize it at considerable length in order to show fairly its precise character:

¹ See, for example, O'Grady, *Silva Gadelica*; Joyce, *Old Celtic Romances*. A good example of a tale containing adventures apparently disconnected but definitely explained at the end as different appearances of the same shape-shifter, evidently an Other-World power, is the *Amadhan Mor* (Kennedy, *Bardic Stories of Ireland*, pp. 151-155). The hero first meets the Gruagach of the Gold Cup. On his drinking from the cup, his legs drop off below the knees. After the disappearance of the Gruagach of the Cup, leaving him in this plight, he is met by the Gruagach of the White Dog, who invites him to *Dun an Oir*, his abode, and promises to get the Gruagach of the Gold Cup into his power, and force him to restore to the hero his legs. The Gruagach of the White Dog now goes out to hunt, charging the hero to guard the palace till he returns. A mysterious stranger enters and is seized by the hero, who refuses, in spite of his struggles, to release him until he reveals who he is. Suddenly the stranger throws off his disguise. He is the Lord of the Gold Fort (*Dun an Oir*), who took the form of the Gruagach of the Gold Cup, and again that of the Gruagach of the White Dog, in order to lead the hero away to visit his land. He of course restores to the hero his legs, and makes them as strong as ever.

² See O'Curry, *Lectures on the MS. Materials*, p. 318. As the latter part of *In Gilla Decair* gives, as it seems, the cause of the Battle of Ventry (namely, the carrying off of Taise, daughter of the king of the Greeks), it may be argued

IN GILLA DECAIR.¹

One day Finn was out hunting with his Fenians, when they saw approaching an ugly black giant "devilish and misshapen," carrying a "black and loathly colored shield, and every limb of him was blacker than a smith's coal." He led, or rather dragged, by an iron chain an enormous horse, which continually balked and had to be beaten with an iron club that the giant carried. [The club was so large that as the giant dragged it along, its end resting on the ground tore up a track as deep as the furrow a farmer ploughs with a yoke of oxen.]

The big man came into Finn's presence and saluted him. His name is the Slothful Gillie (*Gilla Decair*), and he desires service under Finn. Finn, who never refused anybody, took the fellow into his pay and gave him permission to put his horse with the horses of the Fenians. No sooner, however, had the monstrous horse come among the other horses than it began to lacerate and kill them with its hoofs and teeth. As the Slothful Gillie refused to restrain his animal, Conan caught it by the halter and by the advice of his comrades resolved to mount it and ride till he had broken its furious temper. But the horse refused to move. The Fenians thought that it would not stir till it had on its back a weight equal to that of the big gillie. They therefore climbed up behind Conan to the number of thirteen.

Suddenly the Slothful Gillie set off with the speed of the wind and his big horse followed him. Conan and his comrades attempted to throw themselves off, but they found that their hands and feet stuck fast to the

that it is at least as old as the present form of the Finn cycle. Into the vexed question of the age of the Finn saga it is not possible to go. Barbour's *Bruce* (1380) mentions Finn in a way to show that he was well known. Five tales about Finn are mentioned in the celebrated list in the *Book of Leinster* (Hyde, *Literary Hist. of Ireland*, p. 382). Alfred Nutt has argued (*Waifs and Strays*, II, 414), from the fact that no exploits of Finn against the Normans are related, that the Finn tales took their present form before 1066.

¹ Printed by O'Grady, *Silva Gadelica*, I, 258-276 (translation, II, 292-311), from Additional MS. 34,119 in the British Museum, which dates from 1765. The story has also been in great part translated by Joyce, *Old Celtic Romances*, pp. 223-273, from MS. R. I. A. 24. B. 28, written in 1728, with comparison of MS. R. I. A. 23. G. 21, written in 1795. The essential outline of the story is reproduced in the folk-tale printed by Curtin, *Mac Cool, Hard Gillie, and High King* (*Hero-Tales of Ireland*, pp. 514-529). In the summary I have followed O'Grady's translation, except that the passages in brackets are inserted from Joyce.

horse. The Fenians pursued, and Liagán the Swift managed to seize the horse's tail, to which, however, his hands stuck, and he was dragged along. The horse presently set foot on the sea, across which he travelled till the Fenians lost sight of him.

Finn resolved to follow the fifteen men who had thus been carried away. Two skillful companions met him. One, the ship-maker, produced a magic boat by striking three strokes of his axe on a sling-stick that he had. The other, the sea-tracker, was able to follow the trail of the horse across the unknown sea.

After a three days' voyage [in which they encountered a great storm] Finn and his comrades came to the foot of a precipice [towering to such a height that its head seemed hidden among the clouds], up which the sea-tracker informed them the trail of the big horse led. The voyagers now appealed to Diarmaid, saying that he had been brought up and taught by Manannán mac Lir in the Land of Promise, and that it was a shame if he could not help them. Stung by their words, Diarmaid vaulted by means of his spear-shaft from the ship to the cliff and with great exertion made his way to the top.

Diarmaid advanced alone through a waste and tangled woodland of densest thicket, which of all that he had ever ranged did most abound in foliage, in melody of birds, and in the hum of bees. He was aware of "a vast tree with interlacing boughs and thickly furnished." Close by the tree was a pillar stone provided with a pointed drinking cup and having at its base a fair well of water, clear as crystal [that bubbled up in the centre]. [Twice Diarmaid stooped to drink of the water with his lips, but each time he heard the heavy tread of a body of warriors and the clang of arms, which caused him to spring to his feet. The third time, however, he drank, using the drinking horn, which was chased with gold and enamelled with precious stones.] Scarcely had he put down the horn when he saw a Gruagach approaching, [clad in mail and wearing a scarlet mantle over his armor.] He did not greet Diarmaid, but upbraided him outrageously for roaming his forest and drinking of his fountain. Diarmaid and the Gruagach encountered each other vehemently and fought till sunset. Toward evening the Gruagach drew suddenly back, dived into the well, and disappeared. Next day the contest was renewed, and ended in the same manner. But at the close of the third day, when the Gruagach sought to dive, Diarmaid clasped his arm round him and sank with him to the bottom of the well. Arrived there, the Gruagach broke away. Diarmaid pursued and found himself in an open country, beautiful and flowery. He came to a city, which he entered, passing on to a citadel, "through the portal of which his enemy passed into a place of strength

and on him they shut the fortress-gates." Diarmaid fought with a host who were outside and slew them all. Then he lay down to sleep.

He was awakened by a Gruagach, who escorted him to his palace and royally entertained him, healing his wounds and giving him splendid garments. He told Diarmaid that this is Under-Wave Land (*Tír fá Thuinn*). The warrior with whom Diarmaid fought is called the Gruagach of the Well and is the King of Under-Wave Land. His own name is the Gruagach of Chivalry, and he has reason to be kind to Diarmaid, for he once spent a year in the service of Finn Mac Cool in Ireland. There is war between him and the Gruagach of the Fountain.

Diarmaid, on hearing this, agreed to fight for the Gruagach of Chivalry. He slew his old adversary, the Gruagach of the Fountain, and won for his friend the kingship over Under-Wave Land.

Meanwhile Finn and his folk had found their way up the cliff. They fell in with the King of Sorcha, who entertained them. The King of Sorcha was at war with the King of the Greeks and besought Finn to help him. A single combat was at length appointed between Finn and the son of the King of the Greeks. The maiden daughter of the King of the Greeks, Taise of the White Body, had fallen in love with Finn, and she obtained leave of her father to witness the duel. Finn slew his opponent. "Great as was the love which at the first Taise of the White Body had borne Finn, seven times so much she bestowed on him while he butchered her brother."

That night Taise stole away to Finn. But the King of the Greeks heard of it and sent his messenger "provided with a certain special branch of great beauty, which when shaken threw the host into a trance of slumber." By the aid of the mysterious branch, the messenger was able to carry off Taise from the midst of the host of the Fenians. The king thereupon took his daughter and returned to Greece.

Diarmaid now came up, and Finn was rejoiced to learn of his successful adventure. Diarmaid told Finn that the Gruagach of Chivalry had revealed by his magic art that it was Avartach, son of Allchad [of the Many-Colored Raiment¹ who took the form of the Slothful Gillie and] carried away the fifteen Fenians into the Land of Promise.

¹ "Avartach mac Allchaid Ioldathach." This Avartach of the Many-Colored Raiment is mentioned along with Manannán mac Lir in *The Pursuit of Diarmuid and Grainne* (ed. Soc. for the Preserv. of Irish, Dublin, 1880, I, 52), where also Ilbhreac ("the variously spotted one"), son of Manannán, is referred to. This connection with Manannán seems to make it clear that the epithets *Ioldathach*, *Ilbreac* refer to shape-shifting, or change of color and form.

Finn and his comrades thereupon made their way to the Land of Promise and recovered their companions. Avartach received them like a king and made them reparation.

Before the Fenians returned to Ireland, Goll and Oscar were sent to Athens, where they stole away Taise and brought her back to Finn. The story ends with the wedding feast of Finn and Taise.

If the reader will compare this tale of *The Slothful Gillie* with that of *The Gillie of the Ferule*, previously outlined, he will see that they belong to essentially the same type. Both are accounts of the doings of an Other-World being, who visits this earth in disguise and takes service as the gillie of a mortal hero. In both tales, his object is to lure a mortal champion to the Land beneath the Waves. In both tales, *Tír fá Thuinn* is reached by diving, though Diarmaid plunges into a well or fountain instead of into a lake as Murough is said to have done.

Now in *The Gillie of the Ferule*, and in all the older tales of this particular type (such as the *Serglige*, the *Loegaire*, and the story of *Pwyll and Arawn*), the motive impelling the Other-World being to desire the visit of a mortal is oppression at the hands of a mysterious foe, whom only a particular mortal hero can overcome. Analogy suggests that this must have been the case with Avartach, and distinct evidence that such was really the motive of his disguise as the Slothful Gillie is not lacking.

The Gruagach of Chivalry is oppressed by a powerful enemy and welcomes Diarmaid, who does actually slay this foe and thus makes his friend king of all *Tír fá Thuinn*, just as a similar exploit of a mortal hero made Fiachna king of all Mag Mell, and Arawn king of all Annwn. Who is this Gruagach of Chivalry, whose name suggests that he is somebody in disguise? All we know about him is that "he has good reason to be kind to Diarmaid, for he once spent a year in the service of Finn." Now Avartach, in the shape of the Slothful Gillie, was for a time in the service of Finn. Clearly the Gruagach of Chivalry is only Avartach in another disguise.¹ The

¹ The last transcriber of *In Gilla Decair* has not understood this identity or he would not have said "a year," for the Slothful Gillie is not represented as being in Finn's service for any length of time.

travellers do not find out who he is until they reach his palace, just as Murough does not seem, even after he has reached the Other World, to recognize his Gillie of the Ferule until he enters his palace and sees him sitting on his golden throne. That the Gruagach of Chivalry is identical with Avartach is confirmed by the remark, "It was the Gruagach of Chivalry who revealed by his magic art that it was Avartach of the Many-Colored Raiment who took the form of the Slothful Gillie and carried off the fifteen Fenians into *Tír Tairngiri*," which would mean that he revealed to him that "it was himself, the shape-shifter, who came in the form of the Slothful Gillie." No reader of Irish tales can have much doubt on this point. Analogous situations are not uncommon. In the *Amadhan Mor*, for example, the Gruagach of the White Dog and the Gruagach of the Gold Cup are two forms of the same Other-World being, yet the Gruagach of the White Dog tells the hero that "he will get the Gruagach of the Gold Cup into his power and force him to restore the hero's legs." No other hint of their identity is given till the very end of the tale. Such an explanation at the end, if it ever existed in the *Gilla Decair*, may readily have dropped out in the evident working-over which that part of the tale has undergone. If the Gruagach of Chivalry is identical with Avartach, it is plain that the coming of the Slothful Gillie was really to secure assistance against the Gruagach of the Fountain, and the parallelism with the *Giolla an Fhiugha* and the older tales is complete.

Whether this particular parallel can be regarded as established or not, the fact that the *Gilla Decair* is an Other-World story of the type of the *Giolla an Fhiugha*, and therefore of the *Serglige*, the *Loegaire*, the *Tale of Curoi*, and the tale of *Pwyll and Arawn*, seems certain. The character of Avartach,¹ a confessed shape-shifter, who is called "the man of the many-colored raiment," is enough by itself, in view of the evident Other-World character of the story, to decide

¹ It would be natural to suppose that some connection must exist between *Avartach* and *Avallach*, the Welsh name both for the Other World and for the King of the Other World, were it not that the phonetic change of Welsh *ll* to Irish *rt* is contrary to rule. The two names, however, as pronounced, would sound very nearly alike.

this. The *Gilla Decair*, then, belongs to the particular type of Other-World tale to which, as has been shown, Chrétien's *Iwain*, even in its present form, closely approximates. We might expect, therefore, that a study of *In Gilla Decair* would throw light on the rather confusedly rationalized tale of Iwain.

It will be remembered that the theme of the Giant Herdsman in the *Iwain* is distinctly traceable in the older *Mailduin*,¹ and that the original function of this ugly monster was doubtless to point out the way to the Other World. Is it not more than a mere coincidence that in *In Gilla Decair* the black giant with the enormous horse comes expressly to guide the heroes to the Other World? The descriptions of these two monsters are strikingly similar:

IN GILLA DECAIR.

An ugly creature, devilish and misshapen, carrying a black and loathly colored shield, and every limb of him was blacker than a smith's coal. He dragged on the ground an iron club so great that it tore up a track as deep as the furrow a farmer ploughs with a yoke of oxen.

IWAIN.

A monstrous and hideous churl, who resembled a Moor and was so ugly that he could not be described.

This creature sat on a stump, holding a great club in his hand.

He had a head larger than that of a horse, etc.

The Slothful Gillie is not, to be sure, represented as a herdsman in charge of fighting bulls, but he does possess a fighting animal of his own. His enormous horse, when let loose among the horses of the Fenians, "began to lacerate and kill them with its hoofs and teeth." It will be remembered that in the *Mailduin* we have found the Giant Herdsman motive represented (§ 9) by "many great animals like unto horses which were fighting each other. Each would take a piece out of another's side and carry it away with its skin and its flesh, so that out of their sides streams of crimson blood were flowing."² In an older form of the theme, the monstrous animals

¹ See p. 73, above.

² See p. 61, above.

may well have been more like horses than bulls. The change to cattle would be a step toward rationalization, for a cattle-driver was a not uncommon object.¹

Now the Slothful Gillie we know to have been Avartach, an Other-World being in disguise. By analogy, therefore, we are able to explain the presence of the Giant Herdsman in the *Ivain*. He was originally the creature of the *fée*, sent by her to guide the hero to the Other World.

¹ Of course it is only contended that the Slothful Gillie and the Giant Herdsman may go back to the same stock incident of the Celtic Journey to the Other World. If the Slothful Gillie theme be founded on the Giant Herdsman motive, it has certainly experienced an entirely different development. The idea of representing the Gillie's horse as *carrying* off certain mortals to the Other World is no doubt the result of contamination with another theme, which, however, is itself almost certainly Celtic. In the earliest tales (the *Serglige*, the *Bran*) Manannán is seen driving in a chariot over the sea, while in the *Story of Ciabán* we have found him carrying the heroes on the back of his horse to the Land beyond the Waves. Avartach is a parallel figure to Manannán, and it is natural to have him turn up with a steed like Manannán's horse *Enbarr*, which travelled equally well by sea or by land (see p. 42, note, above). The use of horses to return from the Other World appears in the ancient *Tale of Loegaire* (cf. the Welsh *Herla*), and the use of a magic steed to reach the Other World appears constantly in modern Celtic folk-tales. The motive is, therefore, almost certainly ancient Celtic.

The incident of cleaving fast to an object and being carried off with it to the Other World is perhaps also Celtic. In the Mabinogi *Manawyddan Son of Llyr* (Loth, *Les Mabinogion*, I, 106), Pryderi and Rhiannon enter a mysterious palace, and place their hands on a bowl they find there. Their hands immediately stick, so that they cannot escape. The palace presently vanishes, and Pryderi and Rhiannon are found to have been carried to the Other World. The incident of successive riders who mount the same horse and are all stuck fast and carried off into a lake occurs in a modern Golspie tale (Nicholson, *Golspie*, London, 1897, pp. 21-23; a reference which I owe to Professor Kittredge). No one would maintain that the motive of magically adhering to an object is of especially Celtic origin. In *The Chase of Slieve Fuad* (Joyce, *Old Celtic Romances*, p. 376), the heroes cleave to the floor of the Other-World dungeon of the giant Dryantore. In the *Fairy Palace of the Quicken Trees* (Joyce, p. 193), Finn and his comrades cleave to their seats so that they cannot arise. See J. F. Campbell, *Popular Tales of the West Highlands*, I, 36; MacDougall, *Folk and Hero Tales*, p. 164; and, outside of Celtic ground, *The Tale of the Basyn*, Hazlitt, *Early Popular Poetry of England*, III, 42-53; the Prose Edda, *Bragaræður*, chap. 56. Vulcan also had a seat from which nobody could arise (Prato, *Zi. f. Volkskunde*, I, 113).

In the *Gilla Decair*, the Other-World power Avartach comes in the shape of a black giant to lure the Fenians to *Tír fá Thuinn*. Diarmaid, who has been trained up by Manannán, actually reaches Under-Wave Land, and frees Avartach, who appears under the name of the Gruagach of Chivalry, from an oppressing tyrant, the Gruagach of the Fountain. As a reward, he ought, on the analogy of all the older stories, to receive the hand of a *fée*. Instead of that, he drops out of the tale, and Finn is suddenly exalted to the leading position. It is incredible that the tale in any primitive form could have thus changed protagonists at the centre of the action. The story appears, then, to have been confused at this point, and Finn has been introduced in place of Diarmaid. Finn takes sides with the King of Sorcha, an Other-World ruler, and frees him from the oppression of the King of the Greeks. He wins the love of Taise of the White Body, daughter of the King of the Greeks. Taise is evidently a rationalized *fée*. If the analogy of other modern Irish tales, in which the King of the Greeks regularly represents a partly rationalized King of the Fairies (see p. 97, above), were not sufficient to prove this, the magic branch employed by the messenger of the King of the Greeks should settle the point. Parallels to this branch run through the ancient Celtic fairy stories.¹ In a more primitive form of the *Gilla Decair* tale, Finn did probably visit the Other World and encounter there Diarmaid, who had successfully accomplished the Other-World adventure, just as Arthur in the *Iwain* comes to the Fountain Perilous and is entertained at Laudine's castle by the successful hero.² Finn ought not, however, to win the hand of

¹ See the *Imram Brain* and the *Echtra Cormaic*.

² Alfred Nutt (*Voyage of Bran*, I, 140) has drawn a number of parallels between Finn and Arthur. Both have birth stories, *enfances*, unfaithful wives, and traitorous nephews. To this I would add that both made journeys to the Other World, and that Finn's meeting with Diarmaid, who has successfully accomplished the adventure of *Tír fá Thuinn*, is a scene very similar to Arthur's meeting with the successful Iwain at Laudine's castle.

That the attribution to Finn of a journey to the Other World was made very early seems indicated by a poem in the *Book of Leinster* (edited and translated by Stokes, *Rev. Celt.*, VII, 289-307), which describes the visit of Finn and his companions to a land of monstrous beings, with whom they have an all-night

the *fée*. It is Diarmaid, not Finn, who was brought up in the Land of Promise by Manannán mac Lir, and who was thus specially educated, as it were, for the Other-World adventure. It is Diarmaid, "the best lover of women and maidens in the whole world,"¹ — Diarmaid, who had a beauty spot that made every woman who saw it fall in love with him, — who would naturally win the *fée*. Moreover, there are numbers of later tales that represent Diarmaid as the hero of a fairy mistress story.² Hence it is probable that, as Conan,

combat. Alfred Nutt (*Waifs and Strays*, IV, 11, 283) has given a reference to Dunbar which shows that in the time of the poet (1450-1525) Finn or Finn's followers were credited with harrowing hell.

¹ *The Pursuit of Diarmuid and Grainne* (ed. Soc. for the Preserv. of Irish, 1880, I, 7).

² In a modern folk-tale, *Dyeermud Ulta and the King in South Erin* (Curtin, *Hero-Tales*, pp. 182 ff., from County Donegal), Dyeermud sees a red champion in a ship that is sailing along the country like any ship at sea. (The Other-World ship, like the Other-World horse, regularly travels by land as well as by sea: cf. *Bran*, § 42; *Mailduin*, § 23; and a passage from the *Book of Leinster*, translated by O'Grady, *Silva Gadelica*, II, 453, where three ships navigating the air over men's heads are described.) By the aid of the red champion, Dyeermud is able to sail up to a castle situated twenty miles from the sea, the lord of which had declared that he would give his daughter to nobody except the man who could come to his castle gate in a three-masted ship. After overcoming the lord of the castle, Dyeermud marries his daughter. In a West Highland tale (Campbell, III, 403-420), Diarmaid visits the Other World and marries the daughter of King Under-Wave.

In a modern Irish tale, *Fin Mac Cool, Faolan, and the Mountain of Happiness* (Curtin, *Hero-Tales*, pp. 489 ff., from County Kerry), Dyeermud wins a fairy mistress from a revolving castle after having first overcome the Black Blue Giant, her father. This giant is said "to know every place in the world," so that he is probably an enchanter like Avartach, and his name (Black Blue) is probably a reference to his power of changing color and shape. Curiously enough it is said that the giant's daughter was already in love with Dyeermud, having seen him once in combat with the Prince of the Greeks on Ventry Strand. It will be remembered that, in the *Gilla Decair*, Taise falls in love with Finn when she sees him in combat with the Prince of the Greeks, her brother. It is possible to hold that the stories refer to the same incident, and that the modern tale of Dyeermud has preserved the original situation in the *Gilla Decair*, of which all analogy shows Diarmaid must once have been the hero. Nor is the ascription of the Other-World adventure to Diarmaid a modern idea. *The Pursuit of Diarmuid and Grainne* is mentioned in the list of stories given in the *Book of Leinster* (Hyde,

the backbiter of the Finn cycle, was a parallel figure to Kay, so Diarmaid was a parallel figure to Iwain (or Gawain) as its typical Other-World adventurer.

We cannot be quite sure what has happened to the tale of the *Gilla Decair* at the point where Diarmaid drops out of sight,¹ but it seems probable that Finn has been inserted in place of his follower. In the original form of the story, then, we must infer that Taise the *fée* fell in love with Diarmaid. She sent Avartach, the shape-shifter, in the form of the Slothful Gillie, to lure the Fenians to her land. She then appointed another of her creatures, the Gruagach of the Fountain, to encounter Diarmaid and test his valor, and only at the last, when the hero had successfully overthrown this Gruagach and other enemies, did she bestow on him her hand. The King of Sorcha must be a later name for Avartach, and the King of the Greeks, for the Gruagach of the Fountain.

Our inference that such was the original form of the tale seems to be supported by the remark: "Great as was at the first the love which Taise of the White Body had borne Finn, seven times so much she bestowed on him while he butchered her brother." "Her brother" was of course not originally a brother at all. He was one of her creatures, sent out to test the hero's valor, like the monsters sent out to attack Cuchulinn at the castle of Curoi. Hence she rejoiced to see the hero conquer him, just as Bláthnat had kind words for Cuchulinn when he entered the fort victorious.² We have, indeed, in the rationalized description of the opposing warrior as the lady's brother a parallel to the *Tale of Curoi* and, I may add, to the *Iwain*, where the opponent is called the lady's husband.

Lit. Hist. of Ireland, pp. 350 ff.), and it contains a well-defined Other-World incident of which Diarmaid is the hero. There is a marvellous quicken tree sprung from one of the berries of the Land of Promise and guarded by a giant whom Diarmaid slays (*Pursuit of Diarmuid and Grainne*, ed. Soc. for Preserv. of Irish, 1880, I, 53 ff.); cf. *Lay of Diarmaid*, J. F. Campbell, *Popular Tales of the West Highlands*, III, 50 ff.

¹ It is quite possible, for example, that a fairy mistress story about Finn has been worked into the *Gilla Decair*, and substituted for the original adventures of Diarmaid.

² See p. 51, above.

If this reconstruction be sound,—and it is supported by the analogy both of ancient and of later Celtic stories,—we are able, by comparison, to see the original thread on which were strung together several adventures of the *Ivain* that have hitherto seemed rather disconnected. The Giant Herdsman, and probably therefore the Hospitable Host, must originally have been different appearances of the same Other-World being,¹ a shape-shifter commissioned by the *fée* to guide the hero to her land. The story must once have run somewhat as follows: The *fée*, Laudine, fell in love with Iwain, and sent her attendant maiden Lunete to Arthur's court to invite the visit of mortal heroes. Calogrenant was the first to accept, but, not being the chosen one, he returned in discomfiture. At last Iwain set out. The Hospitable Host is the creature of the *fée* appointed to further his journey. The Giant Herdsman is another appearance of the same shape-shifter, designed to point out the particular path that leads to the Other World. Esclados le Ros was at first also only another of the *fée's* creatures, whose object was to try the hero's valor. If the hero overcame this mysterious giant, he was to be rewarded with the hand of the *fée*. This last situation was very early misunderstood, and probably long before the material reached Chrétien had been changed into a combat with the lady's husband. Thus by natural steps may have arisen that theme of the sudden marriage of a newly bereaved widow to the slayer of her husband which has been such a puzzle to the critics.

However, it is not necessary to postulate any of the theories just outlined in order to prove that the *Gilla Decair* belongs to that type of Other-World adventure of which the *Serglige Conculaind* is a good example. Nor is it even necessary to accept the plausible reconstruction of the *Gilla Decair* story which would retain Diarmaid as the hero throughout. Putting aside every particle of theory, and comparing the *Gilla Decair*, just as it is, with stories like the *Serglige*, the *Loegaire*, and the *Tale of Curoi*, I do not see how it is possible to avoid the conviction that these stories all belong to the same

¹ Baist, *Zt. f. rom. Phil.*, XXI, 403, has remarked that the Hospitable Host and the Giant Herdsman may originally have had some more intimate connection with the adventure than any which appears in the *Ivain*.

type. Like the rest, the *Gilla Decair* is an Other-World Journey. As in the other stories, the visit of the mortal heroes was invited and a combat in the Other World is a central incident. Above all, the character of Avartach, so strikingly similar to that of Manannán, of Arawn, and of Curoi, puts the identity of type beyond a reasonable doubt.

The tale of the *Gilla Decair*, then, belongs to a type to which it has been shown that Chrétien's *Ivain* closely approximates. It is natural, therefore, to expect to find in it certain of the stock motives of the Celtic Other-World Journey preserved in a form very like that in which they occur in the *Ivain*. And this is exactly what we seem to find. As has been said, the parallel that it contains to the whole scene of the combat at the Fountain Perilous is of the most significant character :

1. In both tales, the hero finds tangled woods of densest thicket :

Et trovai un chemin a destre
 Parmi une forest espesse.
 Mout i ot voie felenesse,
 De ronces et d'espines plainne (vv. 180 ff.).

2. In both, he hears the song of birds :

Et trestuit li oisel chantoient
 Si que trestuit s'antracordoient (vv. 465-466).

3. In both, there is a vast tree :

Onbre li fet li plus biaux (or *haus*) arbres
 Qu'onques poïst feire nature (vv. 382-383).

4. With thickly interlacing boughs :

Que ce estoit li plus biaux pins
 Qui onques sor terre creüst.
 Ne cuit qu'onques si fort pleüst
 Que d'iaue i passast une gote (vv. 414 ff.).

5. And there is a notable stone :

Un perron tel con tu verras (v. 390).

6. To which belongs a golden drinking vessel :

A l'arbre vi le bacin pandre
 Del plus fin or qui fust a vandre
 Onques ancor an nule foire (vv. 419 ff.).

7. Immediately beneath the tree, and beside the stone, there is a bubbling spring :

De la fontainne poez croire
Qu'ele boloit com iaeue chaude (vv. 422, 423).

8. In both stories, troubling the fountain provokes the appearance of a hostile warrior, who makes so much noise with his armor that before he appears the hero thinks a whole band of armed men is approaching :

Tant i fui que j'oï venir
Chevaliers, ce me fu avis —
Bien cuidai que il fussent dis :
Tel noise et tel fraint demenoit
Uns seus chevaliers qui venoit (vv. 478 ff.).

Compare

Li chevaliers a si grant bruit
Con s'il chaçast un cerf de ruit (vv. 813-814).

9. In both tales, the warrior does not greet the hero, but reproaches him vehemently for damaging his dominions :

De si haut com il pot criër,
Me comança a desfiër, etc. (vv. 489 ff.).

10. This warrior is in one tale clad in red, and in the other is called Esclados le Ros (v. 1970).

11. In both, the hero overcomes his adversary, and, pursuing him, enters into a magic land.

12. In both, the escaping warrior flees through the streets of a city and enters a citadel, the gates of which are shut behind him.

It is clear that a whole chapter, so to speak, out of the *Gilla Decair* is strikingly similar both in incident and in arrangement to a corresponding portion of the *Ivain*. The resemblances, it will be noted, sometimes extend to very minute details, such as the interlacing boughs of the tree and the clatter made by the approaching warrior.

Several scholars¹ have pointed out the practical identity of this

¹ Macbain, *Celtic Magazine*, IX, 278 (1884); Alfred Nutt, *Celtic Magazine*, XII, 555 (1887); Rhÿs, *Hibbert Lectures*, pp. 187 ff. (1888); F. Lot, *Romania*, XXI, 67 ff. (1892). No one of the last three scholars refers to any of his predecessors.

episode in the *Gilla Decair* with the adventure at the Fountain in the *Iwain*, and Ferdinand Lot has summed up the situation thus: "En résumé, nous sommes en présence de trois hypothèses: 1° ou bien ce thème est irlandais, et alors son origine celtique est patente; 2° ou bien il est emprunté à quelque poète français (Chrétien ou autre); je n'insiste pas sur cette supposition qui me paraît chimérique; 3° Chrétien de Troyes et le conte irlandais ont une source commune, et cette source est quelque légende galloise. La première hypothèse me paraît, quant à moi, la plus vraisemblable. En tout cas, ce thème est celtique, bien celtique, et c'est une nouvelle preuve de l'origine celtique des récits utilisés par Chrétien."¹

Lot, though recognizing the probability that the theme is really Celtic, made no systematic effort to disprove the second hypothesis, which he mentioned but for himself rejected. The limits of his article did not permit him to study the ways of the later Irish storyteller,² and to show that the present confused form of the *Gilla Decair* story may well be the result of the dislocation of an ancient Celtic Other-World tale.

To one who has followed the development of stories of this type from the *Serlige* to *The Gillie of the Ferule*, Lot's second hypothesis must seem altogether untenable. There are several incidents in the episode under discussion which cannot have been taken from Chrétien, and are indeed more primitive than the corresponding features of the account in the *Iwain*. The challenge by drinking at a fountain is a simpler and older form of the motive than that by pouring water on a rock and thus provoking a furious storm.³ Diarmaid's diving beneath the water in order to reach *Tír fá Thuinn* is a

¹ *Romania*, XXI, 71.

² Lot says (p. 71): "Cet épisode semble intercalé dans la *Poursuite de Gilla Dacker*, car il n'est pas utile au reste du récit." He adds a note, however, which shows that he had not rejected the possibility of a different explanation: "Cependant je n'en répondrais pas absolument. Presque toutes les légendes irlandaises nous semblent se composer d'épisodes qui ne se rattachent pas nettement les uns aux autres; c'est du moins l'impression qu'elles produisent sur nous autres Français, qui voulons une certaine suite, même dans le fantastique."

³ Lot has noted this.

very ancient motive, which can hardly have been the insertion of a late copyist. Loegaire, according to the *Book of Leinster*, plunged into a loch to reach Mag Mell. In the *Fled Bricrend*, Terror, who is a mere duplicate of Curoi, departed *into the loch*, and in *The Gillie of the Ferule*, Murough reached Under-Wave Land by diving into a lake. The incident appears to be a survival.

To pass over these apparent survivals of primitive incidents, the real point that makes the theory of borrowing impossible is this: How could a late compiler, who *ex hypothesi* knew nothing of the real character of the *Ivain*, have had the miraculous fortune to insert his extract from Chrétien into exactly that type of story to which investigation makes it clear that the *Ivain* originally belonged? Is it by chance that the adventure is attributed to Diarmaid, who was trained up by Manannán mac Lir and was well understood to be the Other-World adventurer of the Finn cycle? And, above all, is it by chance that Avartach is introduced into the story, — a figure exactly parallel to Manannán, to Arawn, to Curoi, and to the Other-World actor who must have played an important part in an older form of the tale of Iwain? No matter what views one may entertain as to the precise make-up of the *Gilla Decair*, the chances against such an hypothesis as this are enormous.

This episode in the *Gilla Decair* must, then, be a survival of a primitive Celtic theme which long ago made its way into French literature and has been preserved in the *Ivain*. The Celtic origin of the main portion of Chrétien's poem is therefore settled beyond dispute.

It must not be supposed, however, that the proof of the dependence of the *Ivain* on a Celtic story of the type conveniently represented by the *Serglige* rests in any way on the *Gilla Decair*. The present chapter, dealing with the later Irish stories, has been written only with the intention of confirming an hypothesis already put practically beyond the reach of doubt by the ancient documents. We have found in the more modern Irish literature just those resemblances to the *Ivain* that one might expect if the theory of Celtic origin be true. The case, however, really rests on the ancient tales. Therefore, even if it should at some time be proved that the striking resemblances between the *Gilla Decair* and the *Ivain*

are due to a knowledge of Chrétien's poem, the argument for the Celtic origin of the *Iwain* would not be sensibly weakened, much less overthrown.¹

CHAPTER VI.

IWAIN IN THE OTHER WORLD.

To prove a basis in Celtic tradition for the story of Chrétien's *Iwain*, the supposition that the particular hero, after whom the romance is named, was well known among the Celts as an Other-World adventurer is not a necessary prerequisite. The Other-World story was told of various heroes from Connla to the Welsh Herla, and it may not have got attached to Iwain till very shortly before the time of Chrétien.

Even if our information about Celtic legend were tolerably complete (which is not the case), a critic who should urge that, because Iwain does not in any extant Celtic story appear as an Other-World adventurer, therefore Chrétien's romance called *Iwain* cannot go back to Celtic sources, would be making a very weak objection indeed.

¹ All possibility of the influence of Chrétien on the episode in the *Gilla Decair* seems, however, practically excluded. The only hypothesis of this sort that is rationally thinkable, so far as I can see, is that the *Gilla Decair* story, in an earlier form, possessed an incident so similar to that at the Fountain Perilous that some Irish transcriber who was familiar with Chrétien (there is a late Irish version of the *Iwain*, *Echtra Ridire na Leoman*, in an eighteenth-century MS., H. 2. 6, at Trinity College, Dublin; see Zimmer, *Gött. Gel. Anz.*, 1890, p. 510) noticed the resemblance and modified his original in places in order to produce that practical identity of detail that we now observe. A transcriber, however, who worked in this way would probably have made the resemblance complete. He would surely, for example, have omitted the dive into the fountain. Besides, this is really a question-begging hypothesis, after all, for either the transcriber must have been a man of such supernatural insight that he could anticipate the results of modern investigation, or the resemblances even in the first place must have been so striking that a presumably not over-intelligent Irishman of several centuries ago could easily recognize them. Surely, if either of these alternatives be granted, it is all that any advocate of the Celtic theory need desire.

He would be assuming that a story never changes its protagonist. The truth is quite otherwise. A student of literary origins early learns that, although incidents survive and may be safely used to trace a source, the name of the hero of any particular incident changes with considerable facility.¹ In the present discussion, therefore, any argument that should depend for its validity upon the assumed persistence of a single proper name has been, and ought to be as far as possible, excluded.

Notwithstanding this fact, it is worth while to observe that the inherent probability that Owen, who was one of the best known and most celebrated heroes of the Welsh,² became in popular legend an Other-World adventurer, is supported by the circumstance that several French romances contain incidents plainly of Celtic origin in which Iwain is associated with the Other World. Of course these incidents *prove* nothing, because Iwain may not have been their original hero, but they are interesting, and they will be cited since they serve to establish a kind of presumption that Iwain was well known as an Other-World adventurer.

In the *Bataille Loquifer*,³ a twelfth-century romance, three *fées* appear and say: "Let us carry Rainouart to Avalon and make him live in the midst of our friends, King Arthur, Yvain de Galles, Gauvain, and Roland." Rainouart is accordingly borne to Avalon, where he is made to fight the cat Chapalu.

In the prose *Lancelot*,⁴ Iwain appears as a prisoner in a mysterious castle.⁵ He is detained by Morgain la Fée. The region where the castle is located is called "Le Val sans Retour" and can be reached

¹ Compare, to mention well-known examples only, how in the Arthurian romances Galahad usurped the position of Grail Hero, earlier assigned to Perceval; and in the *chansons de geste*, how Charlemagne became the central figure of adventures originally belonging to Charles Martel and Charles the Bald.

² For evidence of the early and great popularity of Owen among the Welsh, see Skene, *Four Ancient Books of Wales*, index, s.v. *Owen*.

³ See *Hist. Litt.*, XXII, 535-536.

⁴ P. Paris, *Les Romans de la Table Ronde*, IV, *Lancelot du Lac*, pp. 283-293. Cf. III, 362, where Yvain is prisoner to Morganor.

⁵ In *Claris et Laris* (ed. Alton, pp. 17 ff.), a thirteenth-century romance, Iwain is released from prison by Claris and Laris. This is perhaps a rationalization of the incident discussed above.

only by a narrow passage, guarded by five armed knights. Lancelot traverses the difficult passage, overthrows the knights, passes a wall of flames, ascends a staircase guarded by three warriors, and is at last successful in releasing Iwain and the other prisoners of Morgain. When the prisoners are released, Le Val sans Retour, its castles, its walls, its warriors, and its enchantments suddenly vanish.

This "Val sans Retour" appears to be identical with the place described in Chrétien's *Lancelot* as Meleagant's prison. Meleagant's prison was in the realm "don nus n'eschape,"¹ and could be reached only by two mysterious bridges, one passing under water and the other consisting of a sharp sword. The prisoners in it were likewise released by Lancelot.

Meleagant's prison, as Paris has shown,² is really the Other World, the Land of the Dead.³ It is highly probable, therefore, that this

¹ Ed. Foerster, *Der Karrenritter*, 1899, v. 1948; cf. vv. 657 ff.

² *Romania*, XII, 459-534.

³ Compare a passage in Chrétien's *Lancelot* where there is a cemetery described, full of tombs, upon the covers of which are inscribed the names of those who are to lie there. Lancelot enters:

Comança les letres a lire,
Et trova: "Ci girra Gauvains,
Ci Looys et ci Yvains."
Aprés cez trois i a mainz liz
Des nons des chevaliers esliz,
Des plus prisiez et des meillors
Et de cele terre et d'aillors (vv. 1876 ff.).

Lancelot comes at length to a marble tomb, more beautiful than the others, on which is written:

Cil qui levera
Ceste lame seus par son cors,
Getera ceus et celes fors,
Qui sont an la terre an prison (vv. 1912 ff.).

To the intense astonishment of his guide, Lancelot is able to raise the cover of this tomb. He is thereupon told that he is the destined one

qui deliverra
Toz ces qui sont pris a la trape
El reume don nus n'eschape (vv. 1946 ff.).

This story is obscurely told, but it appears possible that it, too, is a confused rationalization of some more primitive incident in which Iwain was represented as imprisoned in the Other World.

imprisonment of Iwain in "Le Val sans Retour" described in the prose *Lancelot* is a partial rationalization of some older story that represented Iwain as having undertaken a journey to the Other World. It is exactly what would be expected if Iwain was, among the Celts, a well-known Other-World adventurer, like Connla or Cuchulinn. From the *Adventures of Teigue* (p. 74, above) it is plain that Connla was thought of as living in the Other World. Stories representing Iwain as dwelling in Avalon or in the Realm of the Dead might easily find their way into the French romances.

In view of this fact, one is tempted to suggest that Owain Miles, the legend of whose journey to Purgatory and Paradise appeared in the twelfth century¹ and made its way into almost all the literatures of Western Europe, is really the same person as Sir Iwain, Arthur's knight,² and that the visit to Purgatory was ascribed to him because of his well-known connection with the Other World. Nothing is easier than the transition from the Celtic Other World to the Christian Purgatory and Paradise. As has been said in a previous chapter, the Happy Other World became confused with the Christian Earthly Paradise. This identification once under way, a connection with Purgatory, a place of punishment, would not be difficult.³ The story of *Owain Miles*, moreover, though based in general on the widely spread Christian vision-literature of the Middle Ages, differs from the mediæval type to which it belongs in several features, which seem to show the influence of Celtic Other-World journey.

While the typical visit to Purgatory and Paradise is a vision and the narrator has no idea of the road by which he travelled, it is clear

¹ The first mention of the Purgatory of St. Patrick is made by the monk Jocelin of Furness in his *Vita Sancti Patricii* (about 1183). The oldest account of a journey through the cavern called the Purgatory of St. Patrick is the *Tractatus de Purgatorio Sancti Patricii*, written by H[enry?] of Saltrey, probably about 1188. From this Latin *Tractatus*, Marie's *Espurgatoire*, the English *Owain Miles*, and other versions are derived (see Jenkins, *L'Espurgatoire of Marie*, pp. 1 ff.). See also E. J. Becker, *Contrib. to the Comp. Study of the Med. Visions*, etc., 1899; G. P. Knapp, *St. Patrick's Purgatory*, 1900.

² This suggestion was made in 1820 by Roquefort, *Marie de France*, II, 405.

³ Confusion of fairyland with hell and of the fairies with evil spirits is not uncommon in later tales. It is especially frequent in the tales of Brittany (cf. Le Braz, *La Légende de la Mort*, 1893, pp. 459 ff.), but is often found elsewhere.

that Owain Miles went in the body, and the place by which he entered the Other World is defined exactly. The so-called Purgatory of St. Patrick is a cave situated upon an island in Lough Dearg, County Donegal, Ireland. Moreover, Owain is described as a soldier¹: "Contigit autem hijs nostris temporibus, diebus scilicet Regis stephani, ut miles quidam nomine Owein [MS. K also reads *Owein*], de quo præsens est narratio," etc. He has been an exceedingly wicked man, but has repented, and as a penance has resolved to enter the Purgatory. He is conducted thither by the monks of the place, who sing a solemn service over him. They warn him earnestly of the peril of the adventure, but he is described as "vir virilem in pectore gerens animum . . . qui ergo armis munitus ferreis bellis interfuerat hominum quam plurimis, fide, spe et justitia armatus ad pugnam audacter prorumpit demonum."²

It is evident that Owain has been a great warrior, a circumstance not usual in mediæval vision-literature. It is therefore possible that the epithet "Miles" may be a survival of his knightly character.³

Owain's adventures in Purgatory have no similarity to the incidents of Celtic Other-World journeys, but when he has passed this dismal region, he finds that the entrance to *Paradisus Terrestris* lies across a narrow bridge that may show traces of Celtic influence:

The brigge was as heighe as a tour
And as scharpe as a rasour
And naru it was also,
And the water that ther ran under
Brend o lighting and of thonder,
That thought him michel wo.⁴

¹ Quoted from Mall's edition of the *Tractatus*, MS. A (*Romanische Forschungen*, VI, 153). For a somewhat different version of Owain's journey, see Matthew Paris, *Chronica Majora*, ed. Luard, Rolls Series, II, 192-203. ² Ed. Mall, p. 156.

³ *Miles* is a common word for "knight" in records and other documents. Cf. *Launfal Miles*, the title of Thomas Chestre's well-known poem.

⁴ Quoted from the English *Owain Miles*, a rare edition (limited to thirty-two copies) published from the Auchinleck MS., Edinburgh, 1837 (see p. 35). This poem has been edited also by Kölbing, *Englische Studien*, I, 99-112. In the Latin original (ed. Mall, pp. 174-175) the bridge is said to have three difficulties: first, it was very slippery; secondly, it was very narrow; and, thirdly, it was at a

When Owein has entered the Terrestrial Paradise, he finds a landscape which much resembles that commonly described in Celtic stories of the Journey to the Other World:

Other joies he seighe enough
 Heighe tres with mani a bough
 Ther on sat foules of heuen,
 And breke her notes with miri gle
 Burdoun and mene gret plente
 And hautain with heighe steven.
 Him thought wele with that foules song
 He might wele liue ther among
 Til the worldes ende.¹

The high trees, the many birds, and the delicious sweetness of their song, which causes the time to pass quickly, mark this scene as identical with that described in the *Imram Snedgusa* and the *Navigatio Sancti Brandani*.²

In view of these similarities to Celtic story, it might at first appear probable that *Owain Miles* is at bottom some Other-World tale about Sir Iwain which has been entirely remodelled and worked over on the pattern of Christian vision-literature. A moment's consideration, however, shows that the Other-World landscape is not a sufficient basis for argument, since it was a conventional part of the description of the Earthly Paradise in Christian visions before the date of

dizzy height. Another English poem called *Owayne Miles* (Kölbing, pp. 113-121) describes this bridge thus:

Ouur þe watur a brygge þer was,
 ffor soþe kener þen ony glasse;
 hyt was narowe and hit was hyȝe,
 oneþe þat oþur ende he syȝe;
 The myddyll was hyȝe, þe ende was lowe,
 hyt ferde, as hyt hadde ben a bent bowe (vv. 413 ff.).

Compare the bridge which Cuchulinn, according to the *Tochmarc Emere*, had to pass on his way to Scáthach's abode. This was low at both ends, high in the middle, and so constructed that, when a man stepped on the one end, the other end would rise aloft, and he would be thrown down (see p. 75, note 1, above).

¹ Ed. of 1837, p. 41. The corresponding passage in the Latin *Tractatus* (ed. Mall, pp. 181 ff.) is by no means so close a parallel to Celtic story.

² See pp. 85 ff., above.

the *Tractatus*.¹ Moreover, when one considers that the similarities between *Owain Miles* and Celtic story are almost entirely lacking in the Latin *Tractatus*, it seems more likely that the tale was originally a vision and that the similarities to Celtic story have been introduced later. Any connection, therefore, between Owain Miles and Sir Iwain, Arthur's knight, becomes exceedingly doubtful, especially in view of the fact that Owain or Owen is a very common name among the Welsh.

CHAPTER VII.

CHRÉTIEN'S REDACTION OF THE TALE OF IWAIN.

NOT only did Chrétien dress up the story of Iwain in the costume of the age of chivalry, but it is practically certain that he also greatly modified some of the incidents and introduced a number of his own. This is especially true, as has been said, of the latter portion of the *Ivain*.

In the case of the Magic Fountain, which occurs early in the poem, there is no way of being sure that the rain-making qualities of the well may not have been attached to the story, and the fountain localized at Bérenton, before the time of Chrétien.

The Fountain Perilous, as is shown by its connection with the Wonderful Tree and the marvellous singing birds, must be in origin that noble well which is a part of the Other-World landscape in ancient Celtic story. As soon as the supernatural character of this fountain became confused, it might plausibly be described as only a marvellous spring or well existing somewhere on this earth. This change we know actually happened in very early Irish story. In the *Mailduin*, § 20, we find the fountain represented as a religious marvel that gave milk on Sundays and wine on holy days. The fountain of Other-World story once thought of as magical, it would be easy

¹ The Other-World landscape appears in the *Visio Thugdali*, composed before 1160 (see p. 90, above).

for it to be localized and identified with one of the many magic wells that were believed in during the Middle Ages. It is not uncommon for these wells to be represented as rain-making,¹ so that it is likely that such a quality had been connected with the Fountain Perilous before the materials came to the hand of Chrétien. It is clear that in the *Ivain* the Fountain Perilous is meant to be identified with the Fountain of Bérenton in Armorica. Now Wace, writing a few years before Chrétien,² described this Fountain of Bérenton, and verbal resemblances seem to show that Chrétien had Wace's account at hand when he was describing the journey of Calogrenant. It is possible, therefore, that the localization of the Fountain Perilous at Bérenton is due to Chrétien, whose interest in the Armorican fountain may have been aroused by the recent narrative of Wace. This inference, however, does not necessarily follow from the fact that Chrétien seems to have borrowed a few phrases from Wace.³ Even if the material which Chrétien was using already connected with Bérenton the fountain that Iwain visited, the French poet may well

¹ Giraldus Cambrensis (1146-1220), in his *Topographia Hiberniae* (dist. ii, cap. 7), describes a fountain in Munster such that if it be touched, or even seen, by a man, forthwith the entire province is inundated by rain. The rain will not cease till a priest is sent to celebrate mass in a chapel which has been built near the fountain. (Cf. other versions of the Wonders of Ireland: see K. Meyer, *Folk-Lore*, V, 304.) This mention of a chapel reminds one of the chapel near the Fountain Perilous in the *Ivain*, where Lunete was confined. It is usual to find the ruins of a chapel near a magic or holy well. See M. and L. Quiller-Couch, *Ancient and Holy Wells of Cornwall*, London, 1894. In Lady Guest's *Mabinogion*, I, 226, there is a modern tale about a lake, near Snowdon in Wales, called Dilyn. If water be dipped from this lake, and poured on a stone called "the red altar," it is rare that rain does not fall before night. In J. M. MacKinlay, *Folklore of the Scottish Lochs*, p. 222, there is an account of a blue stone near Skye on which water is poured to produce rain.

² *Roman de Rou*, vv. 6400 ff., ed. Andresen, pp. 284 ff. Wace's story is very simple: Hunters used to go to Bérenton and draw water. They poured a little water [by chance] on the stone, and rain followed, "I do not know why."

³ In 1843, Benecke, in his edition of Harmann's *Iwein* (note to v. 263), compared Wace's account of Bérenton with the description of the Fountain Perilous. Maury, *Les Forêts de la Gaule*, 1867, p. 332, said that Chrétien was guided by Wace. More recently, Baist has pointed out the similarity of phrases in the two accounts (see p. 23, above).

have turned to Wace to see what he said. The question must therefore remain undecided, with the probabilities in favor of the view that the Other-World fountain had already become rain-making and had been identified with Bérenton before Chrétien took up the story.¹

The incident of the magic ring that renders the hero invisible is probably only a modification of some episode of the original tale, for no property of the fairies is better known than their ability to be invisible at will. On the other hand, the bleeding of the corpse in the presence of the slayer looks like a plain addition by Chrétien. The belief referred to seems to have been Germanic rather than Celtic,² and the probability is that the educated French poet introduced the incident into his narrative as a chance embellishment.

The ring which was given by Laudine to Iwain, which will release him from prison, keep him from loss of blood, and free him from all

¹ The origin of the rain-making power ascribed to the Fountain of Bérenton is of course a different matter. Numerous instances of fountains of the sort occur both in and out of Celtic territory. Gervase of Tilbury in his *Otia Imperialia*, written about 1212, describes (Leibnitz, I, 990; Liebrecht, pp. 41-42) a certain very clear fountain in a province of the kingdom of Arles, into which if one threw a stone, forthwith there arose a mist from the water and drenched the offender. In the same work (I, 982; Liebrecht, p. 32) there is an account of a lake on a mountain called *Cannagum* in Catalonia. No one could find the bottom of this lake, and it was regarded as the habitation of demons. "In lacum siquis aliquam lapideam aut alias solidam projecerit materiam, statim tanquam offensis daemonibus, tempestas erumpit." Gervase adds a story about a girl who was carried off by the demons and imprisoned for seven years in the lake. (This passage was compared with the fountain in the *Iwain* by Grimm, *Deutsche Mythologie*, 1835, p. 338; 4th ed., p. 496 and note 4.) Rain-making fountains are described by Alexander Neckam (1150-1227) in his *De Naturis Rerum*, bk. ii, chap. 7. Gregory of Tours (*De Gloria Confessorum*, cap. 2) has an account of libations offered at a certain lake in order to bring rain. Cf. the account in Pausanias, how a priest used to dip an oak branch in a certain water in order to procure rain (Frazer's *Pausanias*, VIII, 38). For other references, see San Marte (Alwin Schulz), *Die Arthur-Sage*, p. 153; Bellamy, *La Forêt Bréchéliant*, II, 1-32.

² See Grimm, *Deutsche Rechtsalterthümer*, 3d ed., pp. 930 ff.; Holland, *Crestien de Troies*, p. 157; the same, *Chev. au Lyon*, 3d ed., p. 57; P. Paris, *Romans de la Table Ronde*, I, 293, III, 378; *Hist. Litt.*, XXX, 249; Strack, *Blutabergglaube*, 1892, p. 125. Christensen's *Baareprøven*, Copenhagen, 1900, I have not yet seen. He appears to regard the idea as Celtic (cf. Herrig's *Archiv*, CVII, 109).

evil, must probably be regarded as a part of the Celtic material that came to Chrétien's hands. It will be remembered that this ring was lost by the hero when he overstayed his time and thereby incurred the hatred of Laudine. The messenger of Laudine appeared just at the moment when Iwain remembered that he had broken his promise :

Et la dameisele avant saut,
Si li oste l'anel del doi (vv. 2776-2777).

Light is thrown on this incident by a comparison of the parallel fairy mistress story of *Désiré*. Here the *fée* gives the hero a ring by means of which he is able to control as much gold and silver as he likes. She tells him¹ :

Si vus meffetes de nent,
L'anel perdrez hastivement ;
E si ço vus seit avenu
Ke vus aiez l'anel perdu,
A tuz jorz mès m'avez perdue
Sanz recoverer e sanz véue.

The hero offends the *fée* by revealing his relations with her, and, as in the case of Iwain, he forthwith loses both her and the ring.

The ring, therefore, is a gift of the *fée*, a token and an evidence of her love, and is lost the moment her displeasure is incurred. Ahlström² has explained it as originally the ring that brought the *fée* to the hero whenever he desired. A gift of this nature would naturally be taken away when the love of the *fée* was lost. Whether Ahlström's explanation is well founded or not, it seems clear that the ring might easily be a development or a partial rationalization of some magic gift³ made to the hero by the *fée*. We may compare the magic ring

¹ Ed. Michel, *Lais Inédits*, p. 15.

² *Mélanges-Wahlund*, pp. 297-298.

³ In the *Imram Brain*, for example, a magic branch of silver with white flowers is given by the *fée* to Bran. When she desired it again "it sprang from his hand into hers, nor was there strength in Bran's hand to hold the branch." In the modern tale *The Knight of the Green Vesture*, in *Waifs and Strays*, III, 223 ff., the *fée* gives the hero "a stone of virtues." "There is not a virtue that thou needest for thy body that thou shalt not find as long as thou keep'st it." It will also take

presented to Lancelot by the Lady of the Lake.¹ On the other hand, a ring given by the heroine to protect the hero from disease and danger is a rather common feature in the romances.² The possibility, therefore, that Chrétien himself introduced this incident cannot be altogether denied.

The departure of the hero after he has obtained his mistress was, as we have seen, an essential part of the typical fairy mistress story, but the motive that is assigned, — fear lest the hero should lose his fame in arms, — we may be sure is of Chrétien's own introduction. Foerster's declaration of this, with his comparison of Chrétien's earlier romance, the *Erec*, where this motive is especially dwelt on, is quite to the point.³ It is natural that Chrétien, in attempting to square the Celtic folk-tale to contemporary manners, should minimize the mysterious character of the lady's country and explain the hero's return by the necessity of his maintaining his fame as knight. To Chrétien's own invention, then, may with confidence be attributed the speech put into the mouth of Gawain, in which Iwain is urged to return to Arthur's court and to the tournaments.

The helpful lion certainly seems to be of Chrétien's introduction. Upon his entrance into the plot the parallelism to the *Serglige* and the other stories of its type ceases. Chrétien appears to have compiled the remainder of his romance chiefly from the usual chivalric material of the *chansons de geste*. Some of the incidents of this latter part may, indeed, have belonged to a more primitive tale about Iwain (the episode of the Castle of Ill Adventure and probably also that of the Giant Harpin are in origin Celtic), but in general they bear no distinct marks of such origin. Baist has pointed out that the

him in a moment whithersoever he wishes. Similarly, in a story of Dyeermud (outlined above, p. 112, note 2), the hero is given a ring that, when he looks at it, "will keep him from cold, thirst, and hunger" (Curtin, *Hero-Tales*, p. 488).

¹ Chrétien's *Lancelot*, vv. 2348 ff.; *Merlin*, ed. Paris and Ulrich, II, 57; P. Paris, *Romans de la Table Ronde*, III, 126, IV, 80.

² In *King Horn* (ed. Lumby, vv. 561–576) Rymenhild gives her lover a ring that will protect him if he thinks of her (cf. Child, *Ballads*, I, 201, note). In *Richard Coeur de Leon* (Weber, *Romances*, II, 64) the hero has rings that protect from drowning and from fire.

³ See his *Erec*, *Rom. Bibl.*, XIII, xvii–xviii.

latter part of the *Ivain* is much more in the chivalrous style than the first. We begin at this point to be told of Iwain's hearing mass in the morning, and several knightly combats in the twelfth-century manner are introduced. The judicial battle against the Seneschal to prove Lunete's innocence and the combat with Gawain are of this character.

There is, therefore, no special reason to doubt that Chrétien introduced the thankful lion into the Iwain story, and a study of the narrative seems to make this inference probable. The whole treatment of the lion is carried out *con amore*. The animal puts in an appearance at every adventure, and his exploits are made so prominent that he almost becomes for a time the real hero of the tale. Iwain is always unable to win till the lion comes to his aid. The extent to which this is carried seems to show that, like the psychological discussion of the motives of love in an earlier episode, the lion is a pet idea of Chrétien's and therefore probably of his own introduction.

The question why Chrétien introduced the precise motive of the lion is naturally a difficult one — most probably because Iwain had already acquired the title "Knight of the Lion" and Chrétien chose this method of explaining it.

The title "Knight of the Lion" is one that might easily become attached¹ to any Celtic hero because of the common custom of bearing a lion blazoned on the shield. In the *Book of Leinster*,² the *Dinnshenchas of Lumman Tigi Srafain* (Straffan, Co. Kildare) gives as the etymology of *lumman* ("shield") the word *leoman* ("lion"), because, adds the *Dinnshenchas*, "every shield has a lion on it." The curious incident of Iwain's carrying the wounded lion in the hollow of his shield³ may possibly be a misunderstanding or modification of an earlier form of the tale in which the knight's shield bore

¹ Compare, for the custom of giving a knight a title from some animal, the Knight of the Swan, the Knight of the Eagle (*Hist. Litt.*, XXX, 269), the Knight of the Dragon (*Prose Perceval*, II, 19). Sir Degrevant (*Thornton Romances*, v. 1035) had a lion on his shield.

² R. I. A. facsimile, p. 49.

³ *Ivain*, vv. 4655 ff.

the figure of a lion. Moreover, a very similar explanation of Iwain's title is actually given in the *Prose Lancelot*. The story runs thus¹:

On Easter Eve Lyonel came to King Arthur at Camelot to be knighted. A beautiful damsel presently arrived, leading a fierce lion crowned. The lion feared the damsel so much that it dared not stir. The damsel said that her lady was the loveliest in the world, but that she would marry no man except him who could slay the lion in a fight. She would not tell who her lady was. He must know it who should slay the lion. Lyonel undertook the combat. He seized the lion by the throat in his strong fists and strangled him, "*and Yvain the son of Urien carried the skin of that lion on his shield, and therefore was called li chevaliers au lyon.*" Lyonel returned with the damsel and married the lady.

If Iwain was already known as the "Knight of the Lion,"² it would have been natural for Chrétien to introduce the motive of the

¹ Summarized from an extract printed by Jonckbloet (*Le Roman de la Charrette*, pp. ix-xii, foot-note) from MS. A of the *Prose Lancelot*. MS. B reads a little differently: "Et celui jor otroia-il [Lyoniaus] la peau del' lion [à Yvein] à porter en son escu porce que messires Yveins li avoit aidie son escu à porter la veille de la Pentecoste et li avoit fet fère d'or frès."

² Both Rhys (*Arthurian Legend*, pp. 142 ff.) and Ahlström (*Mélanges-Wahlund*, pp. 299 ff.) have proposed theories to account for the connection of the title "Knight of the Lion" with Iwain, but both have deservedly met with little favor. Rhys's theory is, in brief, that the Welsh word *lleu* ("light") became perhaps confused with another word *lleu* ("lion"), and that in this way the lion came to be regarded as a solar symbol. Since Rhys interprets Iwain as a sun hero, he of course thinks that solar symbols might naturally be connected with him. Ahlström's theory is almost as unconvincing. He points out that in the fairy mistress story *Guigemar*, the hero is from Léonois, and his father is called "Sire de Liun." He thinks it possible that "Sire de Liun" might get changed into "Sire" or "Chevalier au Lion." The hero of a fairy mistress tale like Iwain might therefore be called "Chevalier au Lion." In a popular attempt to justify this title Ahlström sees the origin of the Helpful Lion story. Paris (*Romania*, XXVI, 106) rejects Ahlström's theory as being somewhat forced. It is, however, just possible that the ascription of a helpful lion to Iwain was due in part to the fact that, according to Celtic tradition, he was aided by helpful animals. Owen's ravens that fought his battles will be remembered. (See Loth, *Les Mabinogion*, II, 308, note; Lady Guest, *Mabinogion*, II, 438.) Helpful animals are a very common feature of later Celtic stories of the Journey to the Other World, and often their services come in at precisely the point where the lion enters the *Iwain*,—

thankful lion, especially as it seems to have been one which was much to his taste. Such a motive was doubtless familiar to him from mediæval romantic material.

Foerster has suggested¹ that the source of the incident is the lion of Androclus. More recently, Gaidoz² has discussed the question at length.

Gaidoz points out that the Bestiaries do not contain the lion episode. He infers that the theme was brought from the Orient, "where alone it could naturally have originated," by some crusader. Now there was an historical crusader, Golfier de las Tours, of whom the story is told that he saved a lion from a serpent and was afterwards followed and aided by the lion. Gaidoz makes it appear probable that this story existed early³ and might have reached Chrétien's ears.⁴

namely, where the hero finds that he has lost his mistress and that a long series of adventures must be gone through with in the hope of regaining her. See Curtin, *Hero-Tales of Ireland*, p. 394, where a helpful dog appears; cf. Campbell, *Popular Tales*, ed. 1860, III, 1-18, I, 165 ff. The coöperation of an animal with his master outside of fair play is an incident found in the *Book of Leinster*. See the account of the combat of Conall and Lugaid, *Revue Celtique*, III, 185, where Conall's steed "Dewy Red" bites Lugaid. Cf. Cuchulinn's steed "Grey of Macha," l.c., pp. 176-183; Henderson, *Fled Bricrend*, p. 89.

¹ *Löwenritter*, 1887, p. xxiv.

² *Mélusine*, V, 217-224, 241-244, VI, 74-75.

³ The Golfier story occurs in a chronicle of 1188; see Paul Meyer, *Chanson de la Croisade contre les Albigeois*, II, 378-380. Despite the fact that Philipot (*Annales de Bretagne*, VIII, 56) is inclined to question Gaidoz's argument, it seems clear, therefore, that this tradition about Golfier may have existed early enough to have been accessible to Chrétien, though of course it cannot be regarded as certain that it was his precise source. For the story of the faithful lion attached to certain early saints, see Maury, *Croyances et Légendes du Moyen Age*, Paris, 1896, p. 247. For references to the story of a lion saved from a serpent and showing his gratitude by following his rescuer, see Holland, *Crestien von Troies*, pp. 161-164, and cf. *Guy of Warwick*, ed. Zupitza, E. E. T. S. (Auchinleck MS.), pp. 256-259; *Roman de Ham*, ed. Michel, *Histoire des Ducs de Normandie*, Société de l'Histoire de France, 1840, Index at the word *lyon*, p. 411.

⁴ The carved church door from Iceland (not earlier than 1180-1190), preserved in the Royal Museum at Copenhagen and described by Kornerup (*Mém. de la Soc. des Antiquaires du Nord*, 1869, pp. 245 ff.), is thought by Gaidoz to portray the story of Iwain and the lion; but Bugge (*Home of the Eddic Poems*, p. 70) is probably right in referring it to Wölfedietrich.

The remaining incidents of the romance are most of them evidently of Chrétien's own introduction and are probably not all from the same source. The combat with giant Harpin¹ and the whole episode at the Castle of Ill Adventure seem to be of Celtic origin, and may have been attached to the story of Iwain before the time of Chrétien. There is no way of deciding the question, and it is of slight importance. A probable explanation of Chrétien's extensive insertions and additions toward the end of the romance is that he desired to bring his piece up to the length of his *Erec*, *Cligès*, and *Lancelot*. He may also have been unwilling to close the romance without including a little of the knightly service to ladies which was a convention of his time. Hence, perhaps, Iwain's rescue of Lunete and his combat for the Daughter of the Black Thorn.

CHAPTER VIII.

THE OTHER-WORLD LANDSCAPE IN THE ROMANCES AND LAYS.

IT is convenient to bring together in this chapter various parallels found outside of Celtic literature, even though they may agree with the *Iwain* in many other points beside the landscape. In general, this motive of a marvellous landscape is likely to be the most distinct and the surest method of recognizing a rationalized Other-World story.

The most important of these parallels to the *Iwain* is probably the episode of "The Joy of the Court," in Chrétien's *Erec*,² a brief summary of which follows :

Erec, accompanied by his wife Enide and his friend Guivret le Petit, rides up to a château surrounded on all sides by water. It is the castle of

¹ Compare Arthur's fight with the Giant of Mont St. Michel (Geoffrey, x, 3).

² *Erec*, vv. 5367-6410.

Brandigan. Guivret advises him not to go in, because for seven years the city has had an evil custom: those who enter must essay the adventure of the Joy of the Court, from which no one has ever returned. Erec enters. The people bewail him. He is magnificently entertained by the king, Evrain, in the royal palace. On the morrow he essays the adventure. The people again lament. There is a magic orchard enclosed "par nigromance" with walls of air, so that no one can enter unless his presence is desired. It produces flowers and fruit summer and winter; he who attempts to carry away any of the fruit is unable to find his way out. Erec and the multitude enter¹ this orchard by a narrow passage. They are delighted by the song of the birds, but are horrified at the sight of pikes, on each of which is a human head. A single pike is empty, and on this there hangs a horn. Evrain explains that the empty pike awaits the next adventurer of the Joy. Erec takes leave of his companions and goes forward. Beneath a sycamore tree he finds a lovely girl on a silver bed, but he is speedily attacked by a gigantic warrior in red armor. After a desperate conflict, Erec is victorious. The vanquished warrior explains that his name is Mabonagrain. He loved the lady so much that he promised her anything she desired. She thereupon compelled him to take oath to remain with her till some knight should vanquish him in arms. Thus she has kept him in her magic prison for seven years. It is not his fault that the heads are on the pikes. He has been cruel for love. Erec is told to sound the horn, for that will be the signal of the knight's deliverance, and then the Joy will begin. The adventure terminates by a recognition between Enide and the beautiful lady, who is her cousin and whom she loves very much. To our astonishment, we have no definite explanation as to what the Joy of the Court really is.

No one can read this summary, — still less, the original text of the episode, — without feeling confident that it is not, in its present form, the creation of any one man's fancy. Its confusions and irrationalities could only have resulted from the distortion of an earlier supernatural tale.² Every one wishes to know how the name "La

¹ The entrance of the whole multitude spoils the mystery of the wall of air. An earlier form of the episode must have been different.

² The confusion of this episode has been so clearly brought out by Paris (*Romania*, XX, 148-166) and by Philipot (*Romania*, XXV, 258-294) that I need only refer to some of the more glaring irrationalities. Paris and Philipot agree that it is a distorted fairy mistress story of the type of the *Ivain*.

Joie de la Cort" originated¹; what the magic wall of air and the horn are for; why the persons concerned, and especially Evrain, are so much pleased at having the enchantment ended; and, above all, how Enide can love the beautiful lady so dearly, when it is clear that it is the jealous passion and the ferocity of this same lady that have brought about the whole adventure, including the utter savagery of the heads on pikes. These enigmas are insoluble if the episode be considered by itself; but they may all be explained if it be regarded as a partly rationalized fairy mistress story, parallel to the *Ivain*.²

The scene of the adventure is on an island. This brings it close to the *Condla*, the *Bran*, and the *Serlige*, and suggests a comparison with the Welsh Isle of Avalon. The royal entertainer, Evrain, who feasts the hero splendidly, is a parallel figure to the Hospitable Host in the *Ivain*. Both entertain the hero for the night, and in the morning send him forth to the adventure of the Other World.³ The scene of Erec's adventure is enclosed by a magic wall of air, so that no one can enter, any more than if it were surrounded with iron. There is, however, "une étroite antrée," evidently a trace of the Perilous Passage motive, by which the place may be reached. The interior is an orchard, and the trees have the well-known unfading quality of the Other World:

Et tot esté et tot iver

I avoit flors et fruit meür (vv. 5746-5747).⁴

¹ Paris supposes that this name is due to some mistranslation. Philipot connects it with the Irish *Inis-Subai* (île de Joie), a name applied in *Condla*, § 6, and *Bran*, § 63, to the Other World.

² The apparent ferocity of the lady is merely a survival of her primitive supernatural character. No adventurer surmounts the perils of the passage to the Other World except the one chosen by the *fée*.

³ Probably the Hospitable Host in the *Ivain* originally directed the hero to the scene of the adventure, much as Evrain does.

⁴ Cf. *Ivain*, vv. 384-385:

An toz tans la fuelle li dure,
Qu'il ne le pert por nul iver.

The orchard abounds in the singing birds of the Other World :

Ne soz ciel n'a oisel volant
 Qui pleise a home, qui n'i chant
 Por lui deduire et resjoïr,
 Que l'an n'an i peüst oïr
 Plusors de chascune nature (vv. 5755 ff.).

Erec experiences the same joy at the singing of the birds that Iwain feels at the Fountain Perilous :

Qui mout se delitoit el chant
 Des oisiaus qui leanz chantoient (vv. 5770-5771).

Erec advances alone, just as Calogrenant does¹ in the *Iwain* :

Seus, sanz conpeignie de jant (v. 5879),

and finds a beautiful girl

Dessoz l'onbre d'un sicamor (v. 5882).

Near by, on an empty pike, hangs a horn.

It will be observed that we have here almost all the important features of the Other-World landscape. Though much confused, the scene is evidently in one respect more primitive than that in the *Iwain*, — it lacks the rather absurd method of challenge by pouring water on a rock and thus provoking a terrible storm.²

Light is thrown on this episode by comparing the incident of the Castle of Ill Adventure in the *Iwain*.³ Both are extremely confused rationalizations of visits to the Other World. As Iwain approaches the Castle of Ill Adventure, the people by the roadside bewail his fate. After he has passed an abusive porter, he comes to a row of pikes :

S'avoit devant un prael clos
 De peus aguz, reonz et gros (vv. 5191-5192).

¹ Cf. *Iwain*, vv. 176-177 :

Que je seus come païsanz
 Aloie querant avantures.

² The close parallel between the giant knight Mabonagrain, clad in red armor, and Esclados the Red should be noticed (cf. p. 116).

³ See vv. 5107-5770.

It is not said that there are any heads on the pikes, but the analogy of the Joy of the Court episode and of a multitude of Other-World¹ stories makes this a fair inference. This idea is confirmed by the fact that every man entertained at the castle is obliged in the morning to fight for his life against two goblins, — a state of affairs that must have furnished a good supply of heads. It is in an orchard, as in the *Erec*, that the hero finally finds the inhabitants, — a beautiful maiden and her father and mother. As Evrain plays the part of the Hospitable Host in the *Erec*, so these three entertain Iwain sumptuously :

De lui servir tant s'antremet
Qu'il an a honte et si l'an poise (vv. 5430-5431).

Nevertheless, in the morning the maiden's father involves Iwain in a mortal combat with the goblins, somewhat as Evrain led Erec to the duel in the orchard.

It is distinctly stated in the *Iwain* that the combat is required. Every knight who is entertained must fight. There are many hints that this must have been originally the case in the Joy of the Court. It is a part of the custom of the Castle of Ill Adventure that, if the knight slays the goblins, he is to have the lovely daughter to wife. Iwain has some difficulty in escaping from this requirement. Similarly, we may be sure that in the Joy of the Court (as in the combat at the Fountain Perilous), the conquering hero originally won the hand of the *fée*.²

¹ The heads on pikes have been observed in the *Tale of Curoi* and in *La Mule sans Frein*. Examples of this motive have been collected in Child's *Ballads*, V, 482, and by Schofield, *Harvard Studies and Notes*, IV, 175 ff. To the many references cited in these places I may add one Celtic example of great antiquity, in the *Siaburcharpat Conculaind* from the *Lebor na h-Uidre*. When Cuchulinn visited the Land of Scath (shadow), he saw a rampart of irons, on which were seven heads. See O'Beirne Crowe, *Proceedings of Royal Hist. and Arch. Assoc. of Ireland*, 4th series, I, 387 (1871). Modern Celtic examples, not before collected, are: Curtin, *Hero-Tales*, pp. 66, 214, 381; Hyde, *Beside the Fire*, p. 39; Yeats, *Irish Fairy Tales*, p. 177; Larminie, *West Irish Folk-Tales*, pp. 158, 207; *Celtic Magazine*, XIII, 25; *Zt. f. celt. Phil.*, I, 488; cf. Groome, *Gypsy Folk-Tales*, p. 257.

² The connection indicated (vv. 5257 ff.) between the Castle of Ill Adventure and "l'Isle as Puceles" is worth noting. The Isle of Maidens is an ancient Celtic name for the Other World.

Both in the episode of the Castle of Ill Adventure and in that of the Joy of the Court emphasis is laid on the universal rejoicing when the hero breaks up the marvellous custom.

By comparing these two episodes, then, we see that, in an earlier and more complete form of the type of story which they represent, the hero must have been entertained by a hospitable host, who in the morning led him to the adventure of the Other World. The heads of previous adventurers were on pikes about the place. The hero overthrew a supernatural opponent (a goblin or *netun*) and won the hand of a *fée*. In their original form, the stories were evidently close parallels to the *Serglige* and the *Ivain*.

It is interesting to note that the poetic insight of Hartmann von Aue seems to have enabled him to recognize the true Other-World character both of the scene in the Joy of the Court and of the corresponding scene at the Fountain Perilous. In both cases he compares the place to Paradise. In his *Erec* he makes the beautiful damsel say to her lover :

Ouch wil ich mich vermezzen,
Wir haben hie besezen
Daz ander paradise.¹
Die selben stat ich prise
Für alle boumgarten.
Als ir selbe muget warten,
Hie ist inne michel wünne
Von aller vogel künne
Und von missevarwer bluot:
Hie wær' daz wesen inne guot (vv. 9539 ff.).

In his description of the Fountain Perilous in his *Iwein* he inserts the lines :

Alsus het ich besezen
Daz ander pardise (vv. 686-687).

¹ Kölbing (*Zt. f. vergleich. Litteraturgeschichte*, XI, 442-448) has with great probability explained this phrase as meaning the Earthly Paradise, as distinguished from the *first* (or heavenly) paradise. He has also compared the Swedish *Herr Ivan* (vv. 438-439): "Mik thokte . . . iak vare ij Paradiis."

That this addition of Hartmann's is not due to mere chance appears probable from a comparison of *Le Tournoiement d'Antéchrist*,¹ a poem written about the year 1235 by Huon de Méry. Huon avowedly used Chrétien's *Iwain* as a sort of model. In his poem he tells us that he went to the Fountain in the wood of Berceliande and found everything just as Chrétien described it. He poured water on the stone. The storm followed. After this the birds sang so sweetly that it seemed to him "que c'est terriens paradis" (v. 202). He adds:

Li services [of the birds] fu beax et lons,
Qu'il firent a lour criatour (vv. 208-209).

After this a "Mor" appeared. The cowardly Huon surrendered to this antagonist, whom he was obliged to follow to the city of Despair (Desesperance). "Li Mors" is called "Bras de fer" and is "d'Enfer"; he is, indeed, one of the lieutenants of Satan. The poem from this point becomes a sort of vision. Huon is taken to behold a great tournament between the forces of Satan and the hosts of the Lord.

It is unlikely that Huon de Méry, writing about seventy years later, understood better than Chrétien the landscape at the Fountain Perilous.² He seems, however, to have connected it, not, of course, directly with Celtic stories, but with monkish vision-literature, in which, as has been shown in the case of the *Visio Thugdali* and the *Owain Miles*, the conventional landscape of the Celtic Other World distinctly appears. Many cases of its occurrence in visions of the Earthly Paradise could be collected.³

¹ Ed. Wimmer, in Stengel's *Ausgaben und Abhandlungen*, 1888, LXXVI; cf. ed. Tarbé, Reims, 1851.

² Huon's lines establish with absolute certainty Kölbing's translation of "feire servise" (*Iwain*, vv. 471-472), which has been adopted above (p. 87). I base no argument on the fact that Huon evidently regards the Fountain Perilous as an entrance to the Lower World, though this is possibly a significant matter. A writer of distinctly monastic tendencies like Huon would naturally identify the fairies with spirits of evil.

³ See, for example, the *Metrical Life of St. Brandan*, ed. Wright, pp. 9 ff.; *Tundale*, ed. Wagner, pp. 114-115. Episodes and tales that contain traces of the Other-World landscape and are perhaps in origin rationalized fairy stories are

Distinct traces of the Other-World landscape appear in the lays of *Guingamor*, *Graelent*, *Lanval*, and *Désiré*. These are all fairy mistress stories, and resemble each other so much that a single brief summary will illustrate the group: The hero, wandering solitary in the wilderness, comes to a fountain or a river, where he meets a *fée*. He wins her love and remains with her for a time. At length he leaves her land and returns to dwell again amongst men. The *fée*, however, has put some command upon him, which he breaks and thereby loses her and her love. He falls into the most profound grief, so that after a period of suffering the *fée* at last takes pity on him and brings him back to live in her land forever.¹

The scene where Guingamor finds the *fée* is as follows²:

Enz el chief de la lande entra ;
 Une fontaine illec trova
 Desoz un olivier foillu
 Vert et flori et bien branchu :
 La fontaingne ert et clére et bele,
 D'or et d'argent ert la gravele ;
 Une pucele s'i baingnoit,

 Sor un grant arbre vit ses dras (vv. 421 ff.).

In *Graelent*³ the description is briefer :

Tant qu'en une lande l'an maine,
 Devers le sors d'une fontaine
 Dunt l'iare esteit è clere è bele
 Dedens baigneit une pucelle (p. 502).

common in mediæval literature. See [*Chaucer's*] *Dream* (Bell's *Chaucer*, London, 1878, III, vv. 439-508); *Romania*, X, 474 (where an episode from the *Lanzelet* of Ulrich von Zatzikhoven is quoted); *Hist. Litt.*, XXX, 86 ff. (where the romance of *Rigomer* is analyzed). Professor Kittredge has called my attention to an episode in *Wolfdietrich B*, sts. 350 ff., which contains not only the landscape, but the combat motive in a form that suggests the *Ivain*.

¹ It will be observed that this summary would apply fairly well to the *Ivain*. The absence of the fighting motive, however, marks the lays as belonging to a different type of fairy story.

² Ed. Paris, *Romania*, VIII, 50-59.

³ Ed. Roquefort, *Poésies de Marie*, I, 486-541. (The lay is not really by

In *Lanval*¹ we read :

Tuz suls est en un pre venuz.
 Sur une ewe curant descent;
 Mes sis chevaux tremble forment:
 Il le descengle, si s'en vait

 La u il gist en tel maniere,
 Guarda a val lez la riviere,
 Si vit venir dous dameiseles (vv. 44 ff.).

In *Désiré*² it is said :

A une funteine veneit
 Ke suz un grant arbre surdeit;
 Dous bacins d'or tent en ses meins.

This lay of *Désiré* is the closest parallel to the *Iwain*, because in it there is an attendant damsel who plays a part similar to that of Lunete, acting as intermediary between the hero and the *fée*. In this lay also there is a parallel to the ring given by Laudine to Iwain.

The continuation of Chrétien's *Perceval* by Gaucher embodies a number of incidents that are perhaps in origin Other-World tales parallel to the *Iwain*. In vv. 23,292 ff.³ we are told how Perceval entered an empty castle, by which in a beautiful meadow was a fountain and a cypress tree. After slaying a lion he finds a maiden. He is obliged to overcome a knight called Abrioris. In vv. 23,880 ff. Perceval crosses a bridge and finds a beautiful tree and an empty

Marie.) Cf. *Iwain*, vv. 422 ff. :

De la fontaine poez croire
 Qu'ele boloit com iaeue chaude.
 Li perrons iert d'une esmeraude,
 Perciez aussi com une boz,
 Si ot quatre rubiz desoz
 Plus flanboianz et plus vermauz
 Que n'est au matin li solauz.

¹ Ed. Warnke, *Lais der Marie*, 2d ed., p. 88.

² Ed. Michel, *Lais Inédits*, p. 11. On these lays, see Schofield, *Harvard Studies and Notes*, V, 221 ff., and *Publications of the Mod. Lang. Assoc. of America*, XV, 121 ff.

³ Ed. Potvin; cf. vv. 15,426 ff., 22,397 ff.

tower. A girl who is thin and pale at length appears. A giant has kept her captive for over two years and wishes to marry her. Perceval, whose horse the giant kills, fights him and at last slays him. In vv. 26,496 ff. Perceval crosses a water and comes to a castle apparently empty. He strikes on a "table . . . d'arain ovrée" with a hammer that hangs by a silver chain, and finally maidens appear and entertain him. It is the Castle of Maidens. He is led to the chamber of the lady of the castle. In the morning he finds that the castle has vanished. He meets a knight, Garsalas, whose brother once found by a fountain a *fée*, who took him to this mysterious castle, where he spent ten years with her. He was called "Li Noirs Chevaliers de Valdoune."

There is in the Prose *Tristan*¹ what appears to be a confused fairy mistress tale parallel to the *Ivain*, in which a character called Mennonas² appears playing very much the part taken in the ancient Celtic stories by Manannán. A beautiful woman is discovered in an island at a fountain, and Mennonas and Mabon contend for her possession. Mabon, eager to be rid of Mennonas, sends a *nef de joie* to Cornwall to secure the help of Tristan. Tristan enters the marvellous vessel and is conducted to the "Isle of the Fountain," where he goes through an adventure almost exactly like that of Iwain at the Fountain Perilous. His adversary is called Ferrant (Pharant).

This incident in the *Tristan* has probably been influenced by Chrétien's *Ivain*; but, if it is based entirely on Chrétien's romance, the changes made are certainly of a very extraordinary character. It seems more probable that it is in origin an ancient tale.

Finally, there is in Malory's *Morte Darthur* a partly rationalized fairy mistress story curiously parallel to the *Ivain*³:

A damsel comes into Arthur's hall and prays for succor. "I have a lady of grete worship and renomme, and she is bysegged with a tyraunte so that she may not oute of her castel." "What heteth your lady and where

¹ Löseth, *Tristan*, pp. 247 ff. This passage was pointed out to me by Dr. Schofield.

² Spelled also *Manonas*.

³ The story runs through Malory's seventh book, the source of which has not yet been pointed out. I refer to Sommer's edition, pp. 215-272.

dwelleth she, and who is he and what is his name that hath bysegged her?" "Syre kyng," she saide, "as for my ladyes name that shall not ye knowe for me as at this tyme. . . . As for the tyraunt that bysygeeth her . . . he is called the rede knyght of the reed laundes. . . . He hath seven mennys strengthe." "Fayre damoyssel," sayd the kyng, "there ben knyghtes here wolde doo her power for to rescowe your lady, but by cause ye wylle not telle her name, nor where she dwelleth, therfor none of my knyghtes that here be now shal goo with you by my wylle" (p. 216).

Gareth, who is called Beaumains, and has just come to court, undertakes the adventure. The damsel's name is Lynet. She is sister to her lady, who is Dame Lyonesse (p. 235), and lives in the "Yle of Avylyon (p. 255). The Red Knight, whose name is Ironsyde, is challenged by blowing a horn that hangs by a sycamore near the sea (p. 236). The bodies of many knights, who have failed in the adventure, are to be seen hanging on trees. Gareth conquers the Red Knight, but the fair Lyonesse refuses to receive him till he has been enrolled among the number of worthy knights. Gareth is so distressed by this that he rides "thorou marys and felde and grete dales . . . for he knewe not the wey, but took the gaynest waye in that woodenes that many tymes he was lyke to perysshe" (p. 243). The Damsel Lyonesse, however, takes pity on him, and he is lured back to her castle by her brother Gryngamore. But when Gareth becomes too forward in his love, Lynet conjures up an armed knight to attack him. Gareth slays the knight and hacks him into small pieces, but the damsel Lynet puts him together again as well as ever, and also heals Gareth's wounds (p. 249).

Gareth now decides to depart, in order to engage in a tournament. Dame Lyonesse presents him with a ring that will keep him from losing blood and give him the power of changing color, so that he may not be known (p. 257). Gareth has a number of adventures, in one of which, by overcoming a hostile knight, he frees thirty ladies who are imprisoned in a castle (p. 266). His final adventure is a single combat with Gawain (pp. 267 ff.), in which the heroes at last recognize each other. Immediately after this combat we are told how Gareth finds again the Lady Lyonesse and marries her at the Castle Perilous beside the Isle of "Avylyon."

It is fair to say that, as this story is given in Malory, it is confused by a number of intervening adventures omitted in the above summary. The parallel to the *Iwain* is, however, unmistakable. The name and character of Lynet, and that of the Red Knight, who must be overcome before the mysterious lady can be reached, are enough by themselves to establish the parallel.

There are a number of points in which this late tale preserves more primitive incidents than those in the *Ivain*, as our study of the Ancient Celtic Other-World stories makes clear. The coming of a messenger from a mysterious land whose name she is unwilling to disclose closely parallels the coming of Liban in the *Serglige*. As Arthur's knights show reluctance to accompany Lynet, so Cuchulinn did not desire to go on a woman's invitation. An incident of this kind is only hinted at in the *Ivain*. Lynet in Malory is the sister of the lady, just as Liban was to Fand. The *Ivain* does not mention such a relation between Lunete and Laudine. The mode of challenging the Red Knight by blowing a horn appears to be simpler and more primitive than the Rain-Making Fountain features of the *Ivain*. The power of conjuring up supernatural warriors who must be overcome but are not really killed, ascribed to Lynet (and therefore by inference to her lady), is exactly the power that the primitive *fée* must have had. The ring presented by Dame Lyonesse to Gareth, which gives him the power of changing color so that he cannot be recognized, reminds us of the shape-shifters in Other-World story, from Manannán to Avartach of the Many-Colored Raiment. It is noticeable, too, that there is no thankful lion in Malory's episode.

Is this, then, a confused survival of a form of the tale of Iwain older than that told by Chrétien? When one considers the close parallelism that must have existed between many Celtic Other-World tales of the same type, such an hypothesis seems unlikely. At several points, for example, the tale in Malory agrees with the Joy of the Court Episode, as opposed to the *Ivain*: e.g., in mentioning the relics of former adventurers placed about the scene of combat, and in describing the tree at the place of challenge as a sycamore.¹ It is more likely, therefore, that we have in Malory a late and extremely confused form of an ancient Celtic Other-World tale which some transcriber, noticing its resemblances to the *Ivain*, has worked over to make the resemblance still closer, and that this redactor has named the lady's messenger Lynet.

¹ See *Erec*, v. 5882 :

Dessoz l'ombre d'un sicamor.

In view of the repeated appearance in the later romances¹ of these apparent survivals of Celtic tradition, not all of which can reasonably be ascribed to chance, it seems fair to infer that there were once in existence, and known to the French romancers, numbers of Celtic Other-World tales, parallel to the *Ivain*, which have now been lost.

CHAPTER IX.

CONCLUSION.

THIS investigation has shown that parallels to every important incident of the main portion of Chrétien's *Ivain*, namely, the portion extending from the beginning to the appearance of the lion,—are found² in ancient Celtic stories belonging to one clearly defined type. Most of the themes thus traced appear united in a single Irish Other-World tale, the *Serglige Conculaind*.³ In the case of the more important of these themes, such as The Giant Herdsman, The Other-World Landscape, Marriage with the Widow of the Slain Warrior, and The Broken Promise and Madness, the parallels are of the most significant character. No reasonable doubt can remain that the main portion of the *Ivain* is at bottom a Celtic Other-World tale of the type represented by the *Serglige*. Numerous parallel fairy mistress

¹ E.g., "Li Noirs Chevaliers de Valdoune" (Avalon), p. 142, above; the mysterious character, "Mennonas" or "Manonas" (Manannán?), p. 142; and the numerous cases just pointed out in Malory's story.

² Except the rain-making character of the fountain. It has been shown, however, that the Other-World Fountain was apt to pass into a mere magic fountain (see *Mailduin*, § 20); and the localization of the story at Bérenton, which probably happened before Chrétien, will account for the precise rain-making features. On marvellous fountains, cf. Louis de Nussac, *Les Fontaines en Limousin, Culte, Pratiques, Légendes*, in *Bulletin Archéologique du Comité des Travaux historiques et scientifiques*, 1897, pp. 150-177.

³ The proof, it will be observed, rests on the ancient tales. The chapter on modern Celtic parallels is meant to be corroborative only.

stories, partly rationalized (such as the Joy of the Court episode in the *Erec*), furnish all the auxiliary evidence that can be fairly expected.

This view is supported, not only by a host of parallels, but by the fact that it alone will explain all the inconsequences and inconsistencies of the present form of the *Ivain*, which, if the tale be regarded as Chrétien's invention, one is obliged most unjustifiably to neglect. Any other theory is compelled to regard the entire romance as essentially a jumble of incidents, arranged without any definite thread of connection.

That such an hypothesis about the *Ivain* should ever have been entertained is due to the fact that the original character of the story has been considerably confused, and that towards the end a number of adventures *do* seem to have been introduced, the present arrangement of which is almost entirely accidental.

These disconnected adventures are to be explained in the following way. The analogy of stories like the ancient tale of *Loegaire* and of well-nigh all the later Celtic tales, supported by the general presumption that almost any story will in time acquire a happy ending, leads one to suppose that the ultimate reconciliation of Iwain to Laudine, and probably also a journey of wonderful adventure that led him back to her land, formed a part of the Celtic material that Chrétien used. Chrétien has evidently kept but few of the original adventures that led up to the reconciliation, but has substituted for them others better suited to the taste of his time. In particular, he has introduced the brilliant decorative feature of the Thankful Lion. This motive he has interwoven with some skill into all the adventures that follow, except the combat with Gawain, of which it would manifestly have spoiled the point.

The *Ivain* has then but one source, a Celtic Other-World tale, which had been slightly modified by the addition of rain-making features to the fountain. Chrétien has rationalized this tale so far as it was possible and has dressed it up in the costume of the twelfth century. He has made the warriors knights in armor, and the *fée* a courtly lady. In the latter part of the tale he has inserted several conventional knightly combats to please the taste of the age of chivalry and has interwoven the favorite theme of the thankful lion.

This view does not represent Chrétien as having made up the *Ivain* out of his own fancy, nor as having compiled it from various entirely disconnected sources; but it does credit him with having put upon almost every line of the poem the imprint of his own personality. The intricate discussion of motive by which Laudine's change of mind is sought to be explained, shows the touch of the twelfth century *trouvère*. The touching, if to our notions somewhat naïve, pathos of the grateful lion reveals the handiwork of the well-informed courtly poet.

This view leaves a scope for Chrétien's activity really as great as that occupied by Tennyson in the composition of the *Idylls of the King*. Chrétien made over a fairy tale into a chivalric romance; Tennyson has made over chivalric romances into allegories with mystic meaning. Each has read into older material the ideas of his own day.

Our problem in determining the sources of Chrétien is something like that which one may imagine a scholar about the year 2500 might have in ascertaining the sources of Tennyson's *Idylls*, if we could suppose that all of the older literature about Arthur had perished with the exception of a limited number of French romances, none of which chanced to contain any of the precise stories put into English verse by Tennyson. Absolute demonstration in a problem of this sort is evidently impossible. It is believed, however, that the theory of a Celtic origin for the story of the *Ivain* has been shown to possess extraordinary probability, — a probability far greater than should be enough to determine its general acceptance.

ARTHUR AND GORLAGON.

THE following text, which is here edited for the first time and seems to have eluded all investigators of Arthurian tradition,¹ is contained in Rawlinson MS. B. 149 (parchment) in the Bodleian Library. The manuscript is of the end of the fourteenth century,² and its contents, as catalogued by Macray,³ are as follows:

1. Historia trium Magorum.
2. Narratio de Arthuro Rege Britanniae et Rege Gorlagon lycanthropo.
3. De "Tirio Appolonio" narratio.
4. Historia Meriadoci Regis Cambriae.⁴
5. "Liber Alexandri Philippi Macedonum qui primus regnavit in Grecia et de preliis ejusdem."
6. Tractatus, Aristotelis dictus, de regimine sanitatis, libris decem.

Arthur and Gorlagon occupies pp. 55-64, and has no title. It is written in two hands, the second hand beginning with *seminecem* in the last line of p. 60. I have expanded the numerous contractions of the manuscript, have regulated punctuation, capitals, and the separation of words, have divided the tale into paragraphs, and have numbered the sections. All other changes are indicated in the notes or by brackets in the text.

There is no clue to the authorship of *Arthur and Gorlagon*; but it was not written by the author of the *Vita Meriadoci* and the *De*

¹ It is possible that this was one of the "five Latin romances" known to Sir Frederic Madden (*Syr Gawayne, Introd.*, p. x, note).

² Or the beginning of the fifteenth (Meyer, *Alexandre le Grand*, II, 392).

³ *Catal. Codd. MSS. Bibliothecae Bodleianae*, p. v, fasc. 1, cols. 500-501 (1862).

⁴ Edited by Bruce (from the Cotton MS., Faustina B. vi) in *Publ. of the Mod. Lang. Association of America*, XV, 326 ff. (1900). The copy of *Meriadocus* in the Rawlinson MS. escaped Professor Bruce's notice.

Ortu Waluuanii.¹ The style is enough to make that point certain, and the whole character of the tale differs widely from those long-winded romances. The Rawlinson copy is pretty accurate; but it shows a number of errors and at least one omission. These blunders are enough to prove that it is not the author's autograph, even if this were not immediately clear from the fact that it is the work of two different scribes.

[ARTHUR AND GORLAGON.]

1. **A**PUD Vrbem Legionum² celebre festum diei Pentecostes rex Arturus agebat, ad quod totius sue dicionis magnates et nobiles inuitabat, peractisque de more solemnij, ad instructum³ cum omnibus pertinentibus conuiuium. Quibus copia affluente dapum summa cum leticia prandentibus, Arturus, in nimiam effusus leticiam, reginam sibi considentem iniectis brachijs amplexatus est, amplexusque cunctis intuentibus strictissime osculatus est. Ad hec autem illa obstupefacta simulque rubore suffusa, ipsum respexit, et cur se loco et hora insolita osculatus fuisset quesivit. *Arturus*. Quia nichil mihi in diuicijs gratius, nil in delicijs te constat suauius. *Regina*. Si quam asseris me adeo diligas, mentem et voluntatem meam te scire patenter existimas.

Arturus. Tuam mentem erga me beneuolam habere non dubito, tuamque voluntatem mihi prorsus patere certus existo. *Regina*. Arture, falleris sine dubio; quippe agnoscas te nunquam uel ingenium mentemue femine comperisse. *Arturus*. Omnia celi obtestor numina, si me actenus latuere, dabo operam, nec labori indulgens nunquam cibo fruar donec ea me nosse contingat.

2. Finito itaque conuiuiu, Caium dapiferum suum Arturus aduocat atque "Kai," ait, "tu et Walwainus nepos meus ascendite et ad negotium quo propero me[c]um venite. Ceteri omnes remaneant, meos conuiuas mei loco usquedum rediero letificate." Nec mora, iussi equos ascendunt et ad regem

¹ Edited by Bruce (from the same manuscript that contains the *Meriadocus*) in *Publ. Mod. Lang. Assoc.*, XIII, 365 ff. (1898). Professor Bruce (XIII, 388-389; XV, 338-339) refers the *Meriadocus* and the *De Ortu Waluuanii* to the second quarter of the thirteenth century (the Cotton MS. is of the early fourteenth) and ascribes them to a single author.

² legionē MS.

³ instructū MS.

quendam sapientissimum in confinio regnantem, Gargol¹ dictum, cum Arturo ipsi duo tantummodo properantes, die tertia in quandam vallem lassius deueniunt, — postquam enim a domo discesserant nec cibum nec sompnum ceperant, sed noctes diebus continuantes semper equitauerant. E regione autem aduersa ipsius vallis mons arduus extabat, ameno nemore constitutus, in cuius recessu fortissimum ex politis lapidibus eminebat castellum. Quod ubi Arturus eminus intuitus est, Caium cursim precedere imperat et cuius esset illud opidum renunciare festinet. Citato igitur sonipede, Caius accelerauit, intrauit, et iam vallum exterius subeunti in redeundo Arturo occurrens, regis Gorgol ad quem tendebant municipium fore renunciavit.

3. Fortuito autem rex Gorgol tunc mense pransurus consederat; ante quem Arturus equo vectus ingressus eum lepide cum conuiuantibus salutabat. Cui rex Gorgol "Quis es," ait, "et unde, et que causa te tam precipitem nostro ingessit conspectui?" *Arturus*. "Arturus sum" respondit, "rex² Britannie; artem et ingenium mentemque femineam a te discere desidero, quem in rebus huiusmodi peritum sepiissime expertus sum."

Gorgol. Arture, magnum est quod queris, et perpauci sunt qui illud nouerunt; sed crede nunc consilio meo, descende et comede et hodie quiesce, quia itinere et labore te vexatum video, et cras quod inde sciero indicabo tibi.

Negavit Arturus, se nunquam comessurum constip[u]lans nisi prius quod querebat didicisset. Tandem tum³ rege et conuiuantibus sociisque instantibus annuit et descendit sedeque locata ante regem discubuit. Primo autem diluculo⁴ Arturus, pacti non immemor, regem Gargol adiit atque "O mi rex," ait, "insinua quod te mihi hodie dicturum heri spopondisti." *Gorgol*. Arture, stulticiam ventilas; sapientem te actenus reputabam. Ars ingenium et mens femine nullius vnquam patuere noticie, nec [p. 56] ego te scio quidquam docere. Sed est mihi frater, rex Torleil⁵ dictus, vicinitate regni coniunctus, me senior et sapientior, quem latere profecto non⁶ autumo, si aliquis huius rei peritus habetur, quam adeo scire affectas; hunc pete et ut tibi indicet quod inde nouerit mea ex parte edicto.

4. Regi igitur Gorgol valedicto, Arturus discessit, iter arripuit, et quadriano confecto itinere ad regem Torbeil peruenit, ipsumque casu prandentem inuenit. A quo resalutatus et quis esset inquisitus, se Arturum regem

¹ Gargolū (ū nearly erased) MS. On the variations in the names of the characters, see pp. 201, 203.

² respondit rex in margin, with a caret in text after sum.

³ tū repeated in margin, the ū being blotted in text.

⁴ diluculo MS.

⁵ See p. 201.

⁶ nec MS.

Britannie esse respondit, et ad eum a fratre suo rege Gorgal missum venisse, ut illud sibi panderet cuius ignorantia¹ se illum adire compulerat.

Torleil. Quid est illud? *Arturus.* Artem ingenium et mentem femine indagare mentem adhibui, sed neminem qui ea mihi doceat inuenire potui. Tu igitur ad quem missus venio hijs me instrue, nec a me si tibi nota sint velis conculcare. *Torleil.* Arture, magnum est quod queris, et pauci sunt qui illud agnoscunt. Vnde, quia super hijs tempus nunc non est disserere, descende et comede, et hodie quiesce, et cras quod inde sciero indicabo tibi. Arturus ait: "Satis potero comedere. Per fidem meam, nunquam comedam donec quod quero didiscero." Insistente tum huic rege et etiam omni discumbentium multitudine, vix ut descenderet tandem concessit, et ex aduerso regi mense consedit. Mane autem facto ad regem Torleil venit et ut sibi quod promiserat indicaret rogare incepit. Gorliel autem se penitus nescire confessus est, et ipse Arturum ad tercium fratrem evo maiorem regem Gorlagon dirigit,² procul dubio ei affirmans ipsum eorum que querebat pollere scientia, si aliquem ea scire constabat.

5. Arturus autem nil moratus quo destinatus fuerat acceleravit, et post biduum urbem qua rex Gorlagon morabatur attigit, quem sibi, ut ceteros, casus prandentem obtulit. Salutatisque sibi inuicem, Arturus quis esset causamque aduentus insinuat, et ut se ea pro quibus venerat doceret rogando, cui a rege Gorlagon responsum est: magnum esse negotium quod querebat; descenderet et comederet, et sibi in crastinum inquisita indicaret. Arturus autem se illud facturum omnino negavit; iterumque ut descenderet³ rogatus, iure iurando se nullius precibus ad hoc flectendum affirmavit, donec que querebat didicisset. Videns autem rex Gorlagon eum sibi ut saltem descenderet nullo modo acquiescere, "Arture," ait, "quando sic animo perstisti te nunquam cibum sumpturum nisi ea cognoueris que inquiris, licet sit magnus labor narrandi et parua vtilitas, tamen cuiusdam rei euentum tibi referam, quo artem et ingenium mentemque femine experiri poteris. Verumtamen dico tibi, Arture, descende et comede, quia magnum est quod queris et pauci sunt qui illud⁴ agnoscunt, et cum tibi retulero parum inde doctior habebis." *Arturus.* Narra ut proposuisti, et de meo esu ne quidquam loquaris. *Gorlagon.* [p. 57] Vel socios tuos sine ut descendant et comedant. *Arturus.* Faciant.

Quibus discumbentibus, "Arture," ait rex Gorlagon, "quia huius negotij adeo teneris audis, aurem igitur adhibe, et que tibi dixero mente retine."

¹ ignorantia MS.

³ Interlined.

² Interlined; also inserted in margin.

⁴ id MS.

INCIPIT DE LUPO.

6. “**Q**UIDAM rex mihi bene cognitus extitit, nobilis lepidus opulentus, iusticia et veritate famosissimus. Hic sibi amenum et incomparabilem ortum parauerat, in quo omnia genera arborum, pomorum, fructuum, et specierum aromatum conseri et plantari fecerat; cuius inter cetera virgulta virga pulcra et ad mensuram ipsius regis stature in altum habebatur porrecta, que eadem nocte et hora qua ipse natus fuerat e terra prorumpens crescere ceperat. De hac autem virga fatatum erat, quod quicumque eam ab[s]cidisset, et graciliori parte ipsius¹ virge sibi caput percutiens diceret ‘Sis lupus, et habeas sensum lupi!’ statim lupus fieret et sensum lupi haberet. Ob quod magna cura magnaue diligentia² ipsam observabat, de qua statum sue salutis pendere non dubitabat; ipsumque ortum forti et prouto muro circumdans nullum preter eiusdem orti custodem, et hunc sibi familiarissimum, in eo admitti sinebat, moreque cotidie habebat illam virgam ter uel quater adire, nec ante cibum capere, licet usque ad vesperam ieiunasset, donec eam videret. Vnde sibi soli huius rei patebat noticia.

7. “Huic autem regi erat vxor valde decora, sed quia pulcra vix inuenitur casta, ipsa suo decore nimis est sibi effecta perniciosa. Diligebat enim quendam iuuenem, filium cuiusdam regis pagani, cuius amorem amoris³ sui domini preferens, operam et studium dederat ut suum coniugem alicui discrimini traderet quo iuuenis posset licite cupitis potiri amplexibus. Que regem prefatum pomerij ortum die totiens ingredi aduertens, causamque scire cupiens, illum quidem sepius inde percuntari proposuit, sed nunquam ausa fuit. Tandem vero die quadam dum rex venatu serius redisset, et solito virgultum solus intrasset, ipsa adhuc ieiuna non amplius hoc sibi celari ferens, vt moris est femine omnia noscere velle, ipsum regressum et iam discumbentem fraudulenta subridendo interrogat cur totiens cotidie etiam tunc usque ad vesperam ieiunus ortum adisset. Cui cum rex⁴ responderet, hoc ad se minime pertinere inquirere, nec ipsum sibi illud propalare debere, illa in furorem conuersa et inconueniens suspicata scilicet⁵ illum in orto rem solitam habere cum adultera, ‘Omnia’ exclamat ‘celi obtestor numina me nunquam amodo commesturam, donec mihi causam indicabis,’ confestimque surgens a mensa thalamum callida adiit simulata egritudine. Lecto per triduum nihil omnino cibi sumens decubuit.

¹ ipsius *interlined*.² diligentia *MS*.³ amore *MS*.⁴ After rex the *MS*. has s cancelled.⁵ s, apparently for scilicet, *MS*.

8. "Tercia¹ autem die videns rex mentis ipsius obstinaciam, timens ne huius rei causa mortis discrimen incurreret, dulci eam precari et ortari cepit affamine ut surgeret et comederet, dicens rem esse secretam quam nulli unquam ausus confiteri fuisset. E contra illa, 'Nil te a tua coniuge [p. 58] decet habere secretum. Nouerisque pro certo me malle mori quam uiuere, dum me a te tam parum amari perpendo,' nulloque modo ut se reficeret persuad[er]i poterat. Tunc nimis leuis et inconstans nimiumque muliebri amor deditus et expositus negocium ut erat ei exposuit, fidei sacramento ab ea accepto,² se nulli aliquando hoc prodituram ipsamque virgam ut propriam conseruaturam salutem. Illa autem, quod omnibus votis optauerat ab eo exacto, fidem ei cepit et maiorem amorem spondere, que iam fraudem in mente conceperat qua scelus quod diu deliberauerat ad effectum perduceret. Sequenti namque die, rege venandi gratia siluas adeunte, illa, securim statim arripiens, ortum subiit, virgam solo tenus³ abscondit, absconditam secum abstulit. Atque ubi regem redire comperit, ipsam virgam sub sua manica, que longa et diffusa pendeat, occultans, in eius obuiam usque ad limen hostij processit, eumque quasi osculatura iniectis brachijs amplexa, subito virgam e manica exeruit, semel et iterum ei caput percussit, 'Sis lupus, sis lupus' vociferans; 'habeasque sensum lupi' volens adicere, 'sensus hominis' adiunxit 'habeas.' Nec mora; fit ut ipsa dixerat, canibusque ab ea incitatis eum insequentibus ad siluas concitus fugit, sed humanus sensus ei⁴ ex integro remansit.

9. "Arture, ecce artem et ingenium mentemque mulieris partim didicisti. Descende nunc et comede, et postea quod reliquum est tibi latentius referam. Magnum est enim quod queris et pauci sunt qui illud agnoscunt, et cum inde tibi retulero parum inde doctior habebis." *Arturus*. Res multum bene vadit multumque mihi placet. Prosequere, prosequere quod incepisti. *Gorlagon*. Que secuntur audire places. Sedulus esto, prosequar.

10. Regina igitur, viro legitimo fugato, iuuenem predictum absque mora acceruiuit, regni gubernacula ei tradidit, vxorque eius effecta est. Lupus uero interiores siluas ad quas fugerat per biennium frequentans se lupe agresti coniunxit, duosque ex illa catulos progeniuit. Qui, non immemor⁵ nequicie sibi a sua coniuge illate, ut ille cui humanus inerat animus, anxie cogitabat si aliquo modo se de ea vlisci⁶ valeat. Iuxta illam siluam autem⁷

¹ Tercia MS.

² Letter blotted out between p and t.

³ asc or asci crossed out before abscondit MS.

⁴ ei inserted in margin, with a caret in text.

⁵ sue (cancelled by a line) before nequicie.

⁶ vlissi MS.

⁷ MS. aũ or añ (ante, which makes no sense).

quoddam castellum extabat, apud quod regina vna cum rege maxime perhendere solebat. Humanus itaque ille lupus, sibi oportunitatem preuidens, quodam vespertino tempore lupam cum catulis suis secum assumpsit, in opidum inopinatus irruit, duosque paruulos, quos prefatus iuuenis de sua coniuge genuerat, forte sub turri ludentes sine custode reperiens, inuadit inuasosque crudeliter discerpens interimit. Quod quidem circumstantes sero aduertentes eos cum vlulatu insequuntur. Sed, facinore patrato, fugam accelerantes salui euaserunt. Regina autem infortunio nimis mesta diligenti custodia eorum reditum obseruare suis imperat. Non multum temporis effluerat et lupus, non sibi adhuc satisfactum existimans, opidum cum socijs repetit, duosque nobiles comites, fratres regine, in ipsis valuis pigris ludentes offendens, eos extractis visceribus neci horrende tradidit; ad quorum tumultum officiales concurrunt, valuas claudunt, catulosque cum suo compari intercipientes laqueo suspendunt. Ipse autem astutior ceteris, e manibus se tenentium elapsus, illesus aufugit. Arture, descende et comede; magnum est quod queris, et pauci sunt qui illud agnoscunt, et cum tibi retulero [p. 59] parum inde doctior habebis.¹

II. *Gorlagon.* Lupus igitur amissis catulis maximo merore constriktus,² et pre doloris magnitudine in rabiem conuersus, nocturnis excursibus in domesticas pecudes illius prouincie tanta cede grassatus est ut omnes comprouinciales, canum collocata multitudine, ad eum inuestigandum et capiendum conueniunt, quorum cotidianas vexaciones lupus minime perferre preualens finitimam regionem pecijt; solitasque cedes in ea agere cepit, a qua ab accolis statim fugatus tertiumque regnum adire compulsus iam non tantum in pecudes sed etiam in homines impacabili rabie seuiebat. Illius autem regionis quidam rex ceptra regebat, euo iuuenili, animo mansuetus, sapientia et industria preclarus. Cui dum innumerabiles strages tam hominum quam pecudum a lupo illate relate fuissent, diem statuit qua ipsum cum venatorum canumque copia³ indagare et prosequi aggrederetur. Tanta quippe lupi omnes tenebantur formidine, quod nullus circumquaque auderet quiescere, sed nocte tota contra eius incursus peruigiles manebant. Contigit autem, dum lupus ad quendam vicinum pagum cedibus inhians noctu peruenisset, et sub cuiusdam domus stans protecto⁴ intus fabulantes intencius a[u]scultaret, quod a suo proximo audiit referri quid rex die sequenti querere et inuestigare proposuisset, multa de clementia et mansuetudine regis adicientem. Quod vbi lupus percepit, ad siluarum latibula redijt tremebundus, deliberans apud se quid sibi factu foret vtilius.

¹ *Arthur's refusal should follow, but there is no blank in the MS.*

² *constrinitus MS.*

³ *copiā MS.*

⁴ *pcto MS.*

12. Mane autem facto ecce venatores et regalis familia cum canum immensa numerositate siluas subeunt, tubarum strepitu clamoreque omnia replentes tumultu; quos cum duobus socijs familiaribus rex moderatori gressu sequebatur. At lupus, iuxta viam qua rex transiturus erat delitescens, omnibus pretergressis ubi regem aduenire conspexit, ex ipso vultu regem esse coniiciens, dumo exiliuit, ceruice demissa¹ ad eius vestigia cucurrit, suisque pedibus dextrum ipsius pedem amplexus, suppliciter deosculaturus acsi gemitibus quibus valebat veniam petens. Duo autem procures qui regis latus vallabant, immanem illum lupum videntes (nunquam enim aliquem tante magnitudinis viderant), "Domine, ecce" exclamant "quem querimus! ecce lupus quem querimus! percutite, interime, ne nobis infesta nos invadat bellua." Lupus vero nichil penitus eorum vocibus pauescens, regis stringebat vestigia, ac dulcia imprimebat oscula. Rex autem mire motus, eum diutius contemplatus, nilque in eo feritatis aduertens sed potius similem indulgentiam supplicanti, miratus suis omnibus interdixit ne quis ei² quicquam auderet inferre discriminis, quiddam in illo humani sensus se deprehendisse contestans; dextraque ad lupum demissa ei blandiendo caput et aures leniter palpat et vngulabatur. Deinde in hijs correptum eum ad se conabatur erigere. Lupus vero manum se volentis erigere sentiens mox se saltu sustulit, ac super sonipedis collum ante regem letabundus consedit. Rex autem reuocato exercitu domum iter conuertit.

13. Nec multum processerat et ecce erectis cornibus ceruus ei mire magnitudinis in saltu occurrit. Tunc rex "Experiar," ait, "si quid meo lupo inest probitatis et virium, et an meis assuescat obsecundare³ imperijs." Voceque emissa lupum in ceruum [p. 60] incitabat⁴ manuque a se repellebat. Lupus vero huius prede capiende non inscius, saltu dato⁵ ceruo insequitur, anticipat et invadit, guttureque comprehensum ante regis obtuitus mortuum prosternit. Quo facto, rex eum reuocat, atque "Nempe seruandus es," ait, "non necandus, qui talia scis nobis exhibere obsequia." Lupumque secum ducens domum regressus est. Arture, descende et comede. Magnum est quod queris et pauci sunt qui illud agnoscunt; et cum tibi inde retulero, parum inde doctior habebis. *Arturus*. Etiam si omnes dij de celo clamarent: "Arture descende et comede!" nec descendam nec comedam donec quod restat agnouero.

14. *Gorlagon*. Lupus igitur cum predicto rege remanens, maximo amore ab eo habitus est. Quidquid ei ab eo imperabatur perficiebat. Nunquam cuiquam aliquid uel feritatis ostendit uel lesionis intulit. Cotidie ad

¹ dimissa MS.

² Above the line, with a caret.

³ A letter blotted out here.

⁴ ta above the line.

⁵ After dato MS. has s cancelled.

prandium prioribus erectis brachijs ante regem ad mensam stabat, de pane eius comedens, et de eodem calice bibens. Quocumque rex pergebat semper se ei comitem exhibebat, ut eciam noctibus nusquam nisi ante lectum vellet quiescere. Accidit autem regem extra suum regnum ad colloquium alterius regis longius et ideo expedicius debere proficisci, quod minus denum spacio dierum minime posse reuerti. Reginam aduocans, "Qui[a],¹" ait, "me hoc itinere expedicius oportet pergere, hunc tue tutele lupum commendo, et ut eum mei loco, si remanere voluerit, conserues et necessaria ministres impero. Ignoro enim an me abeunte² remanere voluerit." Illa autem iam lupum habens odio propter magnam sagacitatem, quam in eo deprehenderat,³ quia multociens mulier odit quem maritus diligit,⁴ "Domine," ait, "timeo ne te absente, si solito loco iaceat, me nocte inuadat, cruentamque me relinquat." Cui rex: "De hoc tibi metus⁵ ne sit aliquis, in quo⁶ tanto tempore nil simile deprehendi. Verumtamen, si inde dubitas, catenam faciam fieri, et eum ad mei strati suppedanium⁷ ligari." Aureamque catenam rex parari imperat, qua lupo ad scansile ligato, ad destinatum negocium prope- rat. Arture, descende et comede, magnum est quod queris et pauci sunt qui illud agnoscunt, et cum inde tibi retulero parum inde doctior habebis. *Arturus.* Si vellem comedere, vtique non me sepius ut comederem inuitares.

15. *Gorlagon.* Rege igitur proficiscente⁸ lupo cum regina remansit. Sed non debita eum diligentia curauit. Semper enim⁹ interim nexus iacebat cathena, cum rex tantummodo ut noctibus catenaretur mandaret. Regina vero regis dapiferum illicito amore diligebat, quem quotiens rex deerat frequentabat. Octaua igitur die profectionis regis in thalamo meridie conteniunt, atque ipsam lecticam pariter ascendunt, parui per[p]endentes lupi presentiam. Quos ille intuens nefandis irruentes amplexibus, oculis rubentibus, iubis extantibus, furore exarsit, et quasi iam in eos impetum facturus se agere cepit, sed retinente cathena retentus est. Vnde vbi eos a cepta nequicia nolle aduertit desistere, tunc dentibus infremuit, terram pedibus effodit, totoque corpore cum diro vlulatu seuiens, tanta vi catenam distendit, ut duas in partes dissiliret confracta. Solutus autem in dapiferum furibundus irruit a lecto deiectum, eaque seuicia discerpsit, qua eum¹⁰ seminecem dereliquit. [p. 61] Regine vero nil mali intulit omnino, illam tantum-

¹ MS. qui ait (*haplography*).

⁷ MS. repeats eū here.

² A letter or two blotted out.

⁸ proficiscente MS.

³ deprehenderet MS.

⁹ Two or three letters blotted out after enim.

⁴ This observation is from *Catonis Disticha*, i, 8: "Semper enim (*var.*: Saepe etenim) mulier quem coniux diligit odit."

⁵ After metus one letter (s?) cancelled in MS.

⁶ quē MS.

¹⁰ Second hand begins and continues to the end.

modo toxi[c]o lumine intuitus. Ad lugubres autem gemitus dapiferi, auulso cardine, irruunt famuli; quibus causam tanti tumultus inquiringentibus illa versipellis, fraude composita, lupum respondit suum deuorasse filium, atque dum paruulum inter[itu conar]etur eripere,¹ ita laniasse dapiferum; idem sibi eum fecisse asserens nisi sibi cicius suppeciaturi aduenissent. Dapifer igitur semiuiuus ad hospicium deducitur. At regina nimis metuens ne rei quoquomodo pateret veritas, seque de lupo vindicare deliberans, infantem quem ab ipso deuoratum dixerat in quadam ypogea ab omni accessu remota cum nutrice inclusit, vniuersis eum a lupo deuoratum autumantibus. Arture, descende et comede; magnum est quod queris, et pauci sunt qui illud agnoscunt; cum tibi retulero, parum inde doctior habebis. *Arturus.* Jube, queso, mensam auferri, quia fercula tibi apposita tociens nostra interrumpunt colloquia.

16. *Gorlogan.* Hijs ita gestis, regine celerius quam putabatur regis reditus nunciatur. Cui illa fraudulenta et subdolositate plena, scissis comis, laniatis genis, sanguine veste conspersa, occurrens: "Heu, heu, heu, me miseram, domine, me miseram!" exclamat. "Quanta in tui absencia incurri discrimina!" Ad hec rex obstupefactus et quid haberet sciscitans: "Tua, tua," respondit, "nefanda illa bellua, mihi hactenus nimis vere suspecta, tuum meo in gremio natum consumpsit; tuum dapiferum subsidium ferrenitentem usque ad necem pene discerpserit, michimet idem facturum nisi famuli ad nos irrupissent. Ecce rei testis sanguis paruuli nostris conspersus vestibus." Vix ipsa hec verba compleuerat, et ecce lupus, audito regis aduentu, cursim e thalamo prosiliit, in regis amplexus vt bene meritis ruit, gaudens et tripudians, et nuncquam maiori leticia exultans. Ad hec rex, per diuersa mente distractus, quid ageret dubitabat, hinc suam coniugem sibi reputans falsa nolle proferre, illinc tanto in se² commisso facinore lupum sibi cum tanto tripudio procul dubio non audere occurrere. Fera namque veretur illum quem se scit offendisse. Dum igitur super hijs mens nimium sibi fluctuaret, et se reficere renueret, lupus iugiter assistens ei, pedem suo pede leuiter tetigit, horam ipsius clamidis ore accepit, et vt se sequeretur nutu capitis innuit. Rex autem, illius nutus solitos non ignorans, surrexit atque per diuersos thalamos eum ad ypogeam qua puer latebat secutus est. Cuius hostium obseratum offendens, lupus terque quaterque pede percussit, vt sibi aperiretur insinuando. Sed dum in querendo clauem mora fieret, — regina eam penes se absconderat, — lupus moras non ferens se parum retro retraxit, pedumque suorum quatuor vngularum protensis aculeis in hostium preceps irruit, impulsumque media area fractum et quassatum deiecit;

¹ interetur eripere *MS.*

² se in *MS.*

precurrensque infantem e cunabulo inter hispida brachia accepit, atque ori regis osculandum suauiter applicuit.

17. [p. 62] Miratur rex atque "Aliquid aliud," ait, "superest, quod mee non patet noticie." Deinde egreditur, precedentemque lupum subsequens, ad dapiferum languentem ab eo educitur. Quem lupus vt vidit, vix a rege retentus est quin in eum irruisset. Rex autem, ante eius lectum considens, infirmitatis causam euentumque vulnere ab eo sciscitabat. Sed nihil aliud fatebatur nisi quod in eripiendo puerum a lupo ea¹ incurrisset, testem reginam adhibens. Econtra rex "Mentiris," ait, "plane: meus filius viuit; nequaquam mortuus est. Et quia te et reginam erga me inuento [filio]² falsitate conuictos michimet commenta finxisse deprehendo, aliud quod ne [falsum]² sit timeo; causam fuisse agnosco, qua lupus, pudorem domini non ferens, in te tam crudeliter insolito seuerit; cicius igitur rei veritatem mihi confitere. Aliter summi maiestatem obtestor numinis quod te flammis vrentibus tradam." Lupusque in eum impetum faciens iugiter insistebat, iterumque dilacerasset, nisi a circumstantibus retentus fuisset. Quid multa? Insistente rege tum minis tum blandicijs dapifer commissum confitetur facinus, vt sibi indulgeret suppliciter exorans. Rex autem nimio succensus furore, dapifero carcerali mancipato custodie, illico tocius sui regni principes coadunauit, a quibus super tanto scelere iudicium exigit. Sentencia datur; dapifer viuus excoriatur, et laqueo suspenditur. Regina menbratim ab equis distracta ignium globis traditur. Arture, ⁴descende et comede. Magnum est quod queris, et pauci sunt qui illud agnoscunt; cum tibi retulero, parum inde doctior habebis.³ *Arturus*. Nisi te pigeret comedere, me parum curares diucius ieiunare.

18. *Gorlogan*. Postquam hec gesta sunt, rex super incredibili sapientia et industria lupi cepit cedula mente vehementique studio cogitare et cum viris sapientibus inde propensius tractare, asserens illum humanum sensum habere cui tantam intelligenciam constiterit inesse, "quia nullus vnquam in irrationabili pecude tantam sapienciam re[p]perit, tantamque fidem alicui exhibuisse, quantam mihi iste exhibuit. Quecunque namque ei loquimur bene intelligit; sibi imperata perficit; vbicunque fuero, mihi semper assistit; me gaudet gaudente, dolet dolente. Et qui meam iniuriam tanta seueritate ultus est hominem esse et magne sagacitatis et potencie procul dubio fuisse sciatis, atque aliqua incantacione uel transmutacione lupinam formam

¹ ea written twice, but first ea crossed out.

² Supplied by conjecture. Blot in MS.

³ Abbreviated as follows in MS.: d. & g. m. est quod q. & p. s. qui illud a. cum tibi re. p. i. d. h.

induisse." Ad hec verba lupus ei assistens ingenti se gaudio agebat, manusque et pedes regis deosculans et genua eius constringens, vultu capitis et gestu totius corporis eum vera dixisse ostendebat.

19. Tunc rex ait: "Ecce quanta hilaritate mihi loquenti annuit, meque vera locutum certis notat indicijs. Jamque ulterius quid hoc fuerit dubitari non poterit atque o vtinam etiam cum mearum rerum dampno cum mee etiam vite periculo mihi indagandi daretur facultas si qua arte aut ingenio eum ad pristinum statum possem reducere." Consilio igitur super hoc diucius inter eos habito, hec tandem regi sententia placuit, ut lupus dimitteretur precedere, et quo vellet terre marive abire. Affirmabat uero eum propriam tellurem petiturum; promittebat quod cum suis in eius subsidium eum quocunque pergeret subsecuturum. "Forsitan quippe," ait, "si eius patriam possemus attingere, et rem gestam ag[p. 63]nosceremus, et ei aliquod remedium inueniremus." Lupus uero quo vellet, omnibus eum sequentibus, ire sinitur. Qui statim mare pecijt, et quasi vellet transire se vndis marinis impetuose ingressit. Ipsius uero patria illi regioni e latere mari interfluente coniungebatur, licet alias terrestri sed longiori itinere inde adiri posset. Rex autem eum videns velle transire, classem continuo eo deduci miliciamque imperat conuenire. ¹Arture, descende et comede. Magnum est quod queris, et pauci sunt qui illud agnoscunt; cum tibi retulero, parum inde doctior habebertis.¹ *Arturus*. Lupus transfretare cupiens astat in litore. Timeo ne si solus relinquatur desiderio transeundi vndis mergatur.

20. *Gorlogan*. Rex igitur, imperato nauigio exercituque armis instructo, cum ingenti militum copia equor aggreditur; dieque tertia ad patriam lupi prospere applicatur, quibus in continenti nactis, lupus prior omnibus e rate prosiliijt, atque solito nutu et gestu illam sui esse patriam euidenter intimauit. Tunc rex, suorum quibusdam secum assumptis, ad quandam vicinam ciuitatem clam properat, exercitui imperans se nauibus continere donec negotio inuestigato ad eos redisset. Sed vix vrhem intrauerat, et rei euentus ordine quo euenerit ei innotuit. Omnes uero nobiles et ignobiles prouincie illius regis qui lupo successerat importabilem gemeabant tyrannidem, suumque dominum fraude et dolo sue coniugis transmutatum vtpote benignum et mansuetum vna voce conquerebantur. Re itaque quam querebat cognita, et quo rex illius prouincie eo tempore degeret comperto, rex ad naues ocus redijt, acies educit, et cum exercitu super eum improuisum et inopinatum irruens, illius omnibus propugnatoribus cesis et fugatis, eum cum regina cepit sueque dicioni mancipauit. Arture, descende et comede. Magnum est quod

¹ *Abbreviated*: Ar. de. & g. m. est. quod queris & p. s. q. i. a. cum tibi retulero. p. i. d. h.

queris, et pauci sunt qui illud agnoscunt, et cum tibi retulero, parum inde doctior habebis.¹ *Arturus.* Tibi mos extat cithariste qui, melodie pene peracto concentu, dum nemini succinit, reciprocas clausulas interserendo sepius repetit.

21. *Gorlogan.* Igitur rex, fretus victoria, regni nobiliumque coadunato consilio, in conspectu omnium reginam constituit atque "O," ait, "perfidissima et nequissima feminarum! que te demencia tuo domino tantam fraudem machinari compulit? Sed nolo diucius tecum verba disserere, que digna nullius censeris colloquio, rem quam a te inquisiero mihi cicuis notifica, aut certe fame et siti inexquisitisque te faciam interire tormentis, nisi illam" ait "virgam qua eum transformasti quo lateat manifestes. Forte uero quam perdidit humanam formam recuperari poterit." Ad hec illa quo virga esset se iurat nescire, quam in frustra² confragmentam se igne constabat cremasse. Verumtamen fateri nolentem rex illam tradidit tortoribus, cotidie torquendam, cotidie supplicijs exanimandam, nichil cibi uel potus ei prorsus indulgens. Tandem penarum coacta angustijs virgam protulit regi que porrexit.

22. Qua accepta, rex letus effectus lupum in medio adduxit; maiori parte virge ei caput percussit atque "Sis homo hominisque sensum habeas" intulit. Nec mora: ipsius verba rei effectus sequitur. Fit homo ut ante fuerat, licet longe pulcrior atque decencior, tanta iam venustate peditus vt etiam ab initio vir magne nobilitatis deprehenderetur. Videns autem rex hominem ex lupo reformatum [p. 64] tanti decoris ante se³ consistere, cum ingenti gaudio tum ab eo perpeccas miseratus iniurias, eius in amplexus irrui, osculatur et plangit, lacrimas effundit. A quibus inter mutuos amplexus tot prolata suspiria tanteque lacrimae effuse sunt, vt omnem circumstantem multitudinem ad fletus compungerent. Hic gratias agebat, de sibi innumeris ab eo impertitis beneficijs. Ille indignius quam decebat se eum tractasse conquerebatur. Quid ultra? incredibilis vniuersis exoritur leticia. Rexque, antiquo iure principibus sibi submissis, suo potitur imperio. Deinde adulter cum adultera in eius presencia ducitur, atque quid de illis fieri censeret⁴ consulitur. Ille autem paganum regem capitali sententia dampnavit; reginam a suo coniugio tantum amouit, sed vitam quam non meruerat pro sua ingenua clemencia ei indulgit. Alius vero rex magnis ut decebat ditatus et honoratus muneribus ad propria reuersus est. Ecce, Arture, mentem et ingenium femine didicisti. Caue tibi si inde sapiencior habebis. Descende nunc et comede, quia ego narrando et tu audiendo cibum bene meruimus.

¹ *Abbreviated:* Ar. d. & g. m. est q. q. & p. s. q. i. a. & cum. tibi re. par. inde d. h.

² frustra MS.

³ se above the line with a caret.

⁴ senseret MS.

23. *Arturus*. Nequaquam descendam donec quod interrogauero mihi indicaueris. *Gorlogan*.¹ Quid? *Arturus*. Quenam est illa femina contra te opposita facie tristis, humanumque caput sanguine conspersum ante se in disco continens, que etiam tociens fleuit quociens risisti, tociens cruentum caput osculata est quociens tu tue coniugi, dum predicta referres, oscula impressisti? *Gorlogan*. "Si hoc," inquit, "Arture, mihi soli pateret, tibi nequaquam referrem; sed quia omnibus mihi considentibus hoc notum est, non pudor erit tibi etiam illud intimare. Illa femina que mei ex aduerso residet, ipsa extitit que tantam, ut tibi superius retuli, nequiciam in suum dominum, in me scilicet, operata est. Me autem illum lupum noueris, quem ab humana in lupinam et a lupina in humanam formam transmutatum audisti. Lupus autem factus, regnum quod primum adij, fratris mei medij, regis Gorleil, constat fuisse. Ille vero rex qui tantam diligenciam mee cure adhibuit, fratrem meum iuniorem, regem Gorgol, ad quem primum venisti, extitisse ne dubites. Cruentum quoque caput, quod illa femina mihi ex aduerso residens in disco ante se amplexatur, illius iuuenis extitit cuius amore tantam in me exercuit nequiciam. In propriam namque reuersus ymaginem, ea[m] vita² donans, hac sola dumtaxat pena puniui, ut semper illius caput pro oculis habeat, et me aliam sibi subductam osculante coniugem, ipsa eadem³ oscula imprimat cuius gracia illud nefas commiserat. Quod etiam condici feci balsamo ut imputribile perseueret. Sciui quippe quod nulla sibi grauior foret punicio quam in conspectu omnium tanti sceleris iugis representacio.

24. "Arture, nunc descende, si descendere volueris, quia ibi pro me amodo imprecatus remanebis." Descendit igitur Arturus et comedit; dieque sequenti, super hijs que audiuerat valde miratus, domum itinere dierum nouem redijt.

EXPLICIT.

I. THE FOUR VERSIONS OF THE WEREWOLF'S TALE.

The reader will at once perceive that the text here printed is closely related to two well-known Old French poems, both "Breton lays" (whatever that may mean),—the *Lai de Bisclavret* of Marie de France and the anonymous *Lai de Melion*. Before we proceed to compare these three documents, however, we must familiarize ourselves with a fourth,—a popular tale widely current in Ireland at the present day. This Irish *märchen* resembles *Arthur and*

¹ Gorlogam MS.

² vitā MS.

³ eadam MS.

Gorlagon in a remarkable manner, and must therefore be summarized at the outset, even at the risk of repetition by-and-by. Several versions have been printed, all of which we shall have to examine sooner or later. The summary that follows is based upon the version published by Mr. Larminie in his *West Irish Folk-Tales*.

MORRAHA.

Morraha sees a currach, short and green, coming toward the shore, and in it is a young champion, playing hurly with a hurl of gold and a ball of silver. Landing, he challenges Morraha to a game at cards [clearly it should be *hurly*]. Morraha wins, and the champion pays what he demands. The same thing happens on the next two mornings, and Morraha wins a splendid castle, and the fairest of women for his wife. On the fourth morning he goes out to play again, contrary to the advice of his wife, and is beaten. Says the champion: "I lay on you the bonds of the art of the druid, not to sleep two nights in one house, nor finish a second meal at the one table, till you bring me the sword of light and news of the death of Anshgayliacht." [O'Foharta's version has "the sword of light and *the knowledge of the cause of the one story about women*." This is certainly right (see p. 218).]

Acting according to the instructions of his [fairy] wife, Morraha secures a talking mare, which carries him to the "land of the King of France" [really, the Other World], who is his wife's father. He is well treated, and furnished with another horse. The queen bids him ride to the house of Rough Niall of the Speckled Rock, turn his horse's head away from the door, and ask for the sword and the news of Anshgayliacht's death. This he does on three successive days, barely escaping with his life. Then Niall goes to sleep, thinking all danger is past, and Morraha slips in and secures the sword.

Morraha then threatens Niall with death if he will not tell him the news of the death of Anshgayliacht. At first Niall prefers to lose his head, but at last his wife, who is present, persuades him to tell the story. "I thought no one would ever get it," says he, "but now it will be heard by all."

"I knew the language of birds," says Niall, "and one day I heard the birds arguing, and one of them declared that three rods of magic and mastery grew on his tree. Then I laughed, and my wife thought I was laughing at her, and to quiet her, I was obliged to tell her what the birds were saying. She secured one of the rods and changed me to a raven and did

her best to have me killed. Later she changed me to a horse, and gave out that I was dead. After that she changed me to a fox and finally to a wolf.

"I went to an island, where I passed a year, and from time to time I killed sheep. A pursuit was made after me. And when the dogs came near me there was no place for me to escape to from them; but I recognized the sign of the king among the men, and I made for him, and the king cried out to stop the hounds. I took a leap upon the front of the king's saddle. The king took me home with him and treated me well, saying that I had been well trained.

"This king had lost eleven children, all of whom were stolen the same night they were born. When the twelfth child was born, I was appointed as its guardian. A coupling was put between me and the cradle. One night a hand came down the chimney and seized the child. I bit off the hand at the wrist and laid it in the cradle with the child. Then I went to sleep, and when I awoke, I had neither child nor hand. I was covered with blood, and everybody said that I had eaten the child. But the king refused to believe it. 'Loose him,' said he, 'and he will get the pursuit himself.'

"When I was loosed, I followed the scent of the blood till I came to the door of the room where the child was. I went to the king, and took hold of him, and went back again and began to tear at the door. The king followed me and asked for the key. A servant said it was in the room of the stranger woman [the Werewolf's false wife¹]. But she could not be found. The king then broke down the door. I went in and went to the trunk.² The king broke the lock of the trunk and opened it. There were the child and the hand, side by side, and the child was asleep.

"After that, I was not tied any more. I cared for the child constantly. When he was three years old, a silver chain was put between me and the child. One day the child loosed the chain and ran away and could not be found. Then I was out of favor and neglected. When summer came, I swam back to my own country. I hid in my own garden. In the morning, I saw my wife out walking, and the child with her. The child cried

¹ Her presence at the king's court is not explained, but may be cleared up by comparison with other versions (see p. 178).

² No trunk has been mentioned. Such imperfections as this are due to the laudable fidelity with which Mr. Larminie has reproduced the words of his reciters.

out: 'I see my shaggy papa!' I hid, and the woman took the child into the house. Early the next morning, I saw the child in the house and entered through the window. He began to kiss me. I saw the rod of magic in front of the chimney, jumped at it, and knocked it down. The child took it up, but did not hit me with it as I had hoped he would. So I scratched him and made him angry. Then he struck me a light blow with the rod, and I came back to my own shape again.

"When my wife came in, she offered to drown herself. But I said to her, 'If you yourself will keep the secret, no living man will ever get the story from me till I lose my head.' Many a man has comè asking for the story, but I never let one return. Now everybody will know it.¹

"Then I took the child back to his father in a ship. On the voyage I came to an island, in which there was but one habitation, a court dark and gloomy. I entered, and found no one within but a frightful hag. I heard somebody groaning. She said it was her son, whose hand had been bitten off by a dog,—in another country, twelve years before. I offered to cure him, and was left alone with him in an inner room. He had but one eye, and that was in the middle of his forehead. I had heated an iron bar, pretending that it was to burn away the corrupt flesh, but I plunged it into his eye as far as I could. He tried to catch me, but I got out of the chamber and shut the door. I told the hag that he would be quiet presently and would then sleep a good while. She gave me the reward that she had promised,—eight young lads and three young women, who, she informed me, were the sons and daughters of the king and had all been stolen by her son.

"I took ship again, sailed to the king's country, and restored the twelve children to him and his queen. The king gave me the child whose keeper I had been. I spent a time, till my visit was over, and I told the king all the troubles I had been through; only I said nothing about my wife.

"And now you have the story. Go home, and when the Slender Red Champion asks you for the news of the death of Anshgayliacht and for the sword of light, tell him how his brother was killed, and say you have the sword. When he asks for the sword, say to him that you promised to bring it *to* him but did not promise to bring it *for* him. Then throw the sword into the air, and it will come back to me."

Morraha went home, and did as he was bidden, and the sword returned to Blue [*sic*] Niall.

¹ The parallelism between *Arthur and Gorlagon* and the Irish *märchen* ceases at this point.

Of this complicated Irish *märchen* eight versions have been printed: (1) **K**, Kennedy, *Legendary Fictions of the Irish Celts*, 1866, pp. 255 ff.; (2) **J**, P. O'Brien, *The Gaelic Journal*, IV (1889-90), 7 ff., 26 ff., 35 ff.; (3) **L** (summarized above), Larminie, *West Irish Folk-Tales and Romances*, 1893, pp. 10 ff.¹; (4) **C₁**, Curtin, *Hero-Tales of Ireland*, 1894, pp. 323 ff.²; (5) **C₂**, the same, pp. 356 ff.; (6) **O'F**, O'Foharta, *Zeitschrift für Celtische Philologie*, I (1897), pp. 477 ff.; (7) **H**, Hyde, *Annales de Bretagne*, XV (1899-1900), 268 ff. (with translation by Dottin), also in his *An Sgéaluidhe Gaedhealach*, London, [1901,] pp. 400 ff.; (8) **S**, J. G. Campbell, *Scottish Celtic Review*, no. 1, March, 1881, pp. 61 ff.³ (cf. no. 2, November, 1881, pp. 140-141).

K, **L**, **C₁**, and **C₂** are published in an English translation only; of **O'F** and **H**, we have the Irish, and of **S** the Scottish Gaelic text, with a translation in each case; **J** is in Irish, untranslated. **K** is translated from a manuscript; all the other versions are from oral tradition. Mr. Larminie had two complete versions, one from County Mayo and the other from County Galway; his translation (our **L**) uses the Mayo version for the frame-story and the Galway version for the wolf story proper. In his notes, however, he records all the important differences, so that there is no confusion. It appears that the Mayo and the Galway version were substantially identical. Whenever there is occasion to mention their differences, we may designate the complete Mayo version as **L₁** and the complete Galway version as **L₂**. Larminie also knows of the tale as existing in Donegal,⁴ from which county Hyde's version comes. **J** is from West Munster. Curtin's first version (**C₁**) is from County Kerry; his second (**C₂**) from Galway (Connemara). O'Foharta's version (**O'F**) is from "Foreglas." Campbell's Highland version (**S**) was written down in Gaelic from the dictation of a native of Tiree; the editor mentions other versions⁵ and says that "the tale was at one time well known." Thus it appears that our *märchen*

¹ Reprinted by Jacobs, *More Celtic Fairy Tales*, 1895, pp. 80 ff.

² Being the second part of Curtin's *Art and Balar Beimenach* (pp. 312 ff.); the first part is really a distinct tale, and we need give it no further attention.

³ The four numbers of *The Scottish Celtic Review* (March, 1881, to July, 1885) were collected into a volume and issued with a title page dated Glasgow, 1885.

⁴ *Introduction*, p. viii.

⁵ At p. 141 Campbell gives an important variant taken from one of these.

is still told in at least five counties of Ireland, and that it had passed over to Scotland and was current in the West Highlands a generation ago.

The eight versions of the Irish tale (**KJLC₁C₂O'FHS**) differ considerably, but they are all merely variants of a single Irish version (which we may call **I**). This needs no demonstration; a cursory reading of the eight texts establishes it beyond a shadow of doubt.

Thus we have four extant forms of *The Werewolf's Tale*: (1) Marie's *Lai de Bisclavret* (**B**); (2) the *Lai de Melion* (**M**); (3) the Latin *Arthur and Gorlagon* (**G**); and (4) the Irish *märchen* (**I**) extant in eight published variants. A comparative study of these four versions ought to throw some light on certain vexed questions of mediæval literature. [See Additional Note, p. 274, for a ninth Irish version.]

II. RELATIONS OF THE FOUR REDACTIONS.

As we compare the four versions of *The Werewolf's Tale* one fact becomes clear immediately: all four (**B**, **M**, **G**, and **I**) are derived in some manner from a single original.

Further, certain relations between the four versions (**B**, **M**, **G**, and **I**) are easily discernible. *Gorlagon* (**G**) and the Irish (**I**) make a group by themselves and must be referred to a common source. In both, the werewolf tells his own story, sorely against his will, to a quester who is under bonds to learn it, and in both the revelation takes place in the presence of the faithless wife who is to blame for her husband's transformation. In **I**, the quester has been compelled by a supernatural being to discover "the cause of the one story about women"¹; in **G**, King Arthur has taken a great oath to find out the "ingenium mentemque feminae." Thus the frame into which *The Werewolf's Tale* is inserted is practically identical in **G** and **I**.² In **B** and **M**, on the contrary, there is no frame at all, nor is the story told by the Werewolf himself. Again, an entirely independent anecdote (*The Defence of the Child*) has been incorporated into the Werewolf's adventures in both **G** and **I**,³ but is lacking in **B**

¹ See pp. 212, 218.

³ See pp. 222 ff.

² For further discussion of the frame-story, see pp. 209 ff.

and **M**. These special resemblances in features which cannot have been present in the original *Werewolf's Tale* are enough to establish the group **GI**, in the absence of evidence to the contrary; and the correctness of the inference is abundantly supported by agreements in detail, which will come out as the investigation proceeds. That **G** is not derived from **I**, or **I** from **G**, but that the correspondences in question are due to a common original, is also certain, and will appear with sufficient clearness as we go on. For convenience we may designate the common original of **G** and **I** by the letter **y**.

The relation of the *Lai de Melion* (**M**) to Marie's *Bisclavret* (**B**), on the one hand, and to **y** (the common original of **G** and **I**), on the other, remains to be determined. There is slight difficulty in settling the question. **M** cannot be derived from **y**, for it resembles **B** in lacking certain characteristic features of **y** which were no part of the original *Werewolf's Tale*, namely, the frame in which **G** and **I** are set, and *The Defence of the Child*. Furthermore, **M** is (like **B**) a poem, whereas **G** and **I** are in prose,¹ and (like **B**) it professes to be a lay of the Bretons.² On the other hand, the resemblances between **M** and **GI** (**y**) in points in which both **G** and **I** differ from **B** are numerous and extend to matters of detail. They prove beyond a shadow of doubt either (1) that **y** is derived from **M**, or (2) that **M** and **y** go back to a common source distinct from **B**. The former alternative is excluded by a decisive piece of evidence: in **M** the hero is one of King Arthur's knights, and the plot is more or less complicated by this circumstance. In particular, the rôle of the king who (in **B**, **G**, and **I**) hunts the wolf and afterwards befriends him, is in **M** shared between two persons, — the King of Ireland and Arthur. **M** thus presents an elaboration of the narrative which is found in neither **B** nor **y** and which puts it in a category by itself. Hence **y** cannot come from **M**. We are therefore forced to

¹ There is nothing to indicate that **G** and **I** are prose versions of a poetical text. On the contrary, the style and the general air of the narrative seem to preclude this possibility. Notice particularly the recurring formulæ in *Gorlagon* ("Arture, descende," etc.) and Larminie ("Here she is herself").

² The statement is not made in plain terms in **M**, but the implication is clear. Should we read "li Breton" for "li baron" in v. 598? Whether Great or Little Britain is meant is of no consequence at this stage of the investigation.

adopt the second alternative: **M** and **y** go back to a common source (**x**) distinct from Marie's lay. This conclusion is supported by other evidence, which will emerge as we proceed.

It remains to inquire whether Marie's lay (**B**) is derived from **x** (the source of the group **My**), or **x** from **B**, or whether both **x** and **B** go back independently to an older form of the tale.

The first of these three hypotheses is manifestly untenable: **B** is not from **x**, for **B** preserves the werewolf superstition in a simpler and purer form than that afforded by any other redaction.¹ In **B** the hero is a born *loup-garou*. His transformation from man to wolf is not brought about by his wife's act. It takes place in obedience to a necessity of his nature,² and is periodic.³ He is compelled to spend three days of every week in the form of a wolf. Thus he belongs to that great class of uncanny creatures who are doomed to pass a definite portion of their lives in animal likeness, — a category exemplified by the many heroes and heroines of popular or romantic story who are mortals by night but beasts or monsters by

¹ On werewolves in general, see Hertz, *Der Werwolf*, Stuttgart, 1862; Baring-Gould, *Book of Were-Wolves*, London, 1865; Leubuscher, *Ueber die Wehrwölfe*, Berlin, 1850; Liebrecht, *Des Gervasius von Tilbury Otia Imperialia*, pp. 161 ff.; Rolland, *Faune pop. de la France*, I, 153 ff.; Tylor, *Primitive Culture*, 3d ed., I, 113 ff., 308 ff. (references, p. 314, note); Sloet, *De Dieren in het germaansche Volksgeloof en Volksgebruik*, pp. 43 ff.; *Ons Volksleven*, II, 101–102; IV, 150 ff.; Immerwahr, *Kulte und Mythen Arkadiens*, I, 10 ff.; Roscher, *Das von der "Kynanthropie" handelnde Fragment des Marcellus von Side*, in *Abhl. of the Saxon Gesellsch. d. Wissensch.*, Philol.-hist. Classe, 1897, XVII; etc., etc. On were-tigers, see Landes, *Contes et Légendes Annamites*, p. 23; Crooke, *Pop. Religion and Folk-Lore of Northern India*, 1896, pp. 320 ff. (2d ed., II, 210 ff.); Skeat, *Malay Magic*, pp. 160 ff. Werewolf stories were known in Ireland (see p. 257).

² Marie does not expressly say that the knight is actually forced to become a wolf at certain times; but it is clear that such is the case. Perhaps she did not quite understand the situation. What we know of the werewolf superstition, however, leaves no doubt about the matter. Here, as in other instances, Marie's silence, or lack of definiteness, is a guaranty of good faith. She may tell the tale imperfectly, but she is not inventing.

³ On such periodicity, see Hertz, *Der Werwolf*, p. 133: "Allen jenen ältesten Ueberlieferungen gemeinsam ist die periodische Dauer der Verwandlung." One of the oldest recorded instances of lycanthropy, that of the Neuri in Herodotus, iv, 105, is periodic ("once a year for a few days").

day.¹ In **B** the metamorphosis is accomplished in the simplest manner. The knight puts off his clothes and becomes a wolf; at the end of his three days, he puts them on again and resumes his human shape. In all this, **B** agrees with what we know of werewolves and must be close to the original form of the story.²

In **M**, **G**, and **I** we have another state of affairs. The original *Werewolf's Tale* has been influenced by a different type of story: that in which an enchanter transforms a man into bestial shape by means of external magic. The rôle of the magician is played by the faithless wife, as in many tales of the type just mentioned.³ This

¹ For examples, see Child, *Ballads*, I, 290-291, 295; IV, 454, 495; V, 39-40; Maynadier, *Wife of Bath's Tale*, pp. 201 ff.

² Properly no deuteragonist is necessary to enable or force a natural werewolf to assume his animal form. Sometimes he puts on a wolfskin, which he takes off when he returns to human shape. This is a very primitive idea, corresponding to the belief in swan-maidens, serpent-men, seal-men, mermaids, and so on. The importance attached to the Bisclavret's clothes may be regarded as the converse of this doctrine. The clothes are taken away and hidden, and the knight is obliged to remain a wolf till he recovers them. Compare the famous werewolf story in Petronius, 62, where the clothes of the *versipellis* are apparently turned to stone, perhaps to prevent any one from stealing them! According to still another belief, werewolves change from man to wolf and *vice versa* at will, without ceremony and without any condition either of periodicity or of garb (see p. 258). Here, too, no deuteragonist is required.

³ A typical instance is the story of Sidi Numan in *The Arabian Nights* (cited by Köhler in Warnke, *Lais*, 2d ed., p. cvi). Sidi Numan discovers his wife with a ghoul, devouring a corpse. He speaks of the occurrence to her. She sprinkles him with water and transforms him into a dog. She attempts to kill him, but he escapes. A baker takes him into his house and makes a pet of him. He astonishes everybody by his intelligence as a detector of false coin. A woman hears of his fame and thinks he must be a man in beast shape. She takes him home. Her daughter, who is an enchantress, sprinkles him with water, saying: "If you were born a dog, remain a dog; but if you were born a man, resume the form of a man by the virtue of this water." Sidi Numan then transforms his wife into a mare by means of water and a formula which he receives from the enchantress (*Les Mille et Une Nuits*, ed. Loiseleur Deslongchamps, Paris, 1838, pp. 545 ff.; Galland, ed. 1832, VII, 294 ff., ed. Janin, 1881, IX, 4 ff.; Forster, 1802, V, 71 ff.; Scott, 1811, V, 68 ff.; Habicht and von der Hagen, 1840, nights 360-363, VIII, 166 ff.). Galland derived the story from recitation in 1709, and it is not, strictly speaking, a part of the *Arabian Nights*: see Zotenberg, *Hist. d' 'Alâ al-Dîn*, pp. 29, 33; Payne, *Alaeddin, Introd.*, pp. vii ff. Cf. p. 177, note 3. This is the same

modification of the original idea has gone farthest in **I**, in which the hero is not a natural werewolf at all, but is subjected to successive transformations at the hands of his wife, who employs a magic rod. **G** also has the rod, but retains a distinct trace of the hero's werewolf nature. In his garden there is a certain wand (*virga*), which sprang up when he was born and has grown with his growth, so that it exactly corresponds with his stature. If he is struck with the slender end of this rod and a certain formula is pronounced, he must become a wolf. *Per contra*, a blow with the thicker end will restore him to his proper guise. To avoid danger, he keeps the existence of the wand a secret and guards the tree with the utmost care.

In this shoot we immediately recognize the life-tree or life-plant of story and custom. Such trees or plants sometimes spring up at the moment of the hero's birth or soon after, or they are planted when he is born. In either case, his life and safety are mysteriously bound up with the plant. If the plant is cut down, the hero perishes, or, conversely, the plant acts as a "life-token," withering or drooping when he is in peril.¹ The use which the author of *Gorlagon* makes of the belief in life-trees is peculiar. The shoot is not bound up with the hero's existence; it serves as a magical rod of transformation. His wife extorts the secret from him and uses the rod to get rid of her husband.

In **M** there is no life-tree. The magical implement is a ring which the hero wears. It contains a white and a red stone. If he undresses, and is struck on the head with the former, he must become a wolf; the latter will undo the spell. Importuned by his wife to procure her a piece of the flesh of a certain stag, Melion gives her the ring, informs her of its properties, and allows her to change him into a wolf. When he returns with the meat, the lady has fled. The ring is obviously a congenital talisman,² like the

tale as the *Story of Vāmadatta and his Wicked Wife* in the *Kathāsaritsāgara*, bk. xii, chap. 68 (Tawney's translation, II, 134 ff.); cf. also chap. 71 (Tawney, II, 167-168).

¹ On life-trees, life-plants, and so on, see Frazer, *Golden Bough*, 2d ed., III, 391 ff.; Hartland, *Legend of Perseus*, chaps. ii and iii (vol. I), viii (vol. II); Mannhardt, *Wald- u. Feldkulte*, I, 45 ff., 50.

² The author of **M** does not make this clear. Perhaps he did not understand it himself. He neglects to inform us how Melion came by the magic ring.

necklaces in the *Knight of the Swan*,¹ so that **M** (as well as **G**) preserves a trace of that genuine werewolf nature which comes out so plainly in **B** and is completely lost in **I**. The trace, however, is not so obvious as in **G**. On the other hand, **M** attaches importance (like **B**) to the guarding of the hero's clothes,²—a feature which **G** and **I** have lost, for obvious reasons.³

From what precedes it is evident that **B** cannot come from **x** (the common source of **M** and **y**). For **B** preserves a simple form of the werewolf superstition, whereas **x** has modified this by substituting a congenital talisman, which appears in **M** as a ring with two gems and in **G** as a life-tree, and which in **I** has become a simple rod of magic.⁴

¹ See Joannes de Alta Silva, *Dolopathos*, ed. Oesterley, pp. 74 ff.; Herbert's *Dolopathos*, vv. 9368 ff., ed. Brunet and Montaiglon, pp. 324 ff.; Todd, *La Naisance du Chevalier au Cygne*, *Publ. of the Mod. Lang. Assoc. of America*, IV, ii ff. Compare the head-jewel of the heavenly maiden Mandharā in the Thibetan *Kahgyur* (Schiefner, *Tibetan Tales*, transl. by Ralston, no. 5, pp. 54, 58, 61-62). In werewolf tales the talisman is usually a wolfskin (or a girdle of that material), as in the case of other animal transformations (of swan-maidens, serpent-princes, and the like). Instances are countless.

² See p. 178, and note 1.

³ The transformation in **G** and **I** is not expected by the hero. Hence his undressing for the purpose is out of the question.

⁴ The reason for the modification which **M**, **G**, and **I** have undergone is plain enough. Marie's hero is a terrible monster, and his wife is excusable for wishing to be rid of him. We are expressly told that she was afraid to live with him when once she had learned his frightful secret (vv. 97 ff.). That **B** takes sides with the Werewolf and shows no sympathy whatever for the wife is precious testimony to its antiquity. *The Werewolf's Tale* goes back to a conception of the world (familiar to all savages and mirrored in countless traditions) in which such husbands were not regarded as repulsive or horrible. Marie's contemporaries must have felt the difficulty in her story. Perhaps she felt it herself. But she was a faithful reporter of her original and did not try to soften its barbarity. In the other versions, on the contrary, we have a pretty successful attempt to deprive the wife's conduct of all excuse. Melion is not in the habit of changing himself into a wolf. It does not appear that he has ever before taken that shape. He allows his wife to transform him, that he may do her a particular favor. For this she owes him gratitude; certainly she has no ground for alarm or abhorrence. In **G** it is the worst fear of the husband that he may be subjected to the influence of his rod, and the lady transforms him against his will, in order to enjoy the society

The second hypothesis — that **x** (the common source of **M** and **y**) is derived from **B** — is possible, but does not seem likely. The impression that one gets from reading **B** and **M** together is that they are independent redactions of the same saga, and this appears to be the view of most scholars.¹ The comparison is now pushed one step farther back; for the question is not whether **M** is derived from **B**, but whether a lost **x**, the common original not only of *Melion* but of the Latin and the Irish redaction, is to be sought in Marie's lay. The probability of independent derivation from the original is manifestly increased. The case is considerably strengthened by certain points in **B**. The *Lai de Bisclavret* is no doubt a faithful rendering of *The Werewolf's Tale* as it was told in Brittany in Marie's time.² The Breton version which Marie followed, wherever it originated, had certainly been localized in Armorica.³ The king is King of Brittany. The Bisclavret is one of his vassals. The lady's lover is another knight attached to the same king. The wolf ranges a forest near home, both during his periodical fits of lycanthropy and after his wife has betrayed him. The lady marries her lover and continues to reside on her husband's fief. The hunt takes place in the woods near the Bisclavret's home. The wolf becomes the pet of his liege lord. He attacks the lady's second husband at a court held by the king. Later, he tears off his wife's nose when she is waiting on the king, with homage and rich presents, at a *hostel* near her abode. The lady is banished from the country and her lover accompanies her. They have many children, and their descendants are still alive; but the women of the race are occasionally born without noses. All this has the air of a folk-tale which has been pretty thoroughly

of her lover. In **I** the werewolf nature of the hero has entirely vanished, and the wife has become a wicked enchantress, as we have seen. Thus there has been a steadily operating tendency to deprive the wife of all excuse for her treacherous act, in order that the reader's sympathies may remain with the husband.

¹ See Köhler in Warnke, *Lais der Marie de France*, 2d ed., pp. ciii-civ.

² Despite the arguments of Lot, *Rom.*, XXIV, 515, note 1.

³ For werewolves in Brittany, see Warnke, *Lais*, 2d ed., p. xcix (where the editor cites *Revue Celtique*, I, 420; VIII, 197; XI, 242); Sébillot, *Traditions et Superstitions de la Haute-Bretagne*, I, 289 ff.; II, 111; id., *Contes pop. de la Haute-Bretagne*, I, 294 ff.; Luzel, *Contes pop. de Basse-Bretagne*, I, 306 ff., 318 ff.

localized, abandoning the indefinite geography of the *märchen* and fitting itself to the conditions of a limited district. The tradition of the noseless ladies is particularly significant. It is found in **B** alone, and looks like a bit of Breton family legend, originally unconnected with the story. All the conditions of the problem are satisfied if we suppose that *The Werewolf's Tale* (wherever it originated) was utilized in Brittany as a kind of *pourquoi*, to explain the flat noses hereditary in a particular family.¹ So the ferocity of Richard I was accounted for by attaching to his father a well-known type of popular story;² and something similar may be conjectured with regard to the shoulder of Pelops and the golden breast of Caradoc's wife. Other examples will occur to every student of folk-lore. Such considerations tend to exclude the hypothesis that **B** is the source of **x**, that is, of all the other versions of *The Werewolf's Tale*, — French, Latin, and Irish. A trace of the looseness with which the trait of the noseless ladies has been attached to *The Werewolf's Tale* may be detected in one particular. The faithless wife and her second husband are banished, and we should expect to hear no more of them. How can the fact that their descendants sometimes have no noses be known to the narrator unless they remain in Brittany? The inconsistency is slight, but significant.³

¹ This particular hypothesis need not be insisted on. The nose-biting may have got into the story in other ways. On cutting off the nose as a punishment (especially for adultery), see *Kathāsaritsāgara*, chap. 61 (Tawney, II, 54); Jacob, *Hindoo Tales*, p. 263; Landau, *Quellen des Dekameron*, 2d ed., pp. 132-133; Brown, *Studies and Notes*, VII, 188, note 1; cf. *Pañcatantra*, transl. Benfey, II, 41, and the remarks of the editor, I, 140 ff., 441; *Kathāsaritsāgara*, chap. 58 (Tawney, II, 15); passage quoted by Lecoy de la Marche, Étienne de Bourbon, p. 23, note 3; A. Bugge, *Contributions to the Hist. of the Norsemen in Ireland*, pp. 16-17 (Schofield). Noses are sometimes bitten off in popular tales: see, for example, *Æsop*, ed. Coray, no. 48, p. 30 (with the notes of Oesterley, *Schimpf u. Ernst*, no. 19, p. 475, and Jacobs, *Caxton's Æsop*, I, 258); Étienne de Bourbon, ed. Lecoy de la Marche, p. 52; *Kathāsaritsāgara*, chap. 77 (Tawney, II, 248); Benfey, as above, I, 140 ff.

² See p. 194, note 2.

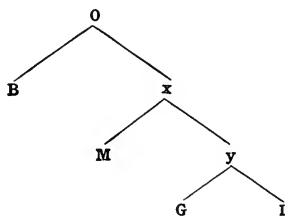
³ The story of Arthur's knight Biclarel in *Renart Contrefait* (Tarbé, *Proverbes Champenois*, pp. 138 ff.) is certainly derived from Marie's lay (see Hertz, *Der Werwolf*, p. 93; Köhler, in Warnke, 2d ed., pp. xcix ff.) and need not detain us. It represents the lady as having a lover and omits the nose-biting, but these changes have no significance for our problem.

Again, the *éclaircissement* is not well managed in **B**. It is incredible that the guilty wife should so carelessly expose herself to the attacks of the wolf. Her husband had already been assailed by the creature on a visit to the court, and the occurrence had excited wondering comment. He had returned home and must have told his wife of his adventure. There can have been no question in the lady's mind as to the identity of the animal; yet she visits the king soon after with complete *sang froid*, only to have her nose bitten off and to be arrested and put "en mult grant destresse" till she confesses. This is rather the inconsistency that results from corruption than primitive simplicity of plot.

To all these considerations we may add the fact that in **x** the wife is a *fée* (see p. 176, below), but that she is a mere woman in **B**. This goes far toward proving that **x** is not from **B**.

On the whole, then, we may safely reject the hypothesis that **B** is the source of **x**. This leaves only the third hypothesis, — that **B** and **x** are independent derivatives of the original *Werewolf's Tale*, — a view which has nothing against it.

It is now clear how our four redactions (**B**, **M**, **G**, **I**) are related. They fall into two groups: **B** and **MGI**. The group **MGI** is likewise divisible into **M** and **GI**, and **G** and **I** are neither of them derived from the other. Thus, —



This genealogy is sufficiently established by what precedes, in the absence of evidence to the contrary. A further comparison of the different versions will show not only that there is no such evidence,¹ but that corroborative testimony is abundant.

¹ With the exception of one very small matter, easily accounted for (p. 179, note 1).

III. RECONSTRUCTION OF \mathbf{x} (THE SOURCE OF **MGI**).

We may now proceed to a reconstruction of \mathbf{x} , the lost source of **MGI**.

1. *The wife is a fée or a visitant from the Other World (MI).*

This is perfectly clear in **I**.¹ In **M** the false wife is actually the daughter of the Irish king, while Melion is one of Arthur's knights. The way in which Melion makes her acquaintance, however, leaves no doubt in our minds as to her true character. He is hunting in a wood in Britain when a beautiful woman meets him and tells him that she "has come to him from Ireland." She protests that she loves but him alone and has never loved before. Her declaration falls in with a vow that he has made, not to have an *amie* who had ever loved another, and accordingly he takes her to wife. The meeting in the wood is a close parallel to the situation in *Desiré*, *Lanval*, *Graelent*, and the legend of Gerbert and Meridiana,² to say nothing of countless other tales of a fairy mistress. The author of **M** has rationalized the narration and represents the *fée* as a mortal, but his euhemerism (or misconception) cannot possibly mislead us. In **G** there is complete rationalization; the lady is a mere woman.³

M alone has this introductory incident, but something of the kind doubtless stood in \mathbf{x} . An account of the hero's first interview with the *fée* was a plain necessity.⁴ The encounter in the forest is a

¹ This appears from **C**₁, in which she is the daughter of King Under-the-Wave, and from **KJ**, in which she is the daughter of the King of Greece, himself described as a magician (**K**). Greece stands for the Other World in many Irish tales. In **O**²**F**, by a turn-about, the hero is the son of a fairy potentate and his wife is a mortal. **L** is reconcilable with **KJC**₁, though not quite clear as it stands. **C**₂**H** give no information as to the wife's parentage. In **S** a wicked stepmother replaces the faithless wife.

² Walter Mapes, *De Nugis Curialium*, iv, 11, ed. Wright, pp. 170 ff.; cf. J. W. Wolf, *Beiträge zur deutschen Mythologie*, I, 181; II, 233 ff.

³ One reason for this procedure on the part of **G** will appear later (p. 249). We shall find that **G** has been affected by an entirely independent tale, *The Dog and the Lady*, — a cynical Eastern anecdote in which the wife is, and must be, a mortal and nothing else.

⁴ **G** and **I** do not tell us how the hero made his wife's acquaintance, except for **KJ**, in which he meets her at her father's court in Greece (i.e. the Other World).

stereotyped incident in such cases, as we have seen, and **x** may well have contained it. It is also likely that Melion's rash vow (not to have a love who had ever loved another) was a feature of **x**; but this question must be deferred for the present. The evidence, which is very curious, will be presented at a later stage of the investigation.¹

2. *The hero possesses a congenital talisman capable of transforming him into a wolf and of restoring him to human shape (MG).*² *His wife teases him till (GI) he confides the secret to her (MGI), when she strikes him (on the head MG) with it, and he becomes a wolf (MGI).*³ *She keeps the talisman and never intends to release him (MGI).*

What the talisman was in **x** we cannot be sure; perhaps a ring with two stones, as in **M**. In **y** it was a rod (GI). At all events, in **x** the hero had to be naked (as in **B**) when he was struck (**M**),

¹ See pp. 190 ff.

² **M** does not say that the talisman was congenital, but this is clear from **G** and is quite consistent with **M**. See next note.

³ Here the influence of a distinct type of story has been operative in **x**: that in which an enchantress transforms her husband to animal shape by the aid of external magic (see p. 170, and cf. Köhler in Warnke, *Lais*, 2d ed., p. cvi). I has gone farthest in this direction, losing all trace of the hero's wolfish nature. Yet in some versions of **I** a faint trace of the congenital talisman remains. In **C**₂ the husband owns the rod, having found it by accident, but it does not appear how his wife learned of its powers. In **C**₁ the rod is not said to belong to the husband, but in other respects this part of the story agrees so closely with **C**₂ that it must once have coincided with it in this point also. **L** has here annexed a portion of the well-known tale of *The Language of Animals* (studied by Benfey, *Orient u. Occident*, II, 133 ff., Frazer, *Archæological Review*, I, 81 ff., 161 ff., and Basset, *Nouveaux Contes Berbères*, pp. 119 ff., 327 ff.; cf. Radloff, *Proben der Volksliteratur der nördlichen türkischen Stämme*, VI, 250 ff.). The hero learns from a dialogue between two birds that there are three "rods of magic and mastery" growing on a certain tree. He laughs, and his wife thinks he is deriding her (a characteristic feature of *The Language of Animals*). To pacify her, he tells her what the birds are talking about, and she gives him no rest till he has procured a rod for her. (For birds boasting of their trees, as in **L**, cf. Stumme, *Märchen der Schlupf*, p. 90.) In **K** the rod is stolen by the wife from her father, the wizard King of Greece; in **J** it is given to her by the king. In **O'F** the rod seems to be in the wife's possession; in **S** it of course belongs to the wicked stepmother. In **H** the wife has a magic ring instead of a rod (cf. p. 257).

and his clothes were (as in **B**) of importance for his restoration (**M**).¹ In **y** these last two points had disappeared (**GI**).²

3. *The wife, after turning her husband into a wolf, goes back to her father, taking one of her husband's servants with her, — the attendant who is present when the transformation takes place* (**MI**).³ *The wolf follows his wife to her father's country* (**MI**), apparently by swimming (**I**; traces in **MG**).⁴ *He becomes the leader of a band of wolves, and they commit great depredations* (**MGI**), *destroying cattle or sheep* (**MGI**) *and killing men* (**MG**). *The king (who is the wolf's father-in-law, MI) leads a great hunt* (**MGI**) *against them, accompanied by his daughter* (**MI**). *All the wolves are killed except the werewolf* (**MGI**).

The return of the lady to her father's kingdom is what we should expect if she is a *fée*. Like all creatures of the Other World, — mermaids, swan-maidens, and the rest, — when she abandons her husband she should go back to the mysterious realm from whence she came. The Irish versions have all suffered here and exhibit considerable variety, but comparison shows that **I** once agreed with **M**.⁵ **G** is quite different. The lady remains at home with her lover,

¹ **M** shows alteration in the matter of the clothes. These are to be guarded (as in **B**), but the author forgets their importance, for Melion recovers his shape "durch die einfache Kraft des Rings, . . . ohne dass gesagt wird, er habe seine Kleider in Irland wieder bekommen" (Hertz, *Der Werwolf*, p. 96, note).

² For the relation between **x** and **B** with regard to the transformation scene, see pp. 183 ff.

³ The question whether the attendant is her lover will be discussed presently (see pp. 187 ff.).

⁴ The swimming is an easy inference from **L**, in which the wolf returns from the island in this way (though it is not said how he got there in the first place), and from **G**. In **G** the wolf journeys to the foreign country by land, but when he is about to return, he plunges into the sea "as if to swim." The author explains that the shortest route was by water. The king fits out a fleet and sails to the wolf's country, taking the wolf with him. Obviously the story has been rationalized. In **M**, the wolf, abandoned by his wife, gets passage to Ireland as a stow-away. Clearly the swimming (in **x**) was too much for the authors of **M** and **G** to credit. They would have found a good deal of difficulty with the swimming match between *Béowulf* and *Breca*!

⁵ In **L** the wolf flees from his country to an island, and the king of the island leads the hunt against him. The false wife is present at the hunt and urges the king to slay the wolf. How the wife got there is not explained; but we must

whom she marries.¹ The wolf, after ravaging the country till it becomes too hot to hold him, seeks refuge in a foreign land, where he continues his depredations till the king of that domain goes out

remember that **L** gives no account of the lady's parentage. **K**, if compared with **L**, makes the case better. The leader of the hunt is the King of Greece, the wolf's father-in-law, who is on a visit to his daughter. Here the wife and the wolf have both remained in the wolf's own land, to which the father-in-law has come. No doubt **K** (which is very brief here) has reversed the localities. The argument is clinched by **C**₁, in which King Under-Wave, the wolf's father-in-law, is among the hunters, spares the wolf, and takes him home. "*My wife*," continues the narrative, "*was at her father's that day, and knew me. She begged the king to kill me.*" What follows in **C**₁ takes place in the land of King Under-Wave. In other words, **C**₁ represents the lady as residing in the land of her husband, but the original idea (in **x**) that she has returned to her father and been followed by the wolf, shows through. The narrative in **C**₁ clumsily accounts for the situation by making the lady a temporary visitor at her father's castle. (On a subsequent occasion in **C**₁ the formula is repeated, p. 332: "My wife was at her father's castle that night.") **O'F** is also of assistance. Here the wolf kills his wife's sheep. "*She visited her father* and said that there was a wolf on the hill killing her sheep, telling him he should gather the hounds and set the hunt on him. He took the hounds with him and went on the hunt in the hope of killing me. As there was the sense of a human creature in me, when the hounds were coming up with me, I went on my knees in the king's presence. He lifted me up between his arms and did not allow the hounds to kill me. Then he took me with him to his own house. At this she was quite beside herself with him, when he did not kill me at once." Here the lady and her father (the wolf's father-in-law) simply occupy adjacent estates; they are neighboring gentlefolk who can visit. This vulgarization necessitates some change in the story, but the original situation is clear. **H** agrees in the main with **O'F**, except that the king is the Werewolf's father and there is no vulgarization. **C**₂ has suffered such alteration as to afford little evidence at this point. The reconciliation between the wolf and the hunting king (which is in all other versions, **BMG** and **LHKJC₁O'FS**) has quite vanished. Yet even **C**₂ assists us slightly: the wolf escapes to an *island* (p. 368). In **S** the wife has been replaced by a stepmother, as we have had occasion to remark before. **J** agrees pretty closely with **K**.

¹ Here **G** agrees with **B** (against **x**), but the agreement must be fortuitous. We have found that in some of the Irish versions the lady also remains at home instead of returning to her father, but such was not the case in **I**, and no one would think of making a cross-line from **I** to **B** on the strength of this variation. This is the only point which interferes in the slightest with the genealogy indicated on p. 175. Everything else confirms the pedigree there set forth.

to hunt him down.¹ This king is not his father-in-law, but, as afterwards appears, his brother. The original form of **x**, as preserved by **M** and **I**, shows through, despite the alterations of **G**. The depredations of the wolf are emphasized in **MGI**,² but are not mentioned in **B**. They appear to be of some importance from the point of view of folk-lore. It is common for a bespelled animal to make his existence felt in this way, in order to bring about his restoration to human form.³ We may conjecture that these ravages were a feature of the original story.⁴ The band of wolves takes a curious form in **G**. The bespelled Gorlagon consorts with a she-wolf,⁵ and two whelps, their offspring, join him in his raids. The whelps are killed, and Gorlagon becomes fiercer than ever.⁶

¹ The hunt is instigated by the lady in **KJHO'FC₁C₂** (by the henwife in **S**), but not so in **B** or in **MG**. This point, then, may pass for a peculiarity of **I**. In **MGI** the hunt is undertaken for the express purpose of ridding the country of the wolf. In **B** this is not the case: the king goes hunting in the forest where the Bisclavret dwells, and the dogs fall in with the beast and run him hard all day.

² The depredations occur in most versions of **I** (**LHO'FC₁S**), but the *band* is found only in **HC₁S**. It is, however, a feature of **M** and **G**, and was certainly present in **x**. The correspondence between **C₁** and **M** is very close here. It is even possible that there were two hunts in **x** (as in **C₁**), one of which is replaced in **M** by the wolf's encounter with King Arthur, but the point is trivial.

³ See Nutt, *Scottish Celtic Review*, pp. 139-140, and *Folk-Lore Record*, IV, 25, note.

⁴ If so, we have another argument against the derivation of **x** from **B**.

⁵ In **C₂**, which has been much changed by amalgamation with a distinct story, the wolf finds a she-wolf in the island to which he flees. She is a woman, transformed by enchantment long years before when within a week of her time, and has been pregnant ever since. The Werewolf accidentally wounds her with his teeth, and her son is born. The son subsequently pursues the hero for causing his mother's death. All this has little or nothing to do with **G**, but is part of quite another type of story. On long pregnancy and the full size at which the children are born under such circumstances, see Child, *Ballads*, I, 82-87, 489; III, 497; V, 285.

⁶ In **S** the hero and his two brothers are turned into wolves by a witch at their stepmother's instigation. Their ravages result in their being driven to an inaccessible rock. They are dying of hunger, and twice cast lots to see who shall be killed to feed the others. The hero of the story is the last survivor. He swims out towards a passing ship and is taken on board by the captain, who replaces the king in the incidents that follow.

4. *Seeing that there is no escape, the wolf approaches the king and makes submissive signs (BMGI). The king, observing his tameness, forbids his followers to injure him (BMGI). The false wife (the king's daughter) urges her father to kill the beast (I; trace in M), but he takes the wolf home and treats him as a pet (BMGI). The wolf eats meat and drinks wine (MI) and so conducts himself that it is inferred that he has been domesticated. He never leaves the king, and sleeps in his bedchamber (BM; I in part).*

In these features all the versions (**B** as well as **MGI**) are in substantial agreement, except for a special development in **M**, to be discussed in a moment. In **B**, of course, the lady is not present at the hunt, and the same is true of **G** (see p. 185).

The peculiar development in **M** just referred to is the result of the attachment of that version to the Arthurian cycle. The wolf escapes from the hunt led by his father-in-law, and the false wife, who is present, expresses her regret that he has not been killed.¹ At this point Arthur intervenes in the plot. Arthur visits Ireland, and, before he reaches the king's court at Dublin, is obliged to spend the night at a certain house. The wolf visits him, falls at his feet, and so conducts himself that the king decides that he is tame and takes him as a pet. The wolf sticks to Arthur's side and sleeps at his feet that night. Next day the Irish king goes to meet Arthur and conducts him to Dublin. The wolf goes, too, never leaving King Arthur, and, when the two kings sit in state, he lies at the feet of his protector. The rôle of the king who hunts the wolf has, then, been divided in **M** between the King of Ireland and Arthur. We have already observed that this peculiarity of **M** proves that **M** cannot be the source of **GI**.

Certain picturesque details of the scene at the hunt may be claimed for **x**. In **G** the king takes hold of the wolf as if to lift him up, and the creature leaps upon the horse in front of the king like a dog. The incident occurs also in **L**,² but nowhere else, though there is something similar in **O'F**: "I went on my knees in the

¹ This corresponds with her urging the king to kill him in **I**.

² "The king cried out to stop the hounds. I took a leap upon the front of the king's saddle" (p. 20).

king's presence. *He lifted me up between his arms* and did not allow the hounds to kill me." We may confidently ascribe the incident to **I**, and therefore to **y**; but it is not certain that it stood in **x**, since there is no trace of it in **M**.

Another curious detail is found in **L**, but in no other Irish version; its presence in **M**, however, makes it secure for **x**. It affords one of the strangest cases of the way in which this, that, and the other version preserve details in this extraordinary farrago of redactions. In **M** Arthur not only feeds the wolf with bread and *lardé*, which he eats with such relish that the king and his knights think that he is tame and disnatured (*privés, tous desnaturés*), but he drinks wine from a basin which the king causes to be set before him. In **L** the same idea is carried out in modern style. The wolf will not eat without a knife and fork: "The king gave orders to bring him drink, and it came; and the king filled a glass of wine and gave it to me. I took hold of it in my paw and drank it, and thanked the king. 'Oh, on my honor, [said the king,] it is some king or other has lost him . . . ; and I will keep him, as he is trained.'" ¹

In **G**, immediately after the king has taken the wolf upon his horse, a great stag comes into view. The king makes signs to the wolf to pursue him, and the creature brings down the deer. In **M**, it will be remembered, a similar incident occurs in another place. Melion is hunting, and his wife is with him. She longs to eat of a certain stag, and Melion, in order to procure the flesh for her, causes her to turn him into a wolf. In this shape he hunts down the stag. There is no trace of the incident except in **G** and **M**, but its presence in those two versions proves that it stood in **x**. It has dropped out of **I** because in **x** it was a mere detail. The author of **M**, however, utilized it to give a new motive for the hero's metamorphosis, not

¹ In **B** the wolf takes hold of the king's stirrup and kisses his feet. The king remarks that the beast "*a sen d'ume*" and that he "*merci crie*"; "*ceste beste a entente e sen*"; "*a la beste durrai ma pes*" (cf. **L**: "He knew me; he must be pardoned"). He takes the wolf home with him and gives orders that "*bien seit abevrez e peüz*," but nothing is said of wine. In **K** the wolf imitates the human voice, holds up his fore-paws, and weeps big tears (cf. **J**). In **O'F** he "goes on his knees in the king's presence." In **H** he throws himself at the king's feet.

being satisfied with what he found in his original (**x**).¹ What the motive in **x** was, we have not yet considered. The question must be left in abeyance till we study the catastrophe of *The Werewolf's Tale*.

5. The *éclaircissement* varies greatly in the several versions. In **B**, as we have already seen, it is rather clumsily managed. The lady's second husband, who had assisted her in the plot against the Bisclavret, goes to court and is attacked by the wolf. Soon the king chances to lodge in a house near the lady's residence. Regardless of her husband's experience, which must have reached her ears, she visits the king to do homage. The wolf springs at her and tears off her nose. The husband is arrested [but nothing is done to him]. The lady is put "en destresce," confesses everything, and produces the Werewolf's clothes. These are laid before the wolf, but he pays no attention to them. A wise courtier suggests that the beast be left alone with the garments.

Cist nel fereit pur nule rien,
Que devant vus ses dras reveste
Ne mut la semblance de beste.
Ne savez mie que ceo munte.
Mult durement en a grant hunte.
En tes chambres le fai mener
E la despueille od lui porter;
Une grant piece l'i laissuns.
S'il devient huem, bien le verruns.

The advice is accepted, and after a time the king, entering the chamber, finds the knight asleep on the bed. The lady is banished, and her lover goes with her. They had children enough and

Plusurs des femmes del lignage,
C'est veritez, senz nes sont nees
Et si viveient esnasees.

In **M** there is no nose-biting and the whole seems better managed. Probably **M** is very near to **x** in this place, if we allow for the

¹ It is conceivable that **M** here represents **x** correctly and that **G** has transferred the incident to a new position; but the other hypothesis is far more probable.

changes made to accommodate the plot to Arthurian romance: Arthur and the Irish king are sitting together, and the wolf is with them. He sees the servant who had carried off his wife, and attacks him forthwith. The bystanders would have killed the beast, but Arthur says he is *his* wolf. Ydel, son of Urien, avers that the wolf must have some cause of anger against the man, and Arthur declares that the fellow shall confess or die. He confesses to Arthur, who calls upon the king of Ireland for the ring. The latter goes to his daughter's chamber, induces her to give it to him,¹ and hands it over to Arthur. The wolf sees the ring and kisses Arthur's feet. Arthur is about to touch him with it when Gawain interposes:

"Biaus oncles," fait il, "non ferés,
En une chambre l'en menrés
Tot seul a seul privéement,
Que il n'ait honte de la gent."

Arthur, Gawain, and Ydel then accompany the wolf into a private room, where the transformation is accomplished. The king of Ireland then delivers up his daughter to Arthur for punishment. Melion is about to touch her with the ring; but Arthur declares he shall not do it,—for his children's sake. Melion consents to spare the guilty woman. Arthur returns to Britain, taking Melion with him. The lady is left in Ireland. Melion would have had her hanged or burned before he would have taken her again to wife.²

If we eliminate Arthur and his knights from the account in *M*, restoring the rôle of deliverer to the Irish king, to whom it rightfully

¹ Tant le blandi et losenga
Qu'ele li a l'anel doné (vv. 536-537).

² In *Guillaume de Palerne* the guardian and constant helper of the hero and heroine is a Spanish prince who has been changed into a wolf by the magic power of his stepmother. The enchanted prince's interview with his father (vv. 7207 ff., ed. Michelant, pp. 209 ff.) reminds one of that between the Werewolf and his father-in-law in our tale, and there are other resemblances (see vv. 7629 ff., 7731 ff., 7759 ff.). There may or may not be some connection between *Guillaume de Palerne* and *The Werewolf's Tale*. Paris (*Litt. franç. au Moyen Age*, § 67) inclines to the affirmative; Ahlström (*Studier i den fornfrenska Lais-Litteraturen*, p. 81) and Warnke (*Lais*, 2d ed., p. civ) oppose.

belongs, we have a narrative which must resemble closely that which stood in **x**. It is very near to **B**, but has none of the difficulties which confront us in that version. The lady does not expose herself to the attack of the wolf after her lover has been assailed.

In **G** there are many changes, occasioned by a modification in a previous part of the plot. The king who protects the wolf is not his father-in-law, and the false wife has remained at her husband's home with her paramour. [This is a variation both from **x** and from **y**, as is shown by the condition of things in **M** and **I**: see p. 178.] The actions of the wolf at the king's own court (in an incident¹ which has nothing to do with the false wife) convince the king that he is a man under enchantment. He holds a council (cf. the *prud'homme* in **B** and Ydel in **M**) and declares his opinions. The wolf indicates the shortest route to his native land, and the king leads an expedition thither to right Gorlagon's wrongs. He takes captive the lady and her lover (now her husband). Then he informs the wicked queen that she must produce the rod. [Here is a manifest flaw. The king knows nothing of the rod. He feels sure that the wolf is an enchanted man, but he has not yet learned the details of the metamorphosis. He should have extracted the truth from the lady's lover, as in **M**. The incident may have been left out by the scribe, who has omitted at least one other passage from the manuscript.² Perhaps, however, it is chargeable to the author of **G**. Earlier in the story he has complicated the plot by introducing an intrigue between a steward and the king's wife.³ To this intrigue he has transferred some of the occurrences that should come in at the end of the story: the wolf has attacked the steward, and the king has forced the guilty man to confess. This circumstance may have led the author of **G** to omit the forced confession of the wolf's rival in the place where it properly belongs.] The lady avers that the rod has been destroyed, but she produces it when tortured.⁴ The king then strikes the wolf with the larger end of the rod in the presence

¹ To be discussed later (see pp. 234-5, 246 ff.).

² See p. 155, note 1.

³ See pp. 246 ff. for proof that this is an insertion.

⁴ Compare the similar treatment of the Bisclavret's wife in *Marie*.

of all, and he becomes a man, — no other than King Gorlagon, the narrator. Gorlagon puts his wife's lover to death, but spares the lady. He divorces her, however, and weds another. His first wife is doomed to sit at all feasts, having the embalmed head of her lover before her on a plate. This concluding piece of barbarity we may here disregard, as being peculiar to *G*; we shall return to it in due time.¹

The Irish version affords us little assistance in reconstructing the disenchantment incident in *x*; for it has been specially influenced by another story, which we shall have to consider by-and-by.² It preserves, however, one important point: the king who befriends the werewolf is his father-in-law; the disenchantment takes place at his court and (though somewhat remotely)³ through his instrumentality. Thus *I* agrees, in part, with what *M* records if we ignore (as we must) the Arthurian element in the latter. At the very end of the story, however, *I* gives us some help. The lover is burned by order of the hero's father-in-law, but the wife is spared at her husband's request.⁴ He even takes her back, promising never to mention her crime. This corresponds pretty well with *G*, in which the guilty woman is also spared and is kept at Gorlagon's court, though no longer as his wife.⁵ We shall be forced to scrutinize the condonation incident with some care in a moment.⁶

¹ See pp. 245 ff.

² See pp. 235-6.

³ It is not easy to decide what is the correct form of *I* here. The versions differ a good deal.

⁴ So in *KC*₁. In *L* it does not appear what becomes of the lover, but the husband takes his wife back. In *K* the King of Greece takes his daughter home with him, and the hero hears no more of her (in this version, it will be remembered, localities are reversed [see p. 179], and the disenchantment occurs while the hero is on a visit to his daughter). *O'F* is imperfect at the end, containing no account of what happens after the hero is released from the spell. In *C*₂ (which has suffered many changes) the hero strikes his wife with the rod (as Melion threatens to do with the ring) and "she springs over the wall, a gray wolf, and runs off through the pastures." The lover he turns into a sheep, hoping that the gray wolf may devour him. In *H* the lover departs and the wife is taken back.

⁵ See p. 162.

⁶ See p. 189.

On the basis of what has been said, it is now possible to reconstruct, with some degree of positiveness, the conclusion of **x**, as follows:

One day, at the court of his father-in-law, the wolf catches sight of his wife's lover and attacks him furiously. Everybody is surprised, since the creature has hitherto been as gentle as possible. A wise man remarks that the wolf must have some cause for his enmity. The lover is threatened (or tortured) and confesses. The king compels his daughter to give up the talisman and is about to strike the wolf with it in the presence of the whole household. The wise counsellor suggests that the disenchantment should take place in private, and the king accordingly takes the wolf into a chamber and restores him to human form. The lover is put to death, but the lady is spared, and her husband receives her once more as his wife and returns with her to his own country.

Two details of this reconstruction require to be justified: (1) the statement that the squire is actually the lady's lover, and (2) the condonation of the faithless wife.

In **M** there is nothing said of the relations between the wife and the person with whom she flees to her father's court. He is simply a squire who was with Melion at the time of the transformation. As soon as Melion becomes a wolf and goes in pursuit of the stag, the lady remarks to the squire: "Let him have his fill of hunting," mounts her horse, and rides with the squire to the port, whence she takes ship for Ireland.¹ At Dublin the squire enters the service of the Irish king, the lady's father, and is acting in that capacity when the wolf recognizes him and attacks him. **G** and **I**, however, make it clear that he was the lady's lover before the transformation, and this is confirmed by **B** (for **O**).² In **G** the lady is in love with a neighboring

¹ La dame dist a l'escuier:
 "Or le laissons assés chacier."
 Montée est, plus ne se targa,
 Et l'escuier o lui mena (vv. 191 ff.).

The abruptness of **M** at this point is highly significant. The lady simply speaks one line, and the squire goes off with her without a word.

² In **B** the lady, on learning her husband's terrible secret, summons a knight who has long sought her love in vain and promises to accept him if he will assist

prince, for whose sake she is glad to be rid of her husband. In **I** the lady's lover is a strange figure. He is a wild man whom her husband has found in the woods and whom he has taken into his service. The husband discovers the guilty pair together.¹ The transformation follows, and the lady returns to her father's court, taking her lover with her, as in **M**.

We are now able to answer a question which has so far been ignored, but which must already have occurred to the reader: How was the transformation to wolf form motivated in **x**? In **B** no motivation is necessary: the Bisclavret becomes a werewolf by his very nature; his wife is horror-struck by the secret which she has wrung from him, and summons a rejected lover to her aid. In **x** the hero,

her by getting possession of the Bisclavret's clothes and thus preventing him from leaving his wolfish form. This looks like a slight change made by Marie under the influence of the institution of chivalric love. It is quite in accordance with popular story that the lady should turn for aid to one of her husband's squires or servants and should promise him her love, or her hand, as a reward. We may compare the Lombard saga of Rosemunda (Paulus Diaconus, ii, 28), to say nothing of the countless tales in which a queen is accused of loving a servant, a beggar, a leper, etc. (see next note).

¹ The lover occurs in most Irish versions (**KL₁H₀'FC₁C₂**) but not, of course, in **S**, which has substituted a stepmother for the wife. In **K** and **L₁** he is a wild man whom the husband has caught and made a servant of. In **C₁** he is a cripple who has lived at the hero's castle for years. In **K** he appears to be beautiful but near the end is compelled to resume his true form—that of a humpback (see below). In **C₂** he is a "dark tall man." In **H** he is a dark man of the wife's country who has put her under a spell. In **O'F**, which has been more or less vulgarized, he is the swineherd. In **KL₁C₁C₂** the husband discovers the pair together.

The cripple or humpback (**KC₁**) is certainly to be ascribed to modern sophistication of **I**, brought about by the influence of a large class of stories in which a woman loves (or is accused of loving) a cripple, a mutilated man, a leper, etc. See especially the Oriental story *How a Woman Rewards Love* (see p. 251, note 2); cf. Natesa Sastri, *Dravidian Nights Entertainments*, pp. 279 ff.; *Kathāsaritsāgara*, chap. 64 (Tawney, II, 97-98); the ballad of *Sir Aldingar* (Child, no. 59, II, 33 ff., with the editor's remarks). The Oriental tale of the woman who fell in love with a cripple or deformed man who had a peculiarly sweet voice (see especially Benfey, *Pant.*, *Einl.*, I, 441-442; cf. the fairy man's singing or horn-blowing in Child, I, 22 ff.) has made its way to Ireland, as may be seen from Kennedy, pp. 74 ff. (a version of the Perilous Princess in which a deformed bard replaces the giant or other monstrous lover: see p. 250, below).

as we have seen, does not suffer a periodical change of form; he merely possesses a congenital talisman, which is capable, in the hands of another, of working the transformation. His wife gets the secret out of him, and transforms him. Why? The answer is suggested by **G** and **I** (assisted by comparison with **B**): She has a lover whose society she wishes to enjoy without molestation. The author of **M** has cut out this motive, which he found in his original (**x**), and has substituted the curious incident of Melion's stag-chase, which he found as a mere detail at a subsequent point of the story (where it is preserved by **G**).¹ The operation has left a scar: **M** neither gives nor suggests any explanation of the lady's act in deserting her husband and fleeing to Ireland with the squire, or of the squire's treachery in consenting to betray his master.

We may now take an important step under the guidance of **I** (assisted in part by other features of **M**). In **x**, as we have seen, the lady is a *fée*, a visitor from the Other World (**MI**²). Clearly her lover has followed her from the same region. The wild man of **I** was manifestly the lover (or husband) of the lady in the Other World, whom she has forsaken for a mortal and who has pursued her. He wins her again and takes her with him to the land of faerie. Incidentally, her mortal husband is transformed into a wolf to prevent his following. Yet, in spite of all, he makes his way to the Other World and wins back his fairy wife, whom he receives again on the old terms. These considerations put a new face on the condonation of the faithless wife. The incident might seem unnatural if she were a mere woman,³ but *fées* are not subject to the laws of human society. The mortal husband regularly loses his fairy wife and has a hard time to recover her. If his quest is successful, he never searches too curiously into her conduct during her absence. He is satisfied to win her back. Her temporary reunion

¹ See p. 182.

² Though **M** does not state this in plain terms, perhaps from misapprehension, it still affords abundant evidence on the subject.

³ Though not necessarily so, as romance and observation alike instruct us. Many of the runaway wives of romantic story, however, are daughters of the gods,—perhaps most of them,—enough, at all events, to raise the present contention to a high pitch of probability.

with her heavenly lover leaves no stain, or, at all events, is no bar to her joyful reception by the happy mortal whom she has honored with her alliance.

We are now able to see a special significance in one particular point in **M** which has hitherto attracted no attention, — the hero's boast that he would never have wife or *amie* who had loved another. The *fée* whom he meets in the wood is clearly aware of this boast¹ and professes to fulfil the requirement. Her words are true, so far as mortals are concerned; but we now see that she has had a lover nevertheless, — a fairy man, who pursues her into this world. The misfortunes which come upon the hero are of the nature of a rebuke to his pride. The reason why the author of **M** has suppressed the fact that the squire with whom the lady fled was an old flame becomes immediately evident. He did not understand fairy ethics, and the delicious irony of the situation seemed to him a flat contradiction. Accordingly he reduced the lover to the rank of an accidental supernumerary and left the lady's conduct in abandoning her husband quite unmotivated.

The vicissitudes of the lady's love affairs in **x** may be compared with one of the most famous of ancient Irish stories, — *The Wooing of Etain*, which is preserved in a manuscript of about 1100 and is well known to be centuries older than that date. Etain was a *fée* and the wife of the fairy prince Mider. She was reborn as a mortal and married King Eochaid Airem of Ireland. Mider endeavored to recover her and finally succeeded in carrying her off to his Other-World abode. King Eochaid pursued her thither and won her back again. The parallel between **x** and the *Tochmarc Etaine* in the general outline of the saga is too obvious to need emphasis.²

¹ The author does not tell us how. If she is a mortal (as **M** makes her out), this is a question to be asked; if she is a *fée*, however, no explanation is needed.

² In Arthurian romance we have the abduction of Guinevere by a person (clearly of supernatural antecedents) who claims to have been her lover or husband in former days, and her recovery by Arthur or one of his knights. The Arthurian legend has lost much of the supernaturalism which it once must have had and which the *Wooing of Etain* still keeps in its entirety, but its general character is still recognizable. For the abduction of Guinevere, see *Vita Gildae*; Ulrich von Zatzikhoven, *Lanzelet*; Chrétien, *Chevalier de la Charrete*; Heinrich

But the resemblance between **M** and the *Tochmarc Etaine* is not confined to the general outline. There is a very striking parallel between the introductory incident in **M** and a particular passage in the ancient Irish tale. To appreciate this parallel we must undertake a somewhat closer study of the first part of **M** than we have yet made.

Melion is a *bachelor* of Arthur's court. He makes a vow which has disastrous consequences:

Il dist ja n'amerait pucele,
Que tant seroit gentil ne bele,
Qui nul autre home¹ eüst amé,
Ne qui de nul eüst parlé (vv. 19 ff.).²

His vow is widely reported, and he becomes an object of bitter hatred to the maidens of the court.

Celes qui es canbres estoient
Et qui la roïne servoient,
Dont il en i ot plus de cent,
En ont tenu un parlement:
Dient jamais ne l'ameront,
N'encontre lui ne parleront.
Dame nel voloit regarder,
Ne damoisele a lui parler (vv. 29 ff.).

Melion is much distressed. He abandons the quest of adventures and takes no heed to arms. To cheer him up, King Arthur gives him a fief, — a castle on the coast, — with a great forest. Melion takes up his residence there with a hundred knights, and has much pleasure in hunting.

If we leave out the Arthurian paraphernalia (and the machinery of courtly love), which were no part of **x**,³ we shall at once recognize the startling likeness of the situation to that in the *Tochmarc Etaine*.

von dem Türlin, *Krône*; cf. *Arthur and Cornwall* (Child, *Ballads*, no. 30, I, 274 ff.); see Paris, *Rom.*, X, 471 ff.; XII, 459 ff.; Rhys, *Arthurian Legend*, pp. 49 ff.; Foerster, *Karrenritter*, pp. xx ff.; Miss Weston, *Legend of Sir Gawain*, pp. 67 ff., and *Legend of Sir Lancelot*, pp. 40 ff.

¹ Both MSS. have *que* and *home*; Horák reads *hom*. Cf. also vv. 111 ff.

² So the older MS. (with *que* for *qui*). Horák reads (with the Turin MS.): "Ne de qui nus eüst parlé."

³ See p. 181.

Eochaid, king of Erin, appointed a great feast in the first year of his reign; but the men of Erin refused to attend it, since he had no queen.¹ Then Eochaid sent his messengers throughout Erin to seek for him the most beautiful woman among the maidens of Erin. *Also he declared that he would marry no woman whom any one of the men of Erin had known before him.*²

The resemblance between Melion's vow and Eochaid's needs no emphasis. The one might almost be a translation of the other. But the parallel does not stop here.

One day, while hunting in the woods, Melion sees a maiden riding towards him. She is richly dressed and of surpassing beauty. He salutes her and asks her of what kindred she is and what brings her thither :

Dites moi dont vos estes née
Et que ici vos a menée (vv. 103-104).

Compare the *Tochmarc Etaine* :

King Eochaid's messengers traverse all Erin until they learn of a maiden who is a fitting match for him.³ They return to Tara with their report,

¹ Of course the king was disgraced by this refusal, as Melion was by the ladies' sending him to Coventry.

² The original may be added on account of the significance of the passage: "Al asbert, ní biad ina farrad acht ben nad fesser nech do feraib hErend ríam" (*Lebor na h-Uidre*, Windisch, *Irische Texte*, I, 119). The version in Egerton MS. 1782 (Windisch, *ibid.*) has the same requirements, but includes also the proviso that the woman shall be Eochaid's equal "in form and beauty and family." The version prefixed to the *Togail Bruidne Dá Derga* (Stokes, *Revue Celtique*, XXII, 13 ff.) omits Eochaid's feast and his vow, and begins with his meeting with Etain at Brig Leith. A part of the *Tochmarc Etaine* is translated by Thurneysen, *Sagen aus dem alten Irland*, pp. 77 ff.

³ What follows is not in the *Lebor na h-Uidre*, which concludes the first episode of the *Tochmarc Etaine* with the bald statement (immediately following the king's declaration, just quoted): "There was found for him [one], at Inbir Chichmaine, namely, Etain, daughter of Etar, and Eochaid took her home then, and she was a match for him in shape and form and family," etc. (Windisch, I, 119). It then proceeds directly to the love of Ailill for the queen. The details of Eochaid's meeting with Etain are preserved not only in Egerton MS. 1782 (edited by Windisch, *Irische Texte*, I, 113 ff.), but in three manuscripts of *The Destruction of Dá Derga's Hostel* (*Togail Bruidne Dá Derga*), including the *Yellow Book of Lecan* (see the edition and translation of Stokes, *Revue Celtique*, XXII,

and the king sets out to win her. He finds the damsel at Brig Leith, on the margin of a spring. Her beauty and the splendor of her attire are described in florid language. The king accosts her with these words: "Whence art thou, maiden, and whence comest thou?"¹

Let us return to **M** for a moment :

Cele respont: "Jel vos dirai,
Que ja de mot ne mentirai.
Je sui assés de haut parage,
Et née de gentil lignage;
D'Yrlande sui a vos venue;
Sachiés que je sui mout vo drue;
Onques home fors vos n'amai,
Ne jamais plus n'en amerei.
Forment vos ai oï loer;
Onques ne voloie altre amer
Fors vos tot seul, ne jamais jor
Vers nul autre n'avrai amor" (vv. 105 ff.).

Melion takes the lady with him to his castle and marries her.

Again we must compare the *Wooring of Etain* :

"It is not hard [to reply to thy question]," the maiden answers. "I am Etain, daughter of the king of the horsemen, from the *stde* [i.e. the fairy folk]." "Shall I lie with thee now?" asks Eochaid. "For that have I come here into thy protection," says the maid. "It is twenty years since I was born in the *std* [i.e. fairy hill], and men of the *std*, both kings and fair men, a-wooring me, and no man of them has known me, because I have loved thee and set affection and desire upon thee since I was a child and capable of speech, on account of thy fame and thy glory; and I have never seen thee before this time, and I recognized thee immediately by thy

9 ff.). Though Egerton 1782 and the *Dá Derga* manuscripts are later than the *Lebor na h-Uidre*, there is no doubt that they afford us a very old version. According to Stokes, the *Yellow Book* "preserves some Old-Irish forms which have been modernised in the elder copy" (i.e. in the *Lebor na h-Uidre*). The *Lebor na h-Uidre* copy seems to have been condensed at this point. Compare the relation between the longer and the shorter version of *The Wooring of Emer* (*Tochmarc Emire*): K. Meyer, *Archæological Review*, I, 68 ff., etc.; id., *Revue Celtique*, XI, 442 ff.; Hull, *Cuchullin Saga*, pp. 55 ff.

¹ "Can deit iarum a ingen, ar Eochaid, 'ocus can dollot?'" (*Irische Texte*, I, 120, l. 16); cf. *Revue Celtique*, XXII, 16-17.

description, and it is thou to whom I have come." The king promises to forsake all other women and have her for his sole wife, and she goes to Tara with him, where she is warmly welcomed and the feast takes place.¹

The parallels just given sufficiently justify the conjecture (p. 176) that **x** contained a passage corresponding to the introductory incident in **M** and including the rash vow of the hero,² his meeting with

¹ *Irische Texte*, I, 120; Stokes, *Revue Celtique*, XXII, 16-17 (except the last sentence).

² King Adler, in a curious little poem (midway between romance and ballad) found only in the Percy MS. (Hales and Furnivall, II, 296 ff.), declares:

There were not that woman this day aliue,
I kept [i.e. *should care*] to bee my wedded wiffe,
Without she [MS. *thé*] were as white as any milke
Or as soft as any silke,
And the(y) royall rich wine ran downe her brest bone,
And lord! shee were and a leal [MS. *leath*] maiden (vv. 5 ff.).

He is informed that King Estmere has such a paragon, and proceeds to win her, against heavy odds. The story, as Professor Child has noted (*Ballads*, II, 50), is that of Hugdietrich in the *Heldenbuch* (von der Hagen, 1855, I, 169 ff.; Amelung and Jänicke, I, 167 ff.), and there is some relation between *King Adler* (as the romance is called in the manuscript) and the superb ballad of *King Estmere* (Child, no. 60, II, 49 ff.). The impossible tasks in *King Adler* are like those which adventurers must undertake in *märchen* (and elsewhere) to win the daughters of supernatural beings.

It seems to be the rule that mortals who make vows of this kind win *fées*, and sometimes have trouble with them. See, for example, *Richard Coer de Lion*, vv. 43 ff. (Weber, *Metrical Romances*, II, 5 ff.), with regard to the demon wife of Henry II (and cf. Child, *Ballads*, IV, 463).

I take this opportunity of comparing Richard's eccentric method of killing the lion (*Richard Coer de Lion*, vv. 1063 ff., Weber, II, 43-44) with that followed by Cuchulinn in disposing of the sea-monster in the *Fled Bricrend* (§ 86, *Irische Texte*, I, 298; Henderson, pp. 106-107) and of Conall's hound Conbél in the *Aided Guill ocus Aided Gairb*, 40 (edited and translated from the *Book of Leinster* by Stokes, *Revue Celtique*, XIV, 422-3; cf. also *The Pursuit after Diarmuid*, ed. O'Grady, *Ossianic Soc. Trans.*, III, 102-103). The incident, as well as the account of King Henry's demon wife, occurs in a part of the poem which is foreign to the Auchinleck text and which Paris thinks has no French source (*Rom.*, IX, 542 ff.; XXVI, 356-7, note 3).

the *fée*, and a conversation between them much like that preserved in **M**. Thus these parallels enable us to supply certain significant details in our reconstruction of **x**, the common source of **M** and **y** (GI).

The resemblance between the general outline of **x** and that of the *Tochmarc Etaine*, as well as the particular correspondences which present themselves in so remarkable a manner, suggests the next step in our investigation and enables us to take it with a feeling of security. We are now in a position to understand the make-up of **x**, the source of all our versions except **B**. It was manifestly a complex tale. In its main outlines, it was a fairy mistress story of the type exemplified in ancient Irish literature by the *Wooing of Etain*. A *fée* abandons the Other World and marries a mortal. Her fairy lover or husband follows her and takes her back with him. Her mortal husband visits the Other World and recovers his wife. Into a story of this type has been worked an anecdote of an entirely different character, — *The Werewolf's Tale* proper. In this the hero was a born werewolf, forced by his very nature to spend a definite portion of his life in the shape of a wolf. His wife induced him to disclose his secret, and, with the help of her lover (or of a rejected suitor whom she promised to reward with her hand), forced the hero to retain his wolfish shape for a long time. At last, however, he took refuge with a certain king, who disenchanted him. The faithless wife was discarded, and her lover was punished.

The result of combining these two stories has been to disguise somewhat the original plot of the former; yet we can still recognize the character of that plot in two versions of the composite story, — the "Breton lay" of *Melion* (**M**), and the *märchen* **I**, still current throughout a large part of Ireland and well known, until recently, in the Scottish Highlands.

Where did this amalgamation take place? The almost inevitable answer is, — *in Ireland*. There, and nowhere else, the composite in question is still thoroughly at home and in active circulation as a folk-tale. There, too, we find the *Tochmarc Etaine*, with its startling correspondences to the *Lai de Melion*, preserved (in part) in a manuscript of about 1100 (nearly a century earlier than Marie's time), and

antedating by two or three hundred years the manuscript that contains it.¹ We need not hesitate, then, in pronouncing for Irish as the language of *x*, and for Ireland as the country in which that version originated. This Irish *x* was not a mere floating folk-tale, in all probability; it was a pretty definite piece of literary work (oral or written), composed at a time considerably antecedent to the earliest French versions of Arthurian romances. We should never forget that the Irish legends which we know from the *Lebor na h-Uidre* (c. 1100), and others of similar character, are simply the débris of a great literature, often betraying centuries of redaction by the form in which we find them at that early time. Fixation by literary means is a sufficient

¹ The *Tochmarc Etaine* is not cited as one of the sources of our tale, but merely as an extant and very early example of a type of Irish saga to which that tale owes its outline (exclusive of the werewolf material) and a number of its details. At the same time, in view of the surprising correspondences which we have just been studying, one cannot deny the possibility that *x* may actually go back to the *Tochmarc Etaine* for some of its material. The *Tochmarc Etaine* was one of the most famous of Irish tales. We are expressly informed that Etain's beauty was a proverbial standard of comparison (*Irische Texte*, I, 120; *Revue Celtique*, XXII, 15-16). In one version of the burlesque *Vision of Mac Conglinne*, a wise cleric has the *Táin Bó Cuailgne* and the *Bruiden Dá Derga* in his right shoe and the *Tochmarc Etaine* and the *Tochmarc Emire* in his left (ed. Meyer, p. 152). It was one of the *prímscéla* or "stories of capital importance" that every good poet was expected to know, according to the list in the *Book of Leinster* (R. I. A. facsimile, p. 189, col. 3, l. 11; cf. O'Curry, *Manuscript Materials*, pp. 243, 584 ff.). Undoubtedly it would have been familiar to any Irish minstrel or *raconteur* who was enterprising enough to seek his fortune in a foreign land. With this in view, I ventured to suggest, some fifteen years ago, that the non-classical elements in the Middle English *Orfeo* might conceivably be derived from the *Tochmarc Etaine* (*Amer. Journ. of Phil.*, VII, 176 ff.). On this suggestion (which was made very guardedly, as I should still wish to make it), cf. Brandl, Paul's *Grundriss*, II, 630; Bugge, *Arkiv för Nordisk Filologi*, VII, 108; Hertz, *Spielmannsbuch*, 2d ed., pp. 361-362. An Irishman, it should be remembered, is described in the *Lai de l'Espine* as playing the *Lai d'Orphée* on a rote at the court of a king of Brittany (vv. 176-181, ed. Roquefort, *Poésies de Marie*, I, 556; ed. Zenker, *Ztsch. f. rom. Phil.*, XVII, 246), and the English *Orfeo* professes to be a "lay of the Britons." (Cf. p. 197, note 2.) On the *Tochmarc Etaine*, see (besides Stokes, *Revue Celtique*, XXII, 11 ff.), O'Curry, *Manners and Customs*, II, 192 ff., III, 189 ff.; Zimmer, Kuhn's *Ztsch.*, XXVIII, 585 ff.; d'Arbois, *Cours*, II, 311 ff.; Nettlau, *Revue Celtique*, XII, 229 ff.; Nutt, *Voyage of Bran*, I, 175 ff.; II, 47 ff., 54 ff.; Rhys, *Arthurian Legend*, chap. ii.

explanation for the close correspondence in detail which we have found among the different versions of our story.

The simple *Werewolf's Tale*, uncombined with the story of a fairy mistress and her alternate loss and recovery, doubtless passed from Ireland into Brittany at an early date.¹ There it became localized and attached to itself specifically Armorican features (in particular the anecdote of the noseless ladies²), without, however, losing its substantial integrity. It was made the subject of a Breton lay, and is preserved to us in Marie's *Bisclavret*, which must be accepted as a faithful rendering of the Breton version. Marie's translation was made in England, about 1180, for the entertainment of the English court.

The Irish *x* (a combination of a fairy mistress story with *The Werewolf's Tale* proper) also made its way into Brittany, became the subject of a *lai*, and was rendered into French by an anonymous poet, who attached it to the Arthurian cycle. The result of his efforts is the *Lai de Melion*, which preserves, in its remarkable resemblances to the *Tochmarc Etaine*, convincing evidence of its ultimate derivation from an Irish source. That the story should have passed from Ireland in both a combined and an uncombined form at different times (not necessarily very far apart) is nothing extraordinary. We

¹ Probably through Wales, since that country was the natural medium for such communication. It is possible, however, that the tale was carried from Ireland to Brittany by some Irish minstrel or story-teller (compare what is said of the *Lai d'Orphée*, p. 196, note 1).

² See p. 174. It may be held that the anecdote of biting off the nose is not Armorican in origin and that the explanation suggested at p. 174 (the *pourquoi*) is whimsical. This objection, if admitted, will not particularly affect the argument. It may still be maintained that the anecdote was added after the Irish *x* had reached Armorica, even if the anecdote itself be regarded as of Oriental origin. Breton lays were under no greater obligation to refuse foreign matter than other mediæval fictions were. Marie's *Dous Amanz* is in some way related to a Persian tale (*Ztsch. d. Deutschen Morgenl. Gesellsch.*, XVI, 527, cited by Liebrecht, *Zur Volkskunde*, p. 108; see Köhler, in Warnke, 2d ed., p. cxxii; on the story, cf. the very learned study of Laistner, *Rätsel der Sphinx*, I, 272 ff.). The *Lai d'Orphée* should also be remembered (see p. 196, note 1). Dr. Schofield has argued powerfully for the view that Chaucer's *Franklin's Tale* (which professes to be a lay of the "olde gentil Britouns") is founded on a Celtic story that had been affected by Eastern tales (*Publ. Mod. Lang. Assoc. of America*, XVI, 405 ff.).

have duplicate *lais* in three other instances: Marie's *Lanval* and the anonymous *Graelent*¹; Marie's *Milun* and the anonymous *Doon*²; Renaut's *Ignare* and the lost *Guiron* described in Thomas's *Tristan*.³ Our extant text of the *Lai de Melion* is in the Picard dialect and is found in two manuscripts.⁴ Neither of these presents a perfect text, and the Picard version may therefore be put back some time. Probably it is not much later than Marie herself.⁵ It is impossible to say whether the Picard poet made his translation directly from the Breton or whether he worked over an earlier French (Norman?) rendering. The considerable differences between **M** and its source **x** may perhaps favor the latter hypothesis.

The passage of **x** into Brittany naturally had no effect on its continued existence in Ireland, where, indeed, it has survived in full vigor to the present day. The Irish **x** developed considerably in its native land (unattached, of course, to the Arthurian cycle) and assumed the form **y**, still in the Irish language. In **y** the story of **x** was complicated by being set in a frame: the Werewolf is made to tell his own story to a quester who is under bonds to learn it. This **y**, like **x**, was a prose tale, which may have developed at a very early date, even before the passage of **x** into Brittany.⁶ It is the source

¹ See particularly Schofield, *Publ. of the Mod. Lang. Assoc.*, XV, 121 ff.; XVI, 423-424.

² See Warnke, *Marie de France u. die anonymen Lais*, pp. 22-23; Köhler, in Warnke's *Lais de Marie*, 2d ed., pp. cxxxiii ff.

³ Michel, *Tristan*, III, 39; cf. Schofield, *Publ.*, as above, XV, 122 ff.

⁴ Arsenal MS., P. 283, of the last quarter of the thirteenth century, described in Monmerqué and Michel, *Lai d'Ignaurès*, etc., pp. 35 ff.; Turin MS., of the late fourteenth century, described by Michelant, *Meraugis de Portlesguez*, pp. 257-258; Friedwagner, *Meraugis*, pp. xx-xxi; on the Picard dialect, see Horák, *Ztsch. f. rom. Phil.*, VI, 103 ff.

⁵ Though Marie wrote her *Lais* about 1180, there is no manuscript earlier than the second half of the thirteenth century. Compare the date of the Arsenal MS. of *Melion*. Gröber, *Grundriss*, II, i, 598, refers *Melion* to the first half of the thirteenth century.

⁶ For of course the travels of **x** had nothing whatever to do with the growth of **y**. There was nothing to prevent **y** from developing, and existing side by side with **x** for a long time, before **x** became known outside of Ireland. Indeed, the development of **y** may even have preceded the passage of the uncompounded Irish *Werewolf's Tale* (the source of **B**) out of that country. We should be careful

of our Latin version **G**, now published for the first time. **G**, however, is not a translation from Irish, but apparently from the Welsh, as appears from the names *Gorlagon*, *Gorgol*, and *Gorbeil* (?), given in **G** to the Werewolf and his two brothers. We must suppose, therefore, that the Irish **y** passed into the sister island, where it was rendered into Welsh. The Welsh version is lost, like a great many other Welsh tales, but it was translated into Latin, and this Latin text is preserved to us, by a happy accident, in a single manuscript of the late fourteenth century. Either the Welsh author,¹ or the translator to whom we owe the Latin adaptation (**G**), attached the story to the Arthurian cycle by making Arthur the quester who is forced to learn the Werewolf's tale. The attachment is very loose, and has nothing whatever to do with the Arthurian coloring of **M**. Its precise character and its relation to the frame of **y** may best be studied later, in connection with **I**.²

The passage of **y** into Wales could have no effect on the further history of that version in Ireland. Here the story has continued to exist and is not yet extinct among the people, having been taken down within the past fifty years in at least four different counties, as well as in the West of Scotland.

One peculiarity of **y**, as we have seen, which distinguishes it from **x**, is the ascription to the Werewolf of an adventure which we may call *The Defence of the Child*. This appears, as it should, in **G**, though in a considerably modified form and an unusual setting. Version **I** expanded this anecdote in a manner quite out of proportion to the modest place which it occupied in **y**. The expansion is one of the peculiarities of **I** as distinguished from all other versions. Two other such peculiarities are : (1) the complication of the anecdote

to observe that the actual development of the various versions in Ireland does not determine the time when they were carried abroad. An older version could be exported later than a younger one. Chance alone would govern; for a younger version need not immediately (or ever, for that matter) crowd an older out of existence. These facts are commonplaces, but they are too often ignored by investigators, who sometimes forget that a story, unlike a human traveller, may be in two places at the same time.

¹ The forms *Caius* and *Walwainus* (c. 2) would then be due to the Latinizer.

² See p. 212.

which frames the tale, and (2) the succession of metamorphoses through which the hero passes. To these points we shall direct our attention presently.¹ Meantime we must revert to *G* and its Welsh original.

IV. THE WELSH *GORLAGON*.

In the preceding chapter we have provisionally inferred, on the basis of the proper names *Gorgol*, *Gorbeil*(?), and *Gorlogan*, that the immediate source of the Latin *G* was a Welsh version of *y*. This inference must now be scrutinized with some particularity.

In *G*, Arthur visits successively three brothers, *Gorgol*, *Gorbeil*, and *Gorlogan*, in his search for knowledge of the "*ingenium mensque feminae*." *Gorgol* is at table when Arthur arrives. He asks him to dismount and eat, and promises to answer the question in the morning. Arthur consents, transgressing his vow. When morning comes, *Gorgol* declares that he knows nothing about the problem and sends Arthur to *Gorbeil*, who tricks him in the same way and passes him along to *Gorlogan*. But by this time Arthur is on his guard; he refuses to "dismount and eat," and *Gorlogan* is obliged to tell the story that the quester demands. *Gorlogan* interrupts his own narrative with constantly recurring invitations, always couched in the same terms ("*Descende, Arture, et comede*," etc.), but the king is proof against temptation and does not join in the feast till he has ascertained everything that he wishes to know.

It is to be noted that Arthur sets out from his capital with the express purpose of visiting *Gorgol*, from whom he expects the solution of his problem.² Apparently he has never heard of *Gorbeil* and *Gorlogan*. Now we have seen that in the group *GI* (and therefore in its source *y*) there was a quester (not Arthur) who set out to

¹ See pp. 213 ff.

² There is an inconsistency in *G*. Arthur visits *Gorgol* because he has often found him skilled in such problems ("*quem in rebus huiusmodi peritum sepius expertus sum*," cap. 3). Yet when he reaches *Gorgol*'s castle, he fails to recognize it, nor does *Gorgol* seem to be acquainted with Arthur ("*Quis es*," is his greeting, "*et unde?*"). This confusion indicates that the author of *G* as we have it (probably the Latinizer) did not understand the identity of the three mysterious "brothers."

learn "the cause of the one story about women."¹ There can be little doubt that in y the quester was to go to a certain person who knew that "one story" because he was himself the hero of it. A trace of this situation may be seen (in G) in Arthur's determination to go to Gorgol and interrogate him. It is clear, too, that Gorgol knows the werewolf story, and would have told it if Arthur had not disregarded his vow and joined in the feast; and so of Gorbeil. We may safely infer that Gorgol, Gorbeil, and Gorlagon are but three manifestations of the same person, — in accordance with a feature well known in Irish tales.² The restored Werewolf is very loath to tell his story, and deludes the quester by thus meeting him at three different places and under three different names.³ The similarity of the names in question supports this hypothesis.

The names *Gorgol*, *Gorbeil*, and *Gorlagon* are peculiar to G. The form *Torleil* seems to be corrupt; one expects the name to begin with *Gor*- like the others. In the part of the manuscript written in the first hand, this name occurs six times on p. 56 and always begins with a capital. It is spelled *Torleil* three times, *Torbeil* once, *Torliel* once, and finally — the last time it occurs, we actually find it as *Gorliel*. The scribe was obviously doubtful or confused. Further, the first, second, and fourth times, the initial *T* is not made in the scribe's ordinary manner, but is a capital *G* changed into a *T* by means of a stroke over the top. In the part of the manuscript written in the second hand, the name occurs but once (cap. 23) and is written *gorleil*. We have good reason, then, since we know that the manuscript is a copy, not an autograph, for regarding the proper form of the second brother's name as *Gorleil*, *Gorliel*, or *Gorbeil*, though we cannot be quite certain of the second syllable.

¹ So in I. The vaguer quest (to learn the "ingenium mensque feminae") is less in the popular vein and shows a fading of the older motive, though the identity of the two is an inevitable inference.

² See A. C. L. Brown, *Iwain*, pp. 101 ff., above.

³ The sending-on of an adventurer from one person to another is common enough in folk-tales. So is the existence of a succession of brothers, commonly three, each of whom must be visited. So also is the succession *old*, *older*, *oldest* (typically, however, of son, father, and grandfather). But these facts do not make against the identity here suggested.

These three names in *Gor-* are certainly not Irish. One of them, however, is immediately recognizable as a well-established Welsh-Breton name. In Welsh we have in charters: "*Guruol* sacerdos filius Merchion" (*Liber Landavensis*, p. 162¹), "*Guorguol* filius Clemuis" (id., p. 164), *Gurguol* (p. 166), and *Gurgal* (p. 167). In Breton, *Uruual* and *Uurgual* occur in ninth-century charters (Redon Cartulary).² This *uur-* later becomes *gur-*,³ so that *Gurgual* would be a perfectly good Breton form. In the first syllable of this Welsh-Breton name, we have doubtless the stem *vero-* (Latin *vir*, Goth. *waír*, A.S. *wer*), "man" (modern Welsh *gwr*).⁴ The second part of the compound (*-uual*, *-gual*) is very uncertain. It is common in Old Breton names.⁵ Rhys has suggested that it is cognate with the Germanic *wolf*.⁶ He equates the Welsh *Catgual* with *Hathowulf*,⁷ the Welsh *Tutgual* (*Tudwal*) with *Theudulf*,⁸ and the Welsh

¹ Ed. Evans and Rhys. The *Book of Llan Dâu* is in various hands, but the portion that here concerns us is the oldest part of the manuscript and dates from c. 1150. The charters, however, are copies of much older originals.

² Loth, *Chrestomathie Bretonne*, I, 171, 180, cf. 207. The name occurs as follows in De Courson's edition of the Cartulary: *Uruual*, pp. 168 (no. 218), 171 (no. 221, misprinted *Uruual*), 173 (no. 224); *Uurgual*, p. 78 (no. 104).

³ See Loth, *Chrestomathie*, I, 210-211.

⁴ Modern Breton *gour*; Cornish *gor*, *gour*; Irish *fer*. Confusion with the Celtic prefix *ver-* (Breton *uor-*, *uur-*, *gur-*; Welsh *gor-*; Irish *for-*) has occurred in some names (Loth, I, 178, note 3).

⁵ De Courson, *Cartulaire de l'Abbaye de Redon*, indexes; Loth, I, 171, 207. Note the Latin genitives *CVNOVALI*, *CLOTUALI* (cf. Breton *Conuual*, *Clutuual*, Loth, I, 171) in inscriptions found in Cornwall (*Archæologia Cambrensis*, 5th Ser., XII, 55).

⁶ *Lectures on Welsh Philology*, 2d ed., 1879, pp. 379, 406. Loth (*Chrestomathie*, I, 171, note 2) speaks respectfully of Rhys's theory, but in *Revue Celtique*, XV, 224, suggests an etymology of his own. He regards Breton *-uualart*, Welsh *-waladr* (in *Cat-uualart*, *Cat-waladr*, etc.) as cognate with Old Norse *Valfaðir*, a name of Odin, and as coming from a form **valū-(þ)atir*. This would make *-uual* cognate with the Germanic **walu-* (O.H.G. *wal*, seen in Ger. *wahlstatt*; A.S. *wal*; O.N. *valr*, *val-kyrja*). Stokes (Bezenberger's *Beitr.*, XXIII, 41) mentions Loth's equation of *-uualart* and *Valfaðir*, but without committing himself. It is impossible, however, to attach any weight to Loth's etymology. It is altogether improbable that the Scandinavian *Valfaðir* is old enough to be cognate with the Celtic *-waladr*, and there are other difficulties.

⁷ Förstemann, 2d ed., col. 799.

⁸ Id., col. 1453.

Gurguol with *Waraulf*.¹ These correspondences² make out a strong case, in the lack of any other satisfactory explanation. If Rhys's etymology of *uual* (*gual*) is correct, the name *Gorgol* in our Latin text not only means "werewolf" but is etymologically identical with that word.³ If it is not correct, we are face to face with an amazing coincidence: more than twenty years ago, on linguistic grounds alone, Professor Rhys equated *Gurgual* with *werewolf*, and now the name turns up as that of an actual werewolf (or his brother) in the Latin text which we are studying.⁴

Let us turn to *Gorlagon*.⁵ This word occurs also in the prose *Perceval*, in the forms *Gorgalan*, *Gurgalain*, etc.,⁶ as the name of a heathen king of "Albanie." Its etymology is not beyond conjecture.

¹ Id., col. 1537.

² Rhys also equates the Welsh *Budgual* [Breton *Butgual*] with *Botolf*, but this is an error. *Botolf*, *Badulf* (Förstemann, col. 230) are from O.H.G. *badu*, A.S. *beadu*, "battle," which is not cognate with Breton *but*, *bud*-, Irish *buaid*, "victory." On *Butgual*, cf. Zimmer, *Ztsch. f. franz. Sprache*, XIII, 51. In sense, however, *Butuual* (-*gual*) may be compared with A.S. *Sigewulf*.

³ On *werewolf* as "man-wolf," see the decisive remarks of Mogk and Napier (Paul and Braune's *Beiträge*, XXI, 575-576; XXIII, 571 ff.) in reply to Kögel (Paul's *Grundriss*, 1st ed., I, 1017, note).

⁴ No one, it is to be hoped, will maintain that *Gorgol* is a corruption of *Garulf*, which Marie gives as the Norman equivalent of *bisclavret* ("Garulf [var. *garwal*] l'apelent li Normun"). This would doubtless be maintained by any one who wished to derive G from Marie's lay. Such a theorist, however, would have to account not only for G, but for M and I; for it has been proved, beyond cavil, that G and I have a common source (y) and that y and M have a common source (x). In other words, the theorist in question would have to derive x from B. This hypothesis would encounter many difficulties, already pointed out in the course of the argument, and finally, it would force its upholder to explain why *Gorgol* occurs (or something that may certainly be identified with it) as the name of certain actual Welshmen in the twelfth century and of actual Bretons in the eighth and ninth. To be sure, *Gorgol* shows some similarity to *Garulf*, but that is not strange if Rhys's theory of the Welsh name *Gurguol* as = *werewolf* is correct, for *garulf* is the Germanic *wariwulf*.

⁵ The MS. has both *Gorlagon* and *Gorlogan*, and *Gorlogam* occurs once (c. 23).

⁶ *Gurgalan* (Potvin, p. 65), *Gurgalain* (p. 72), *Gorgalan* (pp. 73, 74), *Gorgaranz* (p. 74). The episode is curious. *Gorgalan* has the sword with which John the Baptist was beheaded. Many have sought to win it of him, but nobody has ever returned. Gawain essays the quest at a favorable moment, when *Gorgalan*'s

Side by side with Breton *-uual* (*-gual*), which does not occur out of composition, we have the form *Uuallon*, which is found a good many times in the Redon Cartulary both as a proper name by itself¹ and as the second part of compound proper names. It corresponds exactly to the Welsh *-guallaun*. We may cite the following pairs²:

BRETON		WELSH	
.	Cat-uualion	Cat-gual	Cat-guallaun
Drid-uual	Drid-uualion		
Dum-uual	Dum-uualion	Dum-gual	Dun-guallaun
Iarn-uual	Iarn-uualion		
Iud-uual	Iud-uualion	Iud-gual ³	Iud-guallaun
Iun-uual	Iun-uualion		
Tut-uual	Tut-uualion	Tuta-gual (Tut-wal)

Clearly *uualion* (Welsh *-guallaun*) is a derivative of *-uual* (Welsh *-gual*), probably with the adjective suffix *-ion* (Welsh *-laun*),⁴ or, at all events, *uualion* was early associated with *-uual* in the Welsh-Breton etymological consciousness, and names in *-uualion* (*-guallaun*) were

son has been carried off by a giant. Gawain recovers the son's body, which is then cooked by the king and eaten by his men. The grateful heathen gives Gawain the sword and receives baptism. Evidently something pretty savage has been imperfectly toned down. I do not know of the name elsewhere in French. *Gorgolians* (nom.), the name of a brother of Julien li Gros (prose *Perceval*, ed. Potvin, p. 3) is perhaps a different word. *Gargeolain* is the name of Ruvalen's *amie* in an intensely Celtic episode in the prose *Tristan* of MS. Bibl. Nat. fr. 103. But this is still another name. Eilhart, who draws from the same source (Bérout) as MS. 103, calls the lady *Gariöle*. See Bédier's edition of a long passage from the manuscript, *Romania*, XV, 496 ff. (especially p. 484). I cannot refrain from comparing Tristan's sport with the rushes in this episode with Cuchulinn's needle-feat in the *Fled Bricrend*, 65 (Windisch, I, 286-287; Henderson, p. 82).

¹ See De Courson's index, and cf. Loth, *Chrestomathie*, I, 171-172, 207-208. There is also a name *Uuallonic*.

² The Breton forms are from the Redon Cartulary (see De Courson's index, and cf. Loth, I, 171-172); the Welsh forms are from the genealogies in MS. Harl. 3859 (end of 11th or beginning of 12th century), thought to have been collected in the 10th century, ed. Phillimore, *Cymmrodor*, IX, 169 ff. (see Anscombe's index, *Archiv f. Celtische Lexicographie*, I, 187 ff.), or from charters in the *Book of Llan Dâw*, ed. Evans and Rhys.

³ Cf. Loth, *Revue Celtique*, XI, 145.

⁴ See, however, Glück, *Die bei Caesar vorkommenden Keltischen Namen*, pp. 49, 164-5, 178 ff.; cf. Kossina, *Idg. Forsch.*, II, 181.

freely formed from those in *-ual* (*-gual*). Nothing hinders us, therefore, from adding to the pairs already cited :

BRETON : — Uur-uual, Uur-gual :

* Uur-uallon.

WELSH : — Gurgal, Guorguol, Guruol, Gurguol :

* Gur-guallaun.

Thus the *Gorlagon* (*Gorlogan*) of our version **G** appears to be an easy metathesis for **Gorgolan*, corresponding to the *Gorgalan* of the prose *Perceval* and to a lost Welsh **Gurguallaun*. And if *Gorgol* means "werewolf," *Gorlagon* (**Gorgolan*) means practically the same thing.

The other name *Gorbeil*, *Gorleil*, or *Gorliel* has so uncertain a form that it is idle to dogmatize about it. The second syllable, *-beil*, is conceivably a corruption of Welsh *Beli* (Breton *Bili*, *-bili*, *-uili*), in which case *Gorbeil* may be compared with the Breton name *Uuor-uili* (*Guor-uili*, *Uur-uili*).¹ Another possibility is that we have in the second syllable (*-beil*?) a corruption of the Welsh *bela* (*bala*), "wolf," "wolf's cub."² This would give us "werewolf" as the meaning of *Gorbeil* as well as of *Gorgol* and *Gorlagon*, and the condition of things would agree exactly with our inference (made on other grounds than those of etymology) that the "three brothers" of **G** were originally three separate manifestations of one and the same person. But *Gorbeil* is a rather dubious reading to operate with, and the case is good enough without it.

Whether the etymologies suggested for *Gorgol*, *Gorbeil* (?), and *Gorlagon* are right or wrong, the names are unquestionably not Irish, and therefore cannot have stood in **y**. They are either Welsh or Armorican. Between these two languages it is impossible to decide on the basis of the forms preserved in the Latin **G**. **G** is certainly rendered from a prose text, either Welsh or Breton, which was similar in style and general character to the "Four Branches" of the Welsh

¹ For these names, see De Courson's indexes; Loth, I, 110, 178 (cf. 191, note 2); index to *Book of Llan Dâu*; *Red Book of Hergest*, ed. Rhys and Evans, II, index.

² So defined by Silvan Evans, *Dictionary*, following Owen Pughe. The word is rare, however, and its meaning doubtful. Professor Robinson refers me to Loth's discussion of *bala* (*Archiv f. kelt. Lexicographie*, I, 457-458), where "fox" is suggested.

Mabinogi. No such texts are preserved in Armorican. The passage from the Irish *y* to Wales would be a shorter journey than the passage from *y* to Brittany; indeed, the latter itinerary would involve, in all likelihood, an actual transit through Wales. It is, then, much easier and more natural to regard the immediate original of the Latin *G* as a Welsh than as an Armorican version of the Irish *y*; and accordingly I have adopted that hypothesis. It accords with the well-known influence of Irish literature upon that of Wales.

The Welsh hypothesis may perhaps be strengthened by certain special considerations. The rationalization of *G* in one significant particular has already been mentioned and accounted for. In *x* the wife was certainly a *fée* and she was not punished for abandoning her mortal husband. These features were not abandoned by *y*, as is shown by their preservation in *I*. In *G*, however, the insertion of an Oriental tale, *The Dog and the Lady*, has necessitated a complete change in the lady's nature,—she is no longer a *fée*, but a mere woman, conceived after the cynical manner of the East. The insertion of this tale and the consequent rationalization of the story may be ascribed to the Latin translator, who was doubtless a clerk,¹ and therefore likely to be familiar with such material; *The Dog and the Lady*, we should remember, was afterwards made a part of the *Gesta Romanorum*,² a monkish collection of *exempla* for the use of preachers. In the Welsh text, then, of which *G* is a translation, the Other-World character of the lady was probably preserved. With this in view, it is pleasant to find in the *mabinogi* of *Pwyll Prince of Dyvet* a tale which resembles, in general outline, as well as in some particular features, the fairy mistress story of *x* and *y*. Rhiannon, Pwyll's wife, is certainly a *fée*, and his first interview with her is similar to Melion's with the (fairy) Princess of Ireland and Eochaid's with Etain of the *side*. Pwyll sees Rhiannon as the result of sitting on a marvellous mound (or seat).³ He asks whence she comes, and why, and who she is. She replies that she has come to seek him, mentions her parentage, and adds: "Je n'ai voulu d'aucun homme, et cela par amour

¹ Note his quotation from *Catonis Disticha* in chap. 14 (see p. 157, above).

² See p. 247, below.

³ Lady Guest, *Mabinogion*, III, 46; Loth, I, 38 ff.

pour toi, et je ne voudrai jamais de personne, à moins que tu ne me repousses." This is remarkably like the *Tochmarc Etaine* and the *Lai de Melion*. We may also compare Pwyll's reply with that of Eochaid: "If I had my choice of all the women and maidens in the world," says Pwyll, "it is thou that I should choose."¹

Nor does the parallel end here. Pwyll is subsequently deprived of Rhiannon by Gwawl, an old suitor of hers, but follows her to Gwawl's abode and wins her back. All these correspondences between the *mabinogi* on the one hand and **M** and the *Tochmarc Etaine* on the other, point to such a resemblance between native Welsh fairy-literature and the Irish story of which **y** was a version as would have made the naturalization of **y** in Wales (according to our hypothesis) the simplest thing imaginable. Add to all this the fact that the *mabinogi* of *Pwyll* likewise contains the incident of the *Hand and the Child* (which, as we have seen,² stood in **y**, though not in **x**) and the hypothesis that favors a Welsh (rather than an Armorican) translation of **y** as the immediate source of the Latin **G** must be admitted as extremely probable.³

Finally, the resemblance between extant Welsh literature and the story that we are investigating extends even to some of the werewolf elements.

In the fourth branch of the *Mabinogi* (*Math, Son of Mathonwy*), Math strikes with his enchanted ring his nephews Gwydyon and Gilvaethwy, sons of Don, and transforms them successively into a doe

¹ Lady Guest, III, 51; Loth, I, 44. With the year's postponement in *Pwyll*, cf. *Tochmarc Emire*, *Arch. Rev.*, I, 304; Haupt's *Ztsch.*, XXXII, 240-241; Hull, *Cuchullin Saga*, p. 82.

² See p. 168; cf. pp. 222 ff.

³ It might even be contended that the elements in *Pwyll* which we have been comparing with **x** and **y** are borrowings from Irish (perhaps from **y** itself). This, however, is not my opinion (except, perhaps, with reference to the *Hand and the Child*). For our immediate purpose, the point is of no moment. The presence in Welsh literature of these close parallels to the remoter original of **G** must certainly give us confidence in choosing between Wales and Armorica as the country in which the immediate original of **G** was written,—it being remembered that the proper names in **G** (which cannot have stood in the Irish **y**) point *either* to Brittany or to Wales. On the resemblance between the story of Rhiannon and the *Tochmarc Etaine*, cf. Anwyl, *Ztsch. f. celt. Phil.*, I, 288-289.

and a deer, a boar and a sow, a pair of wolves.¹ Each transformation is accompanied by a speech, in terms practically identical, and always including the provision that they shall have the instincts of the animals in question: "Vous aurez les instincts des animaux dont vous avez la forme"; "Vous aurez les mêmes instincts que les porcs des bois"; "Ayez les instincts des animaux dont vous avez la forme." Compare the formula in *Arthur and Gorlagon*: "Sis lupus et habeas sensum lupi" (c. 6). Math restores his nephews to human form with a stroke of the same magic ring.²

In view of what has been said, the fact that G is a translation or adaptation from the Welsh can hardly be denied. The lost Welsh document, if we had it, would prove to be very similar to some of the tales in the extant *mabinogion*. It may almost be described as a lost "branch" of that collection, though actually it was a translation or adaptation from the Irish, like some things in the extant *mabinogion*.

¹ Loth, *Mabinogion*, I, 132 ff. On the remark "vous avez eu la grande honte d'avoir des enfants l'un de l'autre" (I, 134), cf. *Lokasenna*, sts. 23, 33; *Helgakviða Hundingsbana I*, sts. 38, 39 (Bugge); *Hyndluljóð*, st. 40 (Bugge); *Gylfaginning*, c. 42. Observe that the hero consorts with a she-wolf in G and that the pair, and their two whelps, correspond to the band of wolves in M and in some versions of I (see p. 180). Probably G here preserves an old incident which has been softened or suppressed in all other versions. Doubtless it stood not only in y and x but in the Irish *Werewolf's Tale* proper (O), the source of B. In B, however, there is no mention of a band of wolves. This may be taken as further testimony that x is not derived from B, if more evidence is needed.

Paris has subjected the ignominious punishment inflicted on the enchanter Éliavrès by the elder Caradoc to a learned and ingenious examination, with happy results (*Rom.*, XXVIII, 217, note). He has overlooked, however, the excessively curious episode in the *mabinogi* of *Math Son of Mathonwy*, which furnishes a striking parallel. In the *mabinogi*, as in the *Perceval*, the initial offence is an intrigue with the prince's favorite or wife. All this may go to support the present text of the *Livre de Caradoc* and to vacate Paris's conjecture that the incident has been transferred from an earlier portion of the poem and shifted from Caradoc Senior to Éliavrès. At all events, though no one would think of deriving the incident in *Math* from that in the *Perceval*, or *vice versa*, the parallel certainly aids in establishing not only a Celtic but a specifically Welsh source as that from which the adventures of Caradoc (or some of them) made their way into French, and so confirms the arguments of Lot (*Rom.*, XXVIII, 578); see also Rhys, *Celtic Folklore*, II, 689-690, 694 (note to pp. 579-580).

² There is also a werewolf incident in *Kulhwch and Olwen* (Loth, I, 266).

themselves.¹ Whether the Arthurian elements were added by the Welsh redactor or by the author of the Latin *G* cannot be determined, — very likely by the latter.

The date at which the Welsh version was made cannot be fixed. If *Gorgol* means “werewolf,” however, the Welsh version must have arisen before the etymological signification of the term had lapsed from the Welsh consciousness, since the name was the insertion of the Welsh redactor. We do not know how early this sense was lost, but, on the other hand, nothing prevents our putting the Welsh version pretty far back. The Latin text itself is preserved in a manuscript of about the age of the *Red Book of Hergest*.

V. THE FRAME-STORY IN VERSION *y*.

The most striking distinction between *x* and *y* is, as we have seen, the fact that in *y* *The Werewolf's Tale*, which stands by itself in *x* (see *M* and cf. *B*), is told by the Werewolf, under compulsion, to a quester who is in duty bound to learn it. This method of introducing a story is not unexampled. It is familiar to all readers of Irish *märchen*. Nor are instances wanting in which a tale occurs both without such an introduction (like *B* and *x*) and with it (like *y*). An excellent example is the favorite Irish story called *The Fairy Palace of the Quicken Trees*. This is found without the frame in no less than fourteen versions.² In five

¹ See p. 245, below.

² (1) J. F. Campbell, *Revue Celtique*, I, 193 ff.; (2) MacDougall, *Folk and Hero Tales*, pp. 56 ff.; (3) MS. of 1600 in the Advocates' Library, Edinburgh, cited by MacDougall, p. 270; (4) Dunstaffnage MS. of 1603, in the same, cited *ibid.*, p. 271, printed by J. F. Campbell, *Leabhar na Féinne*, pp. 86 ff., and imperfectly summarized by the same, *Pop. Tales of the West Highlands*, II, 187, and fully by MacDougall, pp. 271 ff.; (5) J. F. Campbell, *Pop. Tales*, II, 168 ff.; (6) another MS. in the Advocates' Library, cited by MacDougall, p. 271; (7) Joyce, *Old Celtic Romances*, pp. 177 ff., from three Irish MSS., of 1733, 1766, 1841 (p. xiv); (8) Curtin, *Hero-Tales*, pp. 407 ff.; (9) J. G. Campbell, *The Fians*, pp. 233 ff.; (10) the same, p. 74 (summarized); (11) Curtin, *Myths and Folk-Lore*, pp. 221 ff.; (12) the same, pp. 281 ff.; (13) the same, pp. 292 ff.; (14) Kennedy, *Bardic Stories of Ireland*, pp. 116 ff. Cf. also *The Chase of Slieve Fuad*, Joyce, pp. 362 ff. (and the poem published by O'Daly, *Transactions of the Ossianic Society*, VI, 20 ff.).

versions,¹ however, it has precisely the kind of introduction that we are investigating: a quester is compelled to discover "what has kept the King of Erin cheerless and laughterless for the last seven years" (or the like); the king objects to telling his story, since it involves the disclosure of a disagreeable and humiliating experience, but he yields to *force majeure*.

The pressure exerted to elicit the story may be physical, or consist in threats of death or violence. On the other hand, it may assume a finer form (as in G).² King Arthur comes upon Gorlagon at table, but refuses to dismount and join in the feast until he gets the story.³ Gorlagon pauses several times in his narrative to repeat his invitation: "Arture, descende et comede," but to no purpose; he is forced to continue. The compulsion is involved in the disgrace that befalls a host whose hospitality is rejected.⁴ It is a kind of ceremonial interdict: he must not go on with the banquet till his guest is content to share it. A striking instance of this method of moral suasion may be seen in one of Larminie's West Irish tales⁵: A great feast has been prepared for Finn by Pampogue, but he declares that "he will not eat a bit until Pampogue grants him a request." Pampogue replies that she "will grant any request except to let her husband go to fight with the Blauheen Bloyë," — an expedition which she is sure will be his death. "Unless you grant me that," says Finn, "I will not eat any food." "Sooner than you should be without eating, I

¹ (15) MacInnes, *Folk and Hero Tales*, pp. 72-73; (16) Curtin, *Myths and Folk-Lore*, pp. 121 ff.; (17) the same, pp. 256 ff.; (18) the same, pp. 428 ff.; (19) the same, *Hero-Tales*, pp. 477 ff.

² For other instances of extorted stories, see Larminie, pp. 45, 151, 171.

³ For the heroic lengths to which a king might be expected to go when his hospitality was impugned, see *The Destruction of Dá Derga's Hostel*, cap. 63, ed. by Stokes, *Revue Celtique*, XXII, 60, 61.

⁴ The mounted messenger (or the like) riding into the hall and refusing to get off his horse till his boon is granted is a familiar figure in Arthurian romance. We should also remember King Arthur's habit of refusing to eat, on a high day, until some adventure had happened (Child, *Ballads*, I, 257, note †; III, 51, and note §). There is a striking Irish parallel in the shorter *Fled Bricrend* (from the *Yellow Book of Lecan*), Windisch, *Irische Texte*, II, i, 174, 188: "It is not fitting to consume this feast of mine without a brave deed of the Ulstermen in return for it."

⁵ *West Irish Folk-Tales*, pp. 76-77.

will grant even that," replies Pampogue. A stronger instance, or one more thoroughly Celtic, could hardly be required.¹

We may safely infer that in *y* the compulsion exerted to get the story from the Werewolf consisted in refusing his hospitality (as in *G*).² This accords with the quester's vow not to eat (in *G*) — and with the requirement (in *I*) that he shall not eat twice at the same table — until he has learned what he wishes to know.

King Arthur's adventures on his way to the abode of Gorlagon have already been described: he visits successively Gorlagon's younger brothers, Gorgol and Gorbeil (?), and is cajoled by them both. We have seen reason to believe that Gorgol, Gorbeil, and Gorlagon are really one and the same person, — the Werewolf, who, to avoid telling his story, attempts to delude Arthur by meeting him at three different times and under three different names, — a device common in Irish legend (p. 201). In these preliminary adventures, *G* probably follows the plot of *y*,³ though the actual names of the masquerading Werewolf must first have made their appearance in the Welsh (p. 205). The similarity of the names may indicate that the Welsh redactor, who is responsible for them, understood the identity of the three "brothers"; and if all three of the names (or even two of them) mean "werewolf,"

¹ A very curious instance of moral pressure is in *Coise Céin (K'ian's Leg)*, MacInnes, pp. 235 ff. Here the hero refuses to allow his broken thigh to be treated until he has elicited story after story from the would-be healer. "Stretch forth your leg, Kian, that I may apply to it leaves of herbs and healing. Pressure and business are upon me; and I am under the necessity of going to the big church of Rome to-morrow to listen to joy." "I will not stretch forth my leg . . . until you tell me why . . ." And so on, time and time again, in this extraordinary conglomerate of stories. See J. G. Campbell, *Superstitions of the Highlands and Islands of Scotland*, p. 132.

² In *I* the quester first steals the sword of light and then threatens to kill the Werewolf with it unless he shall tell the story. The sword of light (as we shall see presently) was not in *y*. *I*, then, has certainly departed from *y* in its account of the means which the quester adopts to make the Werewolf answer his question. In *J* the Werewolf gives up the sword and tells the story readily enough when the quester has passed two dragon guards.

³ *I* here leaves us in the lurch. It has taken in an independent tale, *The Sword of Light* (see pp. 213 ff.), and the combination obscures the original course of the narrative. Yet even *I* affords a trace of the situation in *y*: in *KJ*, the Werewolf is the brother of the quester's father-in-law and of the challenger.

there can be no doubt that he comprehended the situation perfectly. The Latin translator, however, failed to grasp the device. He took the three "brothers" for three distinct characters, and accordingly equated Gorgol with the king who befriended the Werewolf¹ and effected his restoration to human form.

In both **G** and **I** the faithless wife is present while the tale is told. Much is made of her presence in **I**, and it was doubtless a feature of **y**.²

The occasion of the quest for "the cause of the one story" in **y** must remain a matter of conjecture. In **I** the adventurer is required to learn the story as the penalty for losing a game to a supernatural challenger. This is an excellent Irish incident, but the evidence of **I** is worthless here, since the gambling incident is borrowed from a distinct tale which **I** combines with **y** to make the frame-story.³ In **G** we find an exceedingly lively and picturesque introduction:

Arthur is holding his Pentecostal feast at Caerleon. After dinner, in the joy of his heart, he throws his arms about his wife, as she sits by his side, and kisses her in the presence of the assembled court. Scandalized at such a breach of decorum, the queen blushes furiously and asks the reason for his undignified behavior. "Quod nichil mihi in diuiciis gratius," "nil in deliciis te constat suavius," is the amatorious response. "If you love me so much," rejoins the queen, "you must believe yourself well acquainted with my mind and will." Says Arthur, "Your mind, I am confident, is well-disposed towards me, and I am sure I understand your will." "You are mistaken!" she replies, "You have never known a woman's nature (*ingenium*) or her mind." "Omnia celi obtestor numina," cries the angry king, "if I have hitherto been ignorant of these matters, I will never taste food till I discover them!" And he sets out, with Kay his steward (*Caius*) and Gawain (*Walwainus*) his nephew, to visit King Gorgol and learn the secret.

This reminds one of the introductory incident in the *Pèlerinage Charlemagne*,⁴ but it would be overhasty to infer that it is borrowed

¹ Cap. 23, p. 162.

² See p. 220.

³ See pp. 214 ff.

⁴ The *Pèlerinage* is here (as elsewhere) closely paralleled by the fragmentary English ballad of *King Arthur and King Cornwall* (Child, no. 30, I, 274 ff.). Child at first regarded the ballad as "an imitation or a traditional variation" of the French *chanson* (I, 274), but was induced to change his mind and to refer the

from that poem. In the first place, we are not to suppose that the feature in question first came into existence when the *Pèlerinage* was composed. It is rather an incident which the author of the poem knew independently of the story of the *Pèlerinage* and which he utilized (with superb effect) to motivate Charlemagne's journey.¹ And, in the second place, there is considerable difference between the incident in the *Pèlerinage* and that in *Arthur and Gorlagon*. The two incidents simply belong to the same general type of popular legend.

VI. PECULIARITIES OF THE IRISH VERSION (I).

We have seen that the Irish *märchen* (I) is distinguished from all other versions in three ways: (1) the husband passes through a succession of metamorphoses²; (2) the frame-story is complicated by a quest for the Sword of Light, and (3) the incident of the *Defence of the Child* is expanded in a manner quite out of proportion to the modest place which it occupied in *y*. The first of these peculiarities needs no discussion; it is an easy and natural elaboration of the single transformation which stood in *y*. The other two special features of I, however, require particular study.

VII. THE QUEST FOR THE SWORD OF LIGHT.

In *y*, as we have seen, *The Werewolf's Tale* of *x* was inserted in a frame-story: a quester is required to learn the "cause of the one

two to a common source by the arguments of Paris, *Hist. Litt.*, XXX, 110-111 (see *Ballads*, III, 503). More recently, Dr. W. D. Briggs has argued strongly in favor of Professor Child's first opinion (*Journ. of Germanic Philology*, III, 342 ff.). For parallel stories see Paris, *Romania*, IX, 8 ff., and *Hist. Litt.*, XXX, 94; Child, I, 279, 282-283. In the unpublished French *Rigomer* and in Heinrich von dem Türlin's *Crône* (vv. 3313 ff.), there is a somewhat similar scene attached to the Arthurian cycle. Dr. K. G. T. Webster, who is investigating the history of Guinevere, has subjected *Arthur and Cornwall* to a searching examination and finds new grounds for referring it and the *Pèlerinage* to a common source; but I must not anticipate his results.

¹ Paris (*Rom.*, IX, 8) has pointed out that the *Pèlerinage* combines two stories, originally distinct, — (1) the king who visits his rival, and (2) the pilgrimage proper.

² So in *KJLHO'FC*₁*C*₂, but not in *S*.

story about women," or he puts himself under bonds to learn it. In I this frame-story is complicated by an additional quest, — the adventurer must secure the Sword of Light. This weapon turns out to be in the possession of the same person who knows the story. The quester secures the sword first, and uses it as a means of compelling the Werewolf to tell the tale.

Fortunately, *The Quest for the Sword of Light* occurs,¹ in a form almost identical with that in I, but quite out of connection with *The Werewolf's Tale*, in a Scottish Gaelic *märchen*. Two versions of this *märchen* have been printed, both in Gaelic and in English: J. F. Campbell's *Young King of Easaidh Ruadh* (c)² and MacInnes's *Herding of Cruachan* (m).³

The hero plays (shinty m; a game not specified c) with a wizard-champion (*gruagach*). He wins the first game and takes as his prize a "little untidy, swarthy woman cleaning the byre" ("cropped rough-skinned girl behind the door" c: in c, but not in m, she becomes beautiful when she reaches his house). The second time he wins and takes a "dun shaggy filly." The third day he goes to play (against his new wife's advice, who has informed him that his opponent is her father c) and loses. The wizard-champion requires him to get "the white sword of light that the King of Sorcha has" ("the Glaive of light of the King of the Oak Windows" c).⁴

¹ Sword-quests occur everywhere, and the Sword of Light is a familiar weapon in fairy-tales. We are here concerned, however, with a particular form of this quest. Still, it may be worth while to compare Larminie, pp. 206 ff.

² *Popular Tales of the West Highlands*, no. 1, I, 1 ff. In another version still, summarized by J. F. Campbell, I, 18 ff., the *Quest of the Sword* is wanting, probably from a lapse of memory. It is barely possible, however, that we have in this version the tale as it existed before the *Quest of the Sword* was compounded with it. The recovery of a stolen wife from a giant whose soul is out of his body, and the capture of the soul by the aid of animals, form a well-known incident in folk-literature. See, for example, Nutt's note to MacInnes, pp. 455 ff., and Köhler's remarks in *Orient and Occident*, II, 101-102.

³ *Folk and Hero Tales*, no. 4, pp. 94 ff. Curtin's *Son of the King of Erin and the Giant of Loch Léin, Myths and Folk-Lore*, pp. 32 ff., begins as if it belonged to this set, but goes on later with a different type of story (MacInnes's no. 1, pp. 2 ff.; see Nutt's note p. 431).

⁴ "Claidheamh soluis rìgh nan uinneagan daraich" (Campbell, p. 13); "Claidheamh geal soluis a th' aig rìgh na Sorcha" (MacInnes, p. 102).

From this point the order of events differs in *c* and *m*, though the incidents themselves are the same to all intents and purposes. I follow *c* first, returning to *m* later.

His wife consoles him, and he sets out on the filly, who, the lady tells him, will give him all necessary instruction. The filly carries him to the castle of the King of the Oak Windows and tells him what to do. The king is at dinner, and the sword is in his chamber. The hero steals the sword, which gives a sort of *sgread* as it comes out of the sheath. There is a great pursuit, but all fall behind except the King of the Oak Windows, mounted on the brother of the filly, who is swifter even than she. As the pursuer is passing, the hero, acting under his filly's instructions, strikes off his head with the sword. He then mounts the swifter horse, the filly follows, and they reach home in safety.

His wife receives him gladly and tells him what to do when he meets the *gruagach* on the morrow. The *gruagach* is the brother of the King of the Oak Windows. He will ask the hero how he got the sword. The latter must answer: "If it were not the knob that was on its end, I had not got it." When the *gruagach* "gives himself a lift" to look at the alleged knob, the hero will see a mole on the right side of his neck, and he must then stab the *gruagach* in the mole. The hero does as he is told, and the *gruagach* falls dead.

When the hero returns home after this encounter, he finds that his wife and the two horses have been carried off by a giant. He sets out in pursuit, and falls in successively with a dog, a hawk, and an otter, who direct him on his way.¹ At last he finds his wife and the horses in a chasm [which is the giant's den]. The woman hides her husband and cajoles the giant when he returns and smells human flesh. She induces the giant to tell her where his soul resides [for it appears that he is one of those monsters, familiar in folklore, who have no soul in their body].² There is a flagstone under the threshold; under the stone is a wether; there is a duck in the wether's belly, and an egg in the belly of the duck; in the egg is the giant's soul. The hero and his wife remove the stone. They catch the animals and get the egg, by the help of the dog, the hawk, and the otter. The lady crushes the egg, and the giant, who is on his way home, falls dead. Then the couple return to their own country, taking with them much of the giant's gold and silver.

¹ I have condensed the tale very much at this point.

² Here, too, I have condensed. It takes three days to carry out the lady's plot. The details follow a well-known type of *märchen* (see p. 214, note 2).

MacInnes's *Herding of Cruachan* (m), as I have already observed, has the adventures in a different order:

When the hero returns after his third game with the wizard-champion, he finds that "the big giant, King of Sorcha," has stolen his wife and the filly. Consequently the quest for the Sword of Light and the search for the stolen wife are included in a single journey. The hero is assisted by animals (as in Campbell): four, however, instead of three, — a hawk, a duck, a fox, and an otter, each of whom inhabits a little house. The concealment of the giant's soul is more elaborate than in c, and all four of the helpful animals, as well as one of the giant's horses (which seems to correspond to the swifter of the two steeds in c), are needed to get it. When the giant is dead, the hero and his wife return home, taking with them "all the gold and silver that the giant had, his white sword of light, the big dappled horse, and the shaggy dun filly."

On their reaching home, the hero's wife tells him how to outwit the wizard-champion. He is to give him the sword. The champion will then boast of the weapon, and the hero is to reply that it has a flaw. The wizard-champion will say, "Show me the flaw." The hero is then to take the sword and cut off the champion's head, with the remark "This is the flaw that it has." The programme is duly carried out. Thus the outwitting of the champion comes at the end of the tale in m and not (as in c) in the middle.

This story, whether in Campbell's version or in MacInnes's, manifestly consists of two independent tales, more or less skilfully welded together: (1) *The Quest for the Sword of Light*, and (2) *The Abduction of the Wife*, and her rescue, with the death of the giant. It is the first of these that furnished I with the frame in which *The Werewolf's Tale* is set.¹

¹ Whether the author of I (that is, the person who inserted in y *The Quest of the Sword of Light*) knew *The Quest* in combination with the *Abduction of the Wife* (substantially as in Campbell and MacInnes) is not to be determined. Probably he did not; at all events, he did not utilize the *Abduction*. One version of I (O'Foharta's) shows practically the whole of the combined *märchen* (*Quest of the Sword* plus *Abduction of Wife*). O'F, indeed, affords a version of this tale which is in some respects better preserved than either Campbell's *Young King* or MacInnes's *Herding of Cruachan*, for it motivates the gratitude of the beasts. It also shows a trace of an incident found elsewhere in MacInnes (p. 111) only, — the dancing of the helpful animals (p. 488). It is clear, however, that O'F departs from

The manner in which *The Quest for the Sword of Light* has been utilized to complicate the frame-story of *The Werewolf's Tale* in I is rather ingenious. The introductory incident of the *Quest* is adopted in its entirety.

The hero¹ is thrice victorious in gaming with a mysterious stranger: he wins a beautiful wife, a magic horse, a castle, etc.² He loses the fourth game, and the stranger requires him, as a penalty, never to eat two meals

I in thus including the *Abduction of the Wife*, for the inclusion disorders the story. We may infer that O'F was made up by some reciter who knew I (*The Werewolf's Tale* combined with the *Quest of the Sword*) and was also familiar with the double *märchen* represented by Campbell's *Young King* and MacInnes's *Herding* (*Quest of Sword* combined with *Abduction of Wife*), and who chose (or chanced) to increase the complexity of I by including the whole of the double *märchen*.

¹ In L the hero is called Morraha (cf. p. 254, note 1); in O'F he is Murrogh, son of Brian Boru; in C₁, he is "Art, the king's son"; in C₂, Arthur, a cotter's son; in HS he is son of the king of Ireland (but no name is given him); in KJ he also has no name but is described as a *sgológ* or "small farmer."

² The versions of I differ slightly. In S there are two winning games, the prizes being the woman who is riding behind the challenger, and the horse; the third game is lost. S agrees pretty closely here with Campbell's *Young King* and MacInnes's *Herding of Cruachan*, and may perhaps be more correct than the other versions of I; three games in all, two won and one lost, seem to accord with reason and symmetry. It is not impossible that this gambling adventure was in some form a part of y; it presents a striking parallel to the chess-play between Mider and Eochaid in the *Tochmarc Etaine*. See d'Arbois, *Cours*, II, 315 ff. In L, the hero wins sheep on the first day, cattle on the second, a castle and the fairest of women on the third; the horse he procures by shaking a magic bridle which belongs to his wife. K agrees substantially, but lacks the incident of the bridle; the horse comes with the woman. C₂ is much the same, but the horse is replaced by a hound. In O'F he wins riches, castle, and lady, all in one game, and loses the second game. In C₁ he wins "the finest woman on earth, with twelve attendant maidens and thirteen horses," in the first game and loses the second. In H he wins his wife by the first game (the magician takes him to his castle and gives him his choice of many beauties, but he takes a girl from the kitchen at her own suggestion; she becomes beautiful while they are riding home); cattle by the second (but he loses them by a trick); by the third, cattle *that remain*; his choice of horses by the fourth (he chooses a poor-looking mare); he loses the fifth game. In J he wins money by the first game, the fairest of women by the second, and loses the third; his wife procures the horse by means of a magic thread (cf. L). C₁, it should be noted, is the second adventure in a long composite.

off one table and never to sleep two nights in the same house¹ till he brings him the sword of light and "the knowledge of the cause of the one story about women."²

Version *y*, as we have already seen (p. 200), must have contained the requirement to bring "the cause of the one story"; to this is added, in *I*, the demand for the Sword of Light, and thus the

¹ So *KLC₂O'F*, in almost identical words. In *O'F*, however, the requirement is laid upon the hero on another occasion (p. 216, note). In *H* the challenger uses a different formula. In *C₁* the formula is missing: the challenger says simply, "You are to bring me the sword of light and the story of the man who has it." For *S*, see note 2. Observe that *G* shows a trace of the formula that is found in *KLC₂O'F*: King Arthur swears a great oath "nunquam cibo fruar donec ea me nosse contingat." Some such formula must, therefore, have stood in *y*. We cannot tell how the requirement came to be laid upon the hero in *y* (see p. 212); perhaps *G*, with its undignified kissing in public, is a good representative of *y*.

² The words quoted are from *O'F* (*fios fáth an aon sgeíl ar na mnaíbh*), but *K* has almost the same thing (*fios fáth an aon sceil*, i.e. "the knowledge of the cause of the one story"; mistranslated by Kennedy "perfect narrative of the unique story"). The similarity of *G*, in which King Arthur sets out to discover the "ingenium mensque feminae," is evidence enough that *O'F* is here close to *y*, except for the sword of light, which is peculiar to *I*. *L* and *S* both show a corruption. *L* has "till you bring me the sword of light and the news of the death of Anshgayliacht." This strange name (which Larminie, p. 252, interprets as *an sgeeliacht*, "the Story-Telling") obviously contains the Irish word *scél* ("story") preserved in *O'F* and *K*. In *H* the hero is to "bring the sword of light of the son of the King of the Speckled Peak and the story, who killed the Antichrist (*sgeula cia mharbh an t-An-Chriosdaigh*)." *An-Chriosdaigh* (like *Anshgayliacht* in *L*) is the name of the monster who has stolen the children. *H* is farther gone in corruption than *L*. *S* has "I lay as crosses and charms upon you that water leave not your shoe till you find out how the Great Tuairisgeul was put to death (*ciamar a chaidh an Tuairisgeul Mór a chur gu bás*)." *Tuairisgeul* (which J. G. Campbell glosses "description, report, calumny") is a compound of *sgeul* (the Scottish Gaelic form of Ir. *scél*, "story"). Thus *LHS* support *O'FK*. *LHS* form a group by themselves, since in them the title of the story is made into the name of a person and that person turns out to be the monster that stole the children. *LS* also agree in the shaking of the bridle, though the circumstances differ (see p. 217, note 2). For *C₁*, see note 1. *C₂* differs from all other versions in requiring the hero to find "the birth that has never been born, and that never will be." This comes from contamination with another story, — the tale of a champion who was, like Macduff, "not of woman born." *C₂* lacks the Sword of Light, as does *S* (but see p. 220, note 4). For the requirements in *J*, see p. 268.

independent *märchen* of the *Quest* for that weapon is incorporated in the frame-story of *The Werewolf's Tale*. I continues as follows:—

The hero fulfils his tasks by the aid of the horse which he has won with his (fairy) wife. This horse carries him (across the sea¹) to his father-in-law,² who receives him well and tells him what to do. Three times he rides, on three different horses (furnished by his father-in-law), to the residence of the terrible enchanter³ who has the sword and knows the story, summoning him to give up the one and tell him the other. He rides off as swiftly as possible after each summons, pursued by the enchanter. The first time, the enchanter cuts his horse in two; the second time, he cuts off his horse's hind-legs; the third, his blow is harmless.⁴ The enchanter is now weary,

¹ So in **KHJ**; through a loch **S**; through the sea (a road opening to King Under-the-Wave's realm) **C₁**; over three miles of fire, three miles of hill covered with steel thistles (or needles, Larminie, p. 253), and three miles of sea **L**. **C₂** lacks the horse (see next note).

² The father-in-law is manifestly a prince of the Other World. In **L** he is called King of France (Greece **KJ**). In **H** he is King of Speckled Peak in the Eastern World. In **C₁** he is King Under-the-Wave (a well-known Celtic character). In **C₂** the hero goes to the "castle of the son of the King of Lochlin" and becomes his retainer. He performs great services for his master (which have nothing to do with our tale) and finally brings back the wife of the king's son from a giant who had abducted her. In return he asks the solution of his problem. The king's son then brings out the old King of Lochlin, who has long been in hiding, and asks him for the answer. The king twice refuses to tell, but yields at last to the persuasion of a hot griddle. His story is a version of our *Werewolf's Tale*.

³ Rough Niall of the Speckled Rock **L**; the son of the King of the Speckled Peak **H**; Fiach O'Duda **K**; the Young Champion **J**. He turns out to be the Werewolf. In **KJ** he is one of three brothers, the other two being the hero's father-in-law and the person who sends the hero on the quest. In **HO'F** he is the brother of the hero's (fairy) wife. In **C₁** he is Balor Beimenach and is a son-in-law of the hero's father-in-law, King Under-the-Wave. In **C₂** (which has been much changed by contamination) he is the King of Lochlin, the father of the personage to whom the hero is sent; but **C₂** has nothing of the Sword of Light. In **S** he is an "old grey man" who lives on the farther side of a loch; nothing is said of his relationship to the other characters. In **L**, Anshgayliacht (see p. 218, note 2) is the brother of the gamester (but this must be an error).

⁴ So in **K**. In **L** the enchanter (1) cuts the horse in two, (2) cuts off half the horse and half the saddle, (3) cuts away the saddle from under him and the clothes from his back. The second stroke in **L** will not do; there should be a steady decrease in the damage done. But perhaps the third stroke in **L** is more nearly right than in **K**. In **C₁** the first blow cuts the horse in two behind the saddle; the

having been on the watch for three days and three nights, and falls asleep.¹ The hero returns, creeps into the bedroom, and steals the sword. He then rouses the enchanter and demands the story. The enchanter at first refuses; but his wife persuades him to tell it to save his head.² She is present while the story is told.³ When the story is finished, the hero returns to his own home with the sword.

The conclusion of *The Quest for the Sword of Light* is now utilized to bring I to a fitting end.

The hero takes the sword to the person who had sent him on his perilous journey, and tells him the tale.⁴ He does not deliver up the

second, just at the saddle; the third, with a piece of the saddle: that is, the blows increase in effectiveness. O'F agrees with K and L as to the first stroke; the second time the horse's tail is cut off (cf. K); the third time the hero finds the enchanter asleep and steals the sword. The owner follows him to the house of the hero's father-in-law. H resembles O'F, but there is no damage done to the hero's horse: the enchanter pursues him to the king's house on the first two nights, but on the third the sword is stolen. C₂ of course lacks the incident (see p. 219, note 2). In J dragons guard the castle and the occupant does nothing.

¹ So in L (but confused). In K the hero puts the enchanter to sleep with a magic harp, but K is very much elaborated at this point. In H the guards sleep only three nights every seven years; they are awakened on the first two nights by the shriek which the sword gives (cf. J. F. Campbell's *Young King*, p. 215, above), but on the third night the sword is in the hero's hand before it cries out. In J the guardian dragons are asleep on the third night.

² So in L₁. In HKJ the enchanter submits without parley. In O'F he requires the presence of his wife and imposes an extraordinary condition (for which cf. another story in Larminie, p. 74).

³ The presence of the wife while the story is told is an important feature, for it is common to I and G (see p. 212). It occurs in LJHO'F (LO'F are extremely racy here), but not in K. It must once have stood in C₁, which should here be compared with O'F. In C₂ and S it is of course lacking, on account of other changes.

⁴ What follows is given according to LC₁, in which the hero acts in accordance with the directions of the owner (the Werewolf). In H also the owner of the sword tells the hero what to do. The challenger will take the sword and will ask the hero if there is another so beautiful in the world; the hero is to assent conditionally: "It is beautiful, *but for* —." "What means your *but for*?" will be the reply; and the hero is to explain by taking the sword and cutting off the challenger's head; he is then to throw the sword into the air, as in L. In K the hero says "How shall I give you the sword?" and when the challenger replies "As you like," the hero cuts off his head with it (cf. J. F. Campbell's *Young King*

sword,¹ however, but quibbles as in Campbell's *Young King* and MacInnes's *Herding of Cruachan*. "I promised to bring the sword; I did not promise to give it to you." Then he throws the weapon into the air, and it returns to its owner.

¹ We may infer that, if he had done so, he would at once have been slain with it.

and MacInnes's *Herding of Cruachan*); this may be nearer the original. O'F ends with the conclusion of *The Werewolf's Tale*; the Werewolf says "So now you have the story of the Shining Sword and the knowledge of the cause of the one story about women," and there is nothing further. In J the challenger dies before the hero's return (cf. S, below); the hero keeps the sword. C₂S lack the sword.

The conclusion of S deserves attention. When the challenger "lays crosses and charms" on the hero to discover "how the Great Tuairisgeul was put to death," the latter (as his wife has bidden him) replies: "I lay the same charms upon you that you leave not this hillock till I return." On reaching home with the story, the hero is instructed by his wife to go to the hill and recount it to the challenger. "What is the good of it," he replies, "when the one bone of him does not stick to another to-day?" But the woman insists and the hero obeys. When the story is finished, the challenger "rises alive and well from the hillock." This cannot be quite right, for the hero should in some manner baffle or discomfit the challenger, as the other versions show. It is therefore fortunate that Mr. J. G. Campbell has put on record an additional incident, apparently from another reciter (*Scottish Celtic Review*, I, 141): "It is an addition to the tale that the one who imposed upon the Son of the King of Ireland the task of finding out how the great Tuairisgeul was put to death, and over whose place of decay and disappearance the King's son — by his wife's instructions — recounted . . . the manner of the Giant's death, was himself a son of the Great Tuairisgeul, and that as the story was being told he gradually rose out of the ground. Also, by the wife's instructions, his head was cut off before he got entirely clear of the ground, for then no one could withstand the young Giant's prowess." This may perhaps be taken as evidence that the Sword of Light was once present in S (as in LKJHO'FC₁). With S should be compared the beginning and the end of *MacCool, Ceadach Og, and the Fish-Hag* (Curtin, *Hero-Tales*, pp. 463 ff.). Here Fin loses a game of chess to the Fish-Hag. She says to him: "I place you under sentence of weighty druidic spells not to eat two meals off the one table, nor to sleep two nights in the one bed, nor to pass out by the door through which you came in, till you bring me the head of the Red Ox, and an account of what took the eye from the Doleful Knight of the Island, and how he lost speech and laughter." Fin then places the hag under spells "to stand on the top of that gable, . . . to have a sheaf of oats fixed on the gable beyond you, and to have no earthly food while I'm gone, except what the wind will blow through the eye of a needle fixed in front of you." When Fin returns, he finds the hag alive. She

This ends our discussion of the frame-story in I. We have found that the greater complication of I in this matter is not due to the loss of material in G, but to the inclusion in I of extraneous material which was not in y.

VIII. THE DEFENCE OF THE CHILD.

One of the main peculiarities of the group GI is its inclusion of an episode (not found in B or M) which we may call *The Defence of the Child*. This episode must have stood, in some form, in y, but not in x. It is a combination of two distinct tales, both of which exist, in many versions, independently of *The Werewolf's Tale*: (1) the exemplary anecdote of *The Faithful Dog* and (2) the wild narrative of *The Hand and the Child*.

The Faithful Dog is best known to English readers through the Hon. W. R. Spencer's poem, *Beth Gêlert, or the Grave of the Greyhound* (written in 1800), which localizes the adventure at the Welsh village of Bedd Gelert. This localization, however, cannot much antedate Spencer's poem. The tale occurs in *The Seven Sages* and

asks for the head, which he refuses to give her: "If I was bound to bring it, I was not bound to give it." On hearing this answer "the hag dropped to the earth, and became a few bones." Another version of this same story forms the second adventure in Curtin's *Fin MacCumhail, the Seven Brothers, and the King of France* (Curtin, *Myths and Folk-Lore of Ireland*, pp. 270 ff.). Fin's task is to bring "the head of Curucha na Gras and the sword [note this!] that guards his castle." He dooms the hag to fast under conditions similar to those just described. A companion tells Fin how to act. He is not to give the head and the sword to the hag, but only to show them to her. When she opens her mouth with delight, he is to strike her on the breast with the head. This is done and the hag falls dead. The first adventure in the tale has nothing to do with the second, though the two are artificially connected at the end; it is a version of *The Hand and the Child* and will be discussed presently (no. 5, p. 223, below). With the sentence passed on the hag by Fin cf. Curtin, *Hero-Tales*, p. 493. For the counter-spell imposed by the quester, see p. 255, note 3. Other cases of quibbling as to the fulfilment of conditions may be seen in Larminie, p. 205; Hyde-Dottin, *An Sgdaluidhe Gaedhealach*, p. 41. It is a common device in popular fiction. With the gradual rising of the dead man from the ground in S cf. Miss Dempster, *Folk-Lore of Sutherlandshire, Folk-Lore Journal*, VI, 160-1.

the Anglo-Latin and Middle English versions of the *Gesta Romanorum*, is extant in various Oriental forms (in the *Kalilah wa Dimnah*, the *Hitopadeṣa*, the *Pañcatantra*, and elsewhere), and is commonly regarded as of Eastern (perhaps Buddhistic) origin.¹ It is briefly as follows:

A favorite animal (weasel, ichneumon, dog) protects its master's child from the attack of a serpent or wolf and slays the assailant. The master, returning to his house, is met by the faithful creature, which is covered with blood, and, rashly assuming that it has destroyed the child, he kills it on the spot. Entering the chamber, the master finds his child safe and sound and discovers the dead body of the monster. Too late he repents of his hasty act.²

The second story, which I have called *The Hand and the Child*, is much more elaborate. We may first consider a group of six Celtic versions (nos. 1-6) which ascribe the adventure to Finn and are manifestly variants of a single highly elaborated tale. These are:—

(1) MacDougall, *Folk and Hero Tales*, no. 1, pp. 1 ff. (*How Finn Kept his Children for the Big Young Hero of the Ship, and how Bran was Found*); (2) J. G. Campbell, *The Fians*, pp. 204 ff. (*How Fionn found Bran*); (3) MacInnes, *Folk and Hero Tales*, no. 2, pp. 32 ff. (*Feunn Mac Cúail and the Bent Grey Lad*)³; (4) Kennedy, *Legendary Fictions of the Irish Celts*, pp. 227 ff. (*Beanriogain na Sciana Breaca*)⁴; (5) Curtin, *Myths and Folk-Lore of Ireland*, pp. 270 ff.

¹ See Benfey, *Pantschatantra*, *Einleitung*, § 201; Baring-Gould, *Curious Myths of the Middle Ages*, pp. 134 ff.; Clouston, *Popular Tales and Fictions*, II, 166 ff.; id., *A Group of Eastern Romances and Stories*, pp. 206 ff., 509-510, 513 ff.; id., *Book of Sindibād*, pp. 56 ff., 236 ff.; Knowles, *Folk-Tales of Kashmīr*, pp. 429-430; Jacobs, *Celtic Fairy Tales*, pp. 259 ff.; D. E. Jenkins, *Bedd Gelert, its Facts, Fancies, and Folk-Lore*, Portmadoc, 1899, pp. 56 ff. (cf. P. H. Emerson, *Welsh Fairy Tales*, pp. 19 ff.; Rhŷs, *Celtic Folklore*, II, 567; Frazer, *Pausanias*, V, 421-2).

² I have used the simpler form of the story, omitting the elaborations found in the Occidental *Seven Sages*. For further particulars see Additional Note, p. 269.

³ The tale consists of two parts, originally separate stories, which we may call (1) *The Bent Grey Lad*, and (2) *The King's Children*. Only the second part concerns us.

⁴ "The Queen with the Speckled Dagger"; or, "The Queen of the Many-Colored Bedchamber." From a MS.

(*Fin Mac Cumhail, the Seven Brothers and the King of France*)¹; (6) Curtin, *Hero-Tales of Ireland*, pp. 438 ff. (*Fin Mac Cool, the Three Giants, and the Small Men*).²

MacDougall's version (no. 1)³ is here summarized :

A Big Young Hero sails to shore and salutes Finn. He has been losing his children, he says, and it has been told him that there is not a man in the world who can keep them for him but Finn. He lays crosses and spells on Finn to be with him before eating, drinking, or sleeping. Thereupon he departs in his ship, leaving Finn ignorant of his abode. Finn walks along the shore and soon falls in with seven skilful companions: a Carpenter, a Tracker, a Gripper, a Climber, a Thief, a Listener, a Marksman. He takes them all into his service. The Carpenter makes a ship by striking an alder-stock thrice with his axe. The Tracker guides Finn across the sea to the house of the Big Young Hero. Finn lets his seven companions sleep and watches with the Hero's wife, who is about to be delivered of her third child. The first two have been taken away as soon as they were born by a great hand that came down the chimney. Finn keeps himself awake by means of a hot bar of iron. About midnight the child is born and the Hand descends. The Gripper seizes the hand, and after a severe tussle pulls it off at the shoulder. "But the big giant outside put in the other hand, and took the child with him in the cap of the hand."

At daybreak Finn and his seven comrades give chase in the ship. That night they come to a rock in the sea, on which stands a castle thatched with eelskins. The door is in the top of the castle. The Climber scales the roof and sees a sleeping giant within, having an infant asleep in the cap of his hand. There are two boys playing shinty on the floor. By the fire lies a great deer-hound bitch suckling two pups. The Climber then carries the Thief up to the door. The Thief enters the castle, and hands

¹ Curtin's tale has a second part, — an adventure of Fin with a hag. It has nothing to do with *The Hand and the Child*, but is attached to it by making the hag the giant's sister. She apparently comes for vengeance on Fin, though this is not brought out, and indeed is contradicted by something in the second part. The continuation is interesting in connection with the episode of *Béowulf* and *Grendel's Mother* and its motivation.

² This consists of two quite independent stories, loosely attached. The first alone is to our present purpose.

³ MacDougall (p. 259) notes that the tale was known to two Highlanders of his acquaintance besides the one from whose recitation he derived it.

out the baby, the two boys, and the pups,¹ and escapes without waking the giant.

Finn puts to sea. Soon the Listener hears the giant awake, and send the bitch in pursuit. They throw a pup to the bitch, who returns to the rock with it. Soon after the giant himself appears, wading through the sea. Finn puts his finger under his "knowledge-set of teeth" and finds that the giant is "immortal, except in a mole that [is] in the hollow of his palm." This the Marksman hits, and the giant falls dead.²

Now they sail back to the giant's castle, and the Thief steals both pups. Returning to the home of the Big Young Hero, Finn restores the three children to their parents, asking no reward except one of the pups. This grew up to be Finn's dog Bran, so famous in Fenian saga. There is a feast for a year and a day [after which we may infer that Finn returns to Erin].

No. 2 (J. G. Campbell's version) corrects No. 1 in certain details. The sleepiness of the watchers is caused by magical music,³—a familiar feature in Celtic story. The giant⁴ leaves his arm behind (which is not expressly stated in No. 1).⁵ There is but one visit to

¹ He also steals "the silk covering that was over the giant and the satin covering that was under him,"—a familiar trick of the Master Thief.

² Cf. MacDougall, pp. 160-161.

³ So also in 3. In 3 (as in 1) it is Feunn alone who keeps awake (by holding a hot poker under his chin: good folk-lore!), and he rouses Firm-Holder at the moment of peril. In 6 nobody is sleepy. In 5 Finn goes to sleep deliberately and the Skilful Companions watch; so in 4, except that Finn's sleep is druidic. In 2 all are kept awake by one of the Skilful Companions, whose specialty is that he never sleeps: this reminds us of the Old French proverb: "Qui ne dort pas, n'est pas d'ome" (see *Lai de Tydorel, Rom.*, VIII, 67). For soporific music see Child, *Ballads*, I, 55; II, 137, 139 f., 511 f.; IV, 18 ff.; V, 220, 293; add Hyde-Dottin, *Sgéaluidhe Gaedhealach*, pp. 188-189.

⁴ The robber is a giant in 1, 2, 5; a hag in 4, 6; 3 is indeterminate. Clearly he (or she) was originally a water-monster of some kind: in 1 (cf. 2) the giant's castle is on a rock in the sea, is to be entered only at the top, and is thatched with eelskins. In 4 the hag inhabits a whirling castle, which is reached by boat and has its entrance in the top. Compare the subaqueous abode of Grendel and his mother in *Beowulf*. In 2 and 6 the giant (hag, 6) has but one eye (in the forehead) and is killed by an arrow which pierces this eye. In 1 the giant is "immortal except in a mole that was in the hollow of his palm." On whirling castles see A.C.L. Brown, *Iwain*, pp. 80-81, above.

⁵ In 5 the robber leaves both his arm and the child. This is probably correct (see p. 227). In 2 and 6 the hand is left but the child is taken; in 4 both hand and child disappear.

the giant's castle. Three pups are taken; two are thrown to the pursuing bitch, the third is saved. *Three* must be right; it makes the number of the pups correspond to that of the children.¹ This point may turn out to be of some significance.² Nos. 3-6 make no mention of the bitch and her pups. No. 3 is incomplete, lacking the visit to the giant's castle in the sea.

We at once recognize this story as a composite. It has assimilated nearly the whole of a widespread *märchen* known as *The Skilful Companions*, which has been studied by Benfey and other distinguished scholars,³ and which has nothing whatever to do with *The Hand and the Child*. In *The Skilful Companions* —

Three or more brothers (or comrades) are suitors for the hand of a beautiful girl. While her father is deliberating, the girl disappears. The companions undertake to recover her. One of them, by contemplation (or by keenness of sight), finds that she has been stolen by a demon (or dragon) and taken to his abode on a rock in the sea. Another builds a ship by his magic (or possesses a magic ship) which instantly transports them to the rock. Another, who is a skilful climber, ascends the castle and finds that the monster is asleep with his head in the maiden's lap.⁴ Another, a master thief, steals the girl without waking her captor. They embark, but are pursued by the monster. One of the companions, an unerring shot, kills the pursuer with an arrow. The girl is restored to her parents.

We are not here concerned with the origin or history of *The Skilful Companions*, which, as every one knows, is a corner-stone of

¹ In 3 and 5, three children have already been lost, making four in all; but this can hardly be right. In 1, 2, 4, 6, the whole number is three. ² Cf. pp. 238-9.

³ See Benfey, *Das Märchen von den "Menschen mit den wunderbaren Eigenschaften," Ausland*, 1858, pp. 969 ff. (*Kleinere Schriften*, II, iii, 94 ff.); Wesselofsky, in Giovanni da Prato, *Il Paradiso degli Alberti*, 1867, I, ii, 238 ff.; d'Ancona, *Studj di Critica e Storia Letteraria*, 1880, pp. 357-358; Köhler-Bolte, *Ztsch. des Ver. f. Volkskunde*, VI, 77; Köhler, *Kleinere Schriften*, I, 192 ff., 298 ff., 389-390, 431, 544; II, 591; Cosquin, *Contes pop. de Lorraine*, I, 23 ff.; Crane, *Italian Popular Tales*, p. 67; Nutt, in MacInnes, *Folk and Hero Tales*, pp. 445 ff.; Laistner, *Rätsel der Sphinx*, II, 357 ff.; Steel, *Tales of the Punjab*, pp. 42 ff.; Jurkschat, *Litauische Märchen*, pp. 29 ff.; etc.

⁴ The number and functions of the skilful companions differ considerably in the several versions. The climber, in particular, is by no means a constant quantity.

Benfey's theory of Oriental origins. The story is found in the East and, in varying forms, in almost every country in Europe. Its identity with a considerable portion of *The Hand and the Child* in the Highland versions which we are studying is evident. To reduce *The Hand and the Child*, therefore, to something that approaches its original condition we must first of all eliminate those incidents which belong to *The Skilful Companions*. Such an elimination leaves the following plot:

A certain king has already lost two children, who have been carried off as soon as they were born. [Apparently no one knows what has become of them, for all the watchers are overcome with sleep.] The queen is expecting a third child.¹ A hero of extraordinary strength visits the king [perhaps by invitation], and undertakes to watch. The child is born. The hero resists the soporific magic, to which all others yield, grasps the gigantic hand that descends through the smoke-hole (or window) to seize the child, and tears it off at the shoulder. The monster escapes, leaving behind the child and the arm.

The Hand and the Child belongs, obviously enough, to the type of which the adventure of Béowulf with Grendel is the most famous representative.² The similarities are striking; but, before one infers

¹ Possibly we should omit the two children previously lost; but it seems likely that the ravages of the monster had lasted for some time before he was finally checkmated. We have a good parallel in the *Béowulf*, in which Grendel has carried off and devoured many of Hróðgár's men before Béowulf undertakes the defence of the hall Heorot and pulls off the monster's arm. See also the stories from Cashmere and California and compare the Japanese legend (p. 228, below).

² See Herrig's *Archiv*, CIII, 154, where Professor Cook notes the similarity between *Béowulf* and Kennedy's version (our no. 4). Zimmer (Haupt's *Ztsch.*, XXXII, 331-332) detects the influence of Béowulf's encounter with Grendel in Cuchulinn's combat at Curoi's fort in the *Fled Bricrend* (cf. Andler's strange book, *Quid ad Fabulas Heroicas Germ. Hiberni contulerint*, pp. 75-76), but I find it impossible to agree with him. Fergus's fight with the sea-monster (*Senchus Mór*, *Anc. Laws of Ireland*, I, 74-75) or Cuchulinn's feat of swimming (*Siaburcharpat Coinculaind*, or *Phantom Chariot of Cuchulinn*, Hull, *Cuchullin Saga*, pp. 284-285; cf. Haupt's *Ztsch.*, XXXII, 250, 254) would have afforded him an equally striking parallel. Resemblances between *Béowulf* and the Icelandic *Grettis saga* (Grettir cuts off a monster's arm, etc., etc.) were observed by Vigfússon (*Sturlunga Saga, Prolegomena*, I, xlix; *Icelandic Reader*, p. 404; *Corpus*

historical or literary connection between the Celtic tale and the Anglo-Saxon epic, there are several phenomena to be reckoned with. The child-stealing motive is no part of the *Béowulf*, nor of a Japanese legend¹ which resembles *Béowulf* in the most striking

Poeticum Boreale, II, 501 ff.). That distinguished scholar held that the author of the saga knew the *Béowulf*, and his opinion has met with some favor, but the case is by no means clear (see Gering, *Anglia*, III, 74 ff.; Garnett, *Amer. Journ. of Philol.*, I, 492; Bugge, Paul u. Braune's *Beiträge*, XII, 57 ff.; ten Brink, *Béowulf*, p. 185; Symons, in Paul's *Grundriss*, I, 21; 2d ed., III, 649; Laistner, *Rätsel der Sphinx*, II, 27 ff; Boer, *Ztsch. f. deutsche Phil.*, XXX, 1 ff.; Jónsson, *Den Oldnorske og Oldisl. Litteraturs Historie*, II, 751, note).

The story of *The Hand and the Child* reappears in a modern Icelandic *märchen* (Árnason, *Íslenskar þjóðsögur og Æfintýri*, II, 471 ff., translated by Poestion, *Isländische Märchen*, pp. 285 ff.). The Icelandic version is strikingly similar to the tale as it occurs in L (including the pretended leeching of the monster) and is doubtless derived from Irish (or Scottish Gaelic). The watcher resists the soporific magic and cuts off the kidnapper's arm. Laistner, who compares Poestion's translation with *Béowulf* (*Rätsel der Sphinx*, II, 26 ff.), has not observed that the part of the tale which coincides with *The Skilful Companions* must be left out of account.

¹ "At the beginning of the eleventh century, when Ichijō the Second was Emperor, lived the hero Yorimitsu. Now it came to pass that in those days the people of Kiyōto were sorely troubled by an evil spirit, which took up its abode near the Rashō gate. One night, as Yorimitsu was making merry with his retainers, he said, 'Who dares go and defy the demon of the Rashō gate, and set up a token that he has been there?' 'That dare I,' answered Tsuna, who, having donned his coat of mail, mounted his horse, and rode out through the dark bleak night to the Rashō gate. Having written his name upon the gate, he was about to turn homewards when his horse began to shiver with fear, and a huge hand coming forth from the gate seized the back of the knight's helmet. Tsuna, nothing daunted, struggled to get free, but in vain, so drawing his sword he cut off the demon's arm, and the spirit with a howl fled into the night. But Tsuna carried home the arm in triumph, and locked it up in a box. One night the demon, having taken the shape of Tsuna's aunt, came to him and said, 'I pray thee show me the arm of the fiend.' Tsuna answered, 'I have shown it to no man, and yet to thee I will show it.' So he brought forth the box and opened it, when suddenly a black cloud shrouded the figure of the supposed aunt, and the demon, having regained its arm, disappeared." Mitford, *Tales of Old Japan*, ed. of 1890, p. 105. Professor York Powell gives the same story, in outline (from the vulgate version in "the Japanese children's picture-books of this century, and the colour-prints by Hokusai" and others) and compares it with *Béowulf*: see his note in *An English Miscellany presented to Dr. Furnivall*, 1901, pp. 395-396.

way, nor of an episode in the *Perceval* which should also be compared.¹ *Per contra*, there is a story from Cashmere which resembles *The Hand and the Child* in the matter of the child-stealing, but in which the ogress, though overpowered, does not lose her arm.² Finally, the loss of the hand and the stealing of the child occur,

¹ The Demon Hand is found in the second continuation of Chrétien's *Perceval* (by Gaucher de Dourdan). Perceval enters a solitary chapel at night. There is no one in the chapel, but a slain knight is lying on the altar. One candle is burning before him. Suddenly a great light (*clarté*) fills the chapel, and as suddenly disappears. A crash (*escrois*) follows, as if the chapel were falling to pieces (vv. 34,434-469, ed. Potvin, IV, 133-134). Then

Une noire mains jusqu'al couste
S'aparut derrière l'autel;
La candoile ki ardoit cler
Estaint ensi c'on n'i vit goute (vv. 34,470-473).

Perceval leaves the chapel in haste. A lame explanation of these phenomena is given (in the conclusion written by Mennecier) by the Roi Pesceor. The chapel was built by Brangemore of Cornwall, mother of King Pinogrès. She became a nun and was beheaded therein by her cruel son. She was buried under the altar, and since then not a day has passed without a knight's being killed there by the Black Hand; more than four thousand have lost their lives (vv. 35,397 ff., IV, 166 ff.). Later Perceval visits the chapel again and has a terrific struggle with the Black Hand, which comes in through a window. He overcomes the devil to whom it belongs, not with the sword, which is powerless against him (cf. Grendel), but by means of the sign of the cross (vv. 39,790 ff., IV, 304 ff.). Apparently we have here the story of the Demon Hand worked over in a Christian sense. In view of the wide currency of the incident, it would be venturesome to ascribe this particular example of it to a Celtic source; but, since the incident does occur in Celtic, it would be equally credulous to deny the possibility of such a derivation. Of course nobody will hold that Gaucher drew from Celtic *directly*. The fight with the hand, we should observe, is Mennecier's contribution. Did he know the whole story, left incomplete by Gaucher, or was he simply inventing a *dénouement*?

² In *The Tale of a Princess*, Knowles, *Folk-Tales of Kashmir*, p. 59: A princess, disguised as a man, entered the service of a merchant. "This merchant had three wives, but no son. The reason of this was, that the night after any of his wives gave birth to a son a *dāgin* [ogress] appeared and devoured it." A son was born to the merchant. The merchant asked his new servant to watch by the bedroom door and ward off the ogress. The *dāgin* tried to burst open the door, but the servant prevented her, whereupon she made a dash at him. The servant seized her by the hair and threw her down, but spared her life on her promising to trouble that house no more.

in combination, in a North American Indian tale from California¹ and in the Welsh *mabinogi* of *Pwyll*, to which we shall presently return.² We must put behind us the temptation to genealogize. One fact is clear: the defence of a hall or a hut against the demon that haunts it is a simple theme, to which the theory of "independent origins" must apply if it ever applies to anything. That the defence should result in the demon's losing his arm seems a not unnatural development: at all events, this feature is found in Ireland, in Wales, in England, in Japan, and in California.³ The other main element in our story — the kidnapping of the children — is too commonplace to make any trouble. All manner of uncanny beings are charged with carrying off infants, and everybody knows that the moment of birth, like the moment of death, is a mysterious time and full of strange peril from the darker powers. The genesis of *The Hand and the Child*, then, is not hard to conjecture. It is an easy combination of two *motifs*, (1) the Defence of the Hall and (2) the Child-stealing Monster, to which (in the Highland tales summarized above, pp. 223 ff.) other familiar bits of folk-lore (the Skilful Companions, for instance, and the One-eyed Giant⁴) have associated

¹ Curtin, *Hero-Tales of Ireland*, p. 558, gives part of an Indian tale from California in which a supernatural hag is in the habit of stealing children. She reaches down through the smoke-hole to take one; five or six men seize her arm and try to pull her down, but in vain. "One man chopped her arm right off with a flint knife, and threw it out; she fell to the ground where her arm was, she picked it up, and ran home."

² See pp. 240 ff.

³ We may compare also the cutting off of the ghou's leg in Swynnerton, *Indian Nights' Entertainment*, pp. 358-359. The house-haunting goblin in *Jataka*, ii, 155 (Cowell, II, 12), is subdued in a more recondite manner. So is the hand that rises from the sea and steals men in the *Peregrinaggio di tre Giovani, Figliuoli del Re di Serendippo*, ed. Gassner, *Erlanger Beiträge*, X, 23-24, 28 ff.; cf. the parallels cited by Huth, *Zt. f. vergl. Litteraturgesch.*, N.F., III, 313-314. Cf. also the Demon Hand in Miss Burne, *Shropshire Folk-Lore*, p. 113. In a Greek *märchen* (Hahn, *Griech. u. alban. Märchen*, II, 50) a Hand robs the king's apple-tree; the prince shoots into a cloud and draws blood (cf. Cosquin, *Contes pop. de Lorraine*, I, 12).

⁴ It is an easy process to derive from the *Odyssey* all monocular giants who meet the fate of Polyphemus; but such hand-to-mouth methods are more dangerous than they seem. See Laistner's interesting chapter on Polyphemus (*Rätsel der Sphinx*, II, 1 ff.).

themselves. The whole, in a highly elaborated form, has become a part of the Finn cycle, and is used to explain how Finn procured his famous dog Bran.

The story of *The Hand and the Child* is doubtless quite independent of *The Faithful Dog*. Indeed, the tales differ from each other in almost every respect; they show but one element in common: the successful defence of an infant. In *The Faithful Dog*, however, the assailant is not a hobgoblin, but a natural creature (wolf or serpent); the defender is not a hero, but an animal (ichneumon, weasel, dog), which fights with the beast and kills it in accordance with common sense and everyday experience; the danger is unforeseen (not watched for, as in *The Demon Hand*). Finally, the central point of *The Faithful Dog*—the fatal mistake, the overhasty judgment which prompts the master to strike down his friend and benefactor—is necessarily wanting in *The Hand and the Child*. *The Faithful Dog* is an *exemplum*, enforcing the danger of precipitate judgments; its motto might well be King Lear's "Woe that too late repents!" *The Hand and the Child* has no moral and is hardly susceptible of one, even at the hands of the melancholy Jaques.

Yet nothing was easier than for these two stories to come together. Their common element—the defence of the baby in the cradle against some hideous danger—was almost certain to unite them sooner or later.¹ Accordingly they do, in fact, combine to produce an incident somewhat different from either, yet preserving plain traces of both. In this incident *an animal defends the baby from the giant that seeks to steal it, biting off the hand which he stretches into the room; the animal is accused of killing the baby, but is exonerated.*²

¹ A Mongolian version of *The Faithful Dog* (Benjamin Bergmann, *Nomadische Streifereien*, I, 102, cited by Benfey, *Pant.* I, 481) approaches the type of *The Hand and the Child* in a curious way. A woman has had several children but has lost them all. She is again with child when a polecat (*Iltis*) comes to her and promises that she shall lose no more children if she will take him into her service. The mother thinks the talking polecat must have magical powers, and assents. The animal defends the baby from a snake and is killed by the mother.

² Perhaps there was a version of *The Hand and the Child* in which the defence of the child against the Demon Hand was transferred to a dog (a fairy dog, it may be, or a bespelled mortal) before *The Hand and the Child* came into contact with

In some such form as this, the incident has entered *The Werewolf's Tale*. It is not found, as we have already seen, in Marie's *Bisclavret* or in the *Lai de Melion*, but its presence in I and G proves it for y

The Faithful Dog (the "Gelert story"). Such a version, if it ever existed, would easily have become contaminated with *The Faithful Dog*, and the resultant tale would with equal facility have entered version y of *The Werewolf's Tale*. These are details that cannot be determined and that do not affect the essentials of our reconstruction. We may note, however, that in an incomparably wild Highland tale a (fairy) dog does actually defend his master, in a cave at night, against a monster that reaches for him through a hole in the roof, and that the monster's arm is bitten off at the wrist. This is the tale of *Mac Phie's Black Dog*, taken down by J. G. Campbell from recitation in 1863 and published (with an English translation) in the *Scottish Celtic Review*, pp. 262 ff. A revised translation is printed in the same writer's posthumous work, *Superstitions of the Highlands and the Islands of Scotland* (Glasgow, 1900), pp. 109 ff. (with four other versions, all from oral tradition). I give a bare outline, which does scant justice to the impressiveness of this extraordinary story.

Mac Phie of Colonsay owns a great black dog, presented to him under strange circumstances, which, according to the prophecy of the giver (obviously a fairy man), "will never do service for him but the one day." The dog always skulks when his master calls him to the hunt, and Mac Phie has often been urged to kill him. "Let him alone," is Mac Phie's reply; "the black dog's day will come." One morning, when Mac Phie and other gentlemen are setting out for Jura to hunt, the dog is the first creature in the boat. "The black dog's day is drawing near us," says Mac Phie. On the second night of their excursion, when they are all together in a great cave in Jura, Mac Phie's companions are destroyed by certain ghoulish women [lamiae, or lustful demons, we may be sure: cf. a Sutherland tale communicated by Miss Dempster, *Folk-Lore Journal*, VI, 162-163], but the black dog, who lies at his master's feet, springs up when one of the women would approach Mac Phie, and drives them from the cave. Soon a man's hand comes down through a hole in the roof and clutches at Mac Phie. What followed must be given in Mr. Campbell's own words: "The black dog gave one spring, and caught the hand between the shoulder and the elbow, and lay on it. The play began between the hand and the black dog. Before the black dog let go his hold, he chewed the hand till it fell on the floor. The thing that was on the top of the cave went away. . . . Out rushed the black dog after the thing that was outside. This was not [the] time at which Mac Phie felt himself most at ease, when the black dog left him. When the day was dawning, what but that the black dog had returned. He lay down beside Mac Phie. In a few minutes he was dead." Mac Phie took the hand home "that men might see what horror he had met with that night he had been in the cave. No man in Isla[y] or Colonsay had ever seen such a hand, or had ever imagined that such could have existed."

(their common original),¹ which we have seen reason to believe was Irish.² The precise form of the episode in **y** is not easy to determine, but we may come pretty near it by a process of comparison. Let us begin with the condition of the episode in **I**.

In **LHO'FS** we find practically the whole of *The Hand and the Child* (as described on the basis of nos. 1-6, pp. 223 ff., above), modified by two features from *The Faithful Dog*: (1) the substitution of the tame werewolf for the hero, and (2) the suspicion against the animal. We may take **L** as the basis of our comparison with *Gorlagon* (**G**), since, though it is somewhat disordered, it preserves a number of highly significant details.

In **L** the king who befriends the Werewolf had lost eleven³ children, all of whom "were stolen the same night they were born." He sets the wolf to watch the twelfth. One night⁴ a hand comes down the chimney and seizes the child. The wolf bites off the hand,⁵ lays it in the cradle with the baby, and falls asleep. In the morning both hand and child are gone. The wolf is covered with blood, and everybody⁶ says the wolf has eaten the baby. But the king refuses to believe this.⁷ "Loose him," says the king, "and he will get the pursuit himself."

¹ See the diagram on p. 175.

² See p. 198.

³ Plainly an exaggeration of the reciter; *two* is the correct number, as in **HS** (and *The Hand and the Child* in general, see p. 226, note 1); in **O'F** it is *three*. **C**₁ says nothing of the king's previous losses. **C**₂ lacks the whole adventure.

⁴ This should properly be the birth night (as in **O'F**). Nobody knows what has become of the other children (implied in **L**, expressly stated in **H**). In **H** the nurses are put to sleep by a magic song when the third child is stolen (cf. p. 225, above). In **S** the wolf is present on all three occasions, but apparently he is awake on the third only; the midwives sleep. In **KJ** there is no Hand; the lady smears her own sleeping child and the wolf with blood and then accuses the wolf.

⁵ In **HO'F** he pulls it off (cf. p. 227). In **C**₁ a serpent comes down the chimney and is killed by the wolf. Thus this particular version reverts in part (whether by accident, or by specific modern influence) to the Oriental form of the Gelert story.

⁶ The specific accusation should come from the Werewolf's wife (so **KJHO'FC**₁). In **S** the midwives are the accusers (cf. *Pwyll*, p. 240, below) on the first two occasions; but this version has substituted a cruel stepmother for the unfaithful wife. On the third occasion in **S** the wolf pursues the monster without delay and there is no opportunity for slander. **C**₂ has been too much changed to be of much use here.

⁷ In **H** the king credits the accusation, but is undeceived by the discovery of the hand. In **C**₁ the disenchantment comes immediately after the false charge.

[The werewolf's false wife¹ has concealed the child and the hand in a (secret) room.²] The wolf follows the scent of the blood to the door of this room, goes back to the king, takes hold of him, and then, returning to the door, begins to tear at it. The king follows,³ and calls for the key. A servant says it is in the room of the stranger woman [i.e., the Werewolf's wife]. She cannot be found, and the king breaks down the door. The wolf runs in and goes to the trunk. The king breaks the lock of the trunk: there lie the child and the hand, side by side, and the child is asleep.

Here we must pause a moment to compare the *Gorlagon* (G).

In G the incident has been considerably changed by the general modification which the tale has received at this point:⁴

Instead of defending the child against a giant or hag, the wolf assails the king's steward, who is dishonoring the royal bed, and mangles him frightfully. The queen removes her child to an underground room, and accounts for all the circumstances by alleging that the wolf has devoured it and that the steward has been wounded in opposing the wolf.

G, we observe, omits the Demon Hand and inserts an amour between the queen and her steward: the wolf does not defend the baby against an assailant; he attacks the queen's lover, out of

¹ L does not explain how she came to be at the court, but we have already seen that she is really the king's daughter (a point which L has not preserved, but which is assured for I, being found in KJO'FC₁) and has returned to her father after betraying her husband. Indeed, this relationship (as well as the return) is present also in M, and is thus established for x (the common source of My): see p. 178. In H the whole scene is laid at the castle of the Werewolf's father, and the stolen children are the Werewolf's brothers.

² This is implied in L, and comparison with G establishes the incident for y. O'F, though somewhat confused here, supports L in the main. In HS the giant carries off the child but leaves the hand behind (cf. p. 225). HC₁ preserve an important link in the story: the lady wakes first in the morning and finds the hand (the serpent and the child C₁); thus she is enabled to arrange the details of her plot before the household is stirring. In H she buries the hand in the woods; in C₁ she hides the child in her chamber. Taken together, then, HC₁ support L, as O'F does, and the course of events in I can be made out perfectly.

³ In H the Werewolf leads the king to the place where the lady has buried the hand. In C₁ he conducts him to the chamber where the child is hidden. O'FS lack the incident.

⁴ See p. 185, above.

loyalty to his master. These features are peculiar to *G*, and it is clear that in them *G* departs from *y*.¹

To continue our analysis of *G*:

The king refuses to believe in the animal's guilt. The wolf touches the king's foot with his paw, seizes the edge of his mantle in his mouth, and nods his head in sign that he wishes the king to follow him. He leads the king to the underground chamber where the child is concealed, and strikes the door with his paw. The queen has hidden the key, but the wolf, impatient at the delay, breaks the door down, and, rushing into the room, brings out the child and presents it to the king. He then leads the king to the chamber where the steward lies, and the guilty man confesses the truth.

The similarity in detail between *L* and *G* is most striking, and is highly significant as to *y*. We must now return to *L*:

After the rescue of the child, the wolf is its constant companion. One day, the child, then three years old, runs away from home and cannot be found. [It transpires, later, that the Werewolf's wife has him at her house.] When summer comes, the wolf swims back to his own country and hides in his own garden. He sees his wife out walking, and the child with her. Next day, the wolf enters the house and finds the child alone. The boy recognizes his old favorite and begins to kiss him. The magic rod is "in front of the chimney." The wolf jumps at it and knocks it down. The child picks it up. Then the wolf scratches the child, and the boy, in anger, strikes him a light blow with the rod and thus restores him to his human shape.

The Werewolf (now a man again) takes the child back to the king in a ship. On the way, he comes to an island, where there is but one habitation. Entering, he finds a frightful hag. Her son lies groaning in an inner room. "His hand," says the hag, "was bitten off, twelve years before, in another land." The hero pretends to be a physician, shuts himself up with the hag's son, and burns out his eye (he has but *one*, in the middle of his forehead)² with a hot iron, pretending that he wishes to cauterize the corrupt flesh. The deluded hag gives the hero the reward she has promised, — eight lads and three girls, who, she informs him, are

¹ This appears at once from comparison. Positive evidence that the inference is correct will be given later, when we discuss the punishment of the Werewolf's wife in *G* (see pp. 245 ff).

² See p. 230 and note 4.

the sons and daughters of the king and have all been stolen by her son. The hero takes ship, returns to the king's court, and gives him back the children.¹

There is nothing of all this in **G**. It is peculiar to **I**, and will be instantly recognized as the concluding adventure in *The Hand and the Child* (see nos. 1-6, pp. 223 ff.), modified so as to fit it to the exigencies of *The Werewolf's Tale* and, in particular, so as to bring about the disenchantment of the hero. That this adventure was not in **y** (the common source of **G** and **I**) is at once clear. In **G** the restoration of the Werewolf is effected in a very different way, and **G** is, in this part of the story, in substantial agreement with **M** and **B**. Hence we may be sure that the rescue of the king's other children (and probably also the incident of their loss) was not in **y**, and *a fortiori* not in **x**. It was not added to the story until **G** and **I** had parted company.

It is now easy to reconstruct the episode of *The Rescue of the Child* in substantially the form which it must have had in **y** (the common original of **G** and **I**):

The scene is laid at the court of a king, the wolf's father-in-law, whither the false wife has fled after the transformation of her husband. She wishes to get rid of the wolf, whom she recognizes and of whom she is very naturally afraid. The wolf defends the king's child and bites off the monster's arm; the monster flees, leaving his hand behind him, and is heard of no more. The false wife takes advantage of the situation to remove the hand and the child to a secret chamber, and accuses the wolf of devouring the infant. The king refuses to believe the charge, and the wolf leads him to the secret room. Several of the details of the scene may be inferred from the wonderful agreement between **G** and **L**: the wolf's seizing the king's robe in his teeth and guiding him to the room;

¹ The different versions of **I** show considerable variety in details in this part of the story, but **LHO'F** agree in the main. **LH** have the pretended medical or surgical treatment of the monster. **LO'F** show Polyphemus incidents (putting out the eye **LO'F**; dressing in goatskins **O'F**). By a special elaboration, **H** makes the Werewolf get the Sword of Light in the giant's island. **S** is much condensed here. **KJC**₁ of course lack the rescue of the elder children, since they say nothing of the king's having lost his sons. In **LH** the rescue follows the Werewolf's disenchantment; in **O'FS** the disenchantment follows the rescue.

the locked door; the concealment of the key by the lady; the breaking down of the door (by the king in **L**, by the wolf in **G**). In the room is found a chest (or cradle), in which the child lies sleeping; the hand is with him. The king is convinced that the wolf is a man under spells, compels his daughter to confess, and reverses the charm.

This reconstruction, every detail of which is extant either in **G** or in **L**, is a manifest compound, formed, as I have already suggested, by uniting *The Hand and the Child* and *The Faithful Dog*. All the divergences which **G** shows from the incident as thus reconstructed are accounted for.

Four versions of **I** (**LHO'FS**) contain also the second adventure of *The Hand and the Child*,—the rescue of the king's other children from the giant's castle. Its presence is easily explained. Some story-teller, familiar with *The Hand and the Child* in its most developed form (substantially as in nos. 1 and 2, pp. 224-5), felt that version **I** of *The Werewolf's Tale* was incomplete because it did not contain this second adventure, and appended it accordingly. Nothing could be more natural. It was simply a case of *going on*. Version **I** already contained the *Defence of the Child* against the demon hand; the narrator continued with the second adventure, the rescue of the king's other children, which seemed to him a necessary sequel. This addition to **I** may have been made in very recent times,—even as late as the eighteenth century. There is no certain evidence on that point. The *first* insertion of *The Defence of the Child* in *The Werewolf's Tale* is quite another matter. This must have taken place pretty early, since the incident stood in **y**.

There is another Irish story which throws light on version **y** of *The Werewolf's Tale*. It is extant as an episode in *The Festivities at the House of Conan*, a late text edited by O'Kearney from an eighteenth-century manuscript,¹ and runs as follows in O'Kearney's translation:

¹ *Feis Tighe Chonain Chinn-Shleibhe; or The Festivities at the House of Conan of Ceann-Sleibhe*, edited by N. O'Kearney from a MS. of Foran of Portlaw (1780), in the *Transactions of the Ossianic Society* for 1854 (Dublin, 1855), pp. 160-67.

Fionn's mother's sister, Tuirreann, became the wife of Iollann Eachtach. She became pregnant. Iollann's *leannan sighe*, from jealousy, transformed her into a greyhound and brought her to the house of King Feargus Fionnliath, presenting her as a present from Fionn. "The wife of Feargus . . . gave birth to an infant the same night that the hound whelped two puppies, a male and a female. It so happened during the previous seven years, that whenever Fergus's wife was confined, a Fomorach used to come that same night, and carry away the infant. However, Eithleann [unknown person] met Fionn at the end of a year, and having arranged a hospitable meeting at the house of Feargus Fionnliath, they delivered Fergus from the plague of the Fomorach."

Fionn learned that his aunt was no longer living with Iollann and insisted on her being restored to *him*. Iollann required her of his *leannan sighe*. She went to Feargus's House and got the bitch and restored her to human shape. She then brought her to Fionn and told of the two puppies, giving him his choice to have them as dogs or human beings. He chose the former and these are Bran and Sceolaing.¹

This is vague and prosaic, but it is plainly a somewhat condensed account of a version of *The Hand and the Child*.² The demon hand has evaporated in the process of condensation. Instead of details, we have a bald general statement: "Having arranged a hospitable meeting at the house of Feargus Fionnliath, they delivered Feargus from the plague of the Fomorach." The bitch and her pups, of which we have already heard in several versions of *The Hand and the Child*, play an important, if not quite intelligible, part in the present text. One fact comes out clearly: there is a mysterious congenital relation between the children and the pups. This we have already suspected, on the basis of the other versions and of general folk-lore. Comparing the *Feis Tighe Chonain* with versions 1 and 2 of *The Hand and the Child* (pp. 224 ff.), we may infer that, in the correct

¹ The same story (without the robbery of the children) may be found in Kennedy, *Legendary Fictions*, pp. 174 ff.

² Like all the versions noted above (nos. 1-6, pp. 223 ff.) that in the *Feis Tighe Chonain* has been attached to the Finn cycle, and, like nos. 1 and 2, it undertakes to explain "how Finn found Bran," his famous dog. Of course there is no occasion to suppose that the tale was connected with Bran in the beginning. There are other accounts of Finn's discovery of Bran (see MacDougall, *Folk and Hero Tales*, pp. 263-264).

form of the fully developed story,¹ the bitch-hound was not at the giant's castle in the sea, but rather in the chamber where Finn watched; that the birth of the child and the whelping of the bitch always took place at the same moment; and that the giant stole both the baby and the whelp. This had already happened twice before, so that when the rescuers visited the giant's castle, they found three children and three dogs.

The *Feis Tighe Chonain* shows a special resemblance to *The Werewolf's Tale* which we have not found in other versions of *The Hand and the Child*: the bitch is a transformed mortal, like the Werewolf. There is even a certain likeness in the cause of transformation. In G and I the lady changes her husband to a wolf because she is in love with another; in the *Feis*, the mistress of Iollann changes her lover's wife into a bitch in order to keep him for herself. Note also that Iollann's mistress is a *leannan sighe*,²—a fairy mistress; and that we have seen reason to regard the lady in *The Werewolf's Tale* as originally a *fée*.³ These resemblances need not be pressed. They suffice, however, to show how easy it was for a tale like *The Hand and the Child* to become inserted in *The Werewolf's Tale* in Irish story-telling.

A remarkable variant of the episode in the *Feis Tighe Chonain* is thus tantalizingly recorded by O'Kearney in a note:⁴

"It is . . . recorded in tradition that she [read *it*] was the enchanted hound [i.e., Finn's aunt] that rescued the infant from the grasp of the giant by gnawing off his arm, and that she preserved it until morning. When Feargus and his people found the chamber, in which she kennelled, full of blood, they were on the point of killing her, under the supposition that she had murdered the child; but they fortunately discovered their mistake in time . . . The same authority relates that the hound led Feargus and his people to the giant's cave, where they succeeded in killing him, and also recovered the seven children that had been previously kidnapped by him."

¹ That is, the story made by combining *The Hand and the Child* with *The Skilful Companions*,—a combination seen in nos. 1 and 2 (see pp. 224-6).

² Cf. J. F. Campbell, *Pop. Tales of the West Highlands*, II, 70.

³ See pp. 176-7, 189 ff.

⁴ P. 164, note 2. I have corrected an obvious misprint.

This approaches *The Werewolf's Tale* still more closely, in that it is not a hero in human shape that defends the baby, but an enchanted animal. It affords positive testimony that such a version of *The Hand and the Child* as that inferred at p. 231 has actually existed, out of combination with *The Werewolf's Tale*.

Good evidence of the antiquity of *The Hand and the Child* on Celtic soil is furnished by the *mabinogi* of *Pwyll Prince of Dyvet*, one of our most precious relics of genuine Welsh tradition. *Pwyll* preserves the story in a remarkable shape :¹

Rhiannon's child has just been born, and six women are watching. All six fall asleep about midnight, as well as the mother. At dawn the women awake, but the baby has disappeared. Rhiannon is still asleep. There is a bitch hound with her young in the chamber. They kill some of the puppies, smear with blood the face and hands of Rhiannon, and put some of the bones before her. When she wakes and calls for the child, they declare that she has devoured it. The nobles urge Pwyll to divorce his wife. He refuses: "If she has committed a sin, let her do penance." Rhiannon decides to accept penance rather than to dispute the question with the lying nurses. Her penance is, to remain seven years at the court, to take her seat each day beside the horse-block at the entrance, to tell her story to all comers, and to carry them on her back, if they will allow it, from the horse-block to the court.² So she passes a part of the first year.

There is a lord at Gwent named Teyrnnon, who has a very beautiful mare. Every year she drops a foal in the night of the calends of May,³ but no one knows what becomes of it. This time Teyrnnon resolves to watch. The foal is born, and Teyrnnon is admiring its beauty when he hears a great noise. Immediately a claw comes through the window of the house and seizes the foal by the mane. Teyrnnon draws his sword and cuts off the monster's arm at the elbow, so that the forearm and the foal remain inside the window. There is a great noise outside. Teyrnnon rushes out and runs in the direction of the noise, but it is so dark that he sees nobody. Returning, he finds just outside the door a little child. Taking it up, Teyrnnon goes into the house, shuts the door, and learns that

¹ *Mabinogion*, translated by Lady Guest, III, 60 ff.; by Loth, I, 52 ff.

² Cf. Rhys, *Hibbert Lectures*, p. 641; id., *Arthurian Legend*, p. 284.

³ Cf. Rhys, *Celtic Folklore*, I, 226.

his wife has slept through everything. Teyrnnon and his wife adopt the child, and the foal is reserved for him against the time when he shall be able to ride. After a time, Teyrnnon hears of what has happened to Rhiannon. He takes the child to the court and all is well.

In the episode just summarized, *The Hand and the Child* has been modified by contamination with a story of a different type, into which it has been worked, — namely, *The Calumniated Wife*.¹ In this type² the wife is accused (usually by her mother-in-law or by a rival) of bearing an animal or a monster³ (or of having devoured her offspring); the child is spirited away (or slain) by the calumniator; the wife is repudiated or subjected to terrible penance; at last the child is restored and the wife vindicated. In the *mabinogi* the *motif* of the Hand is utilized to remove the child.⁴ A good old example

¹ Cf. Nutt, *Scottish Celtic Review*, p. 140.

² *The Calumniated Wife* has been studied by many scholars. See, for example, Dunlop-Liebrecht, *Prosadichtungen*, pp. 265–266; Hahn, *Griechische u. Albanesische Märchen*, II, 292 ff.; D'Ancona, *La Rappresentazione di Santa Uliva*, Pisa, 1863; the same, *Sacre Rappresentazioni*, III, 235 ff.; Wesselofsky, *Novella della Figlia del Re di Dacia*, Pisa, 1866; Todd, *Publications of the Modern Language Assoc. of America*, IV, no. 3, pp. ii ff.; Temple, note in Mrs. Steel, *Tales of the Punjab*, pp. 364–365; Puymaigre, *Folk-Lore*, pp. 253 ff., 325–326; Crane, *Italian Popular Tales*, pp. 17 ff.; Cosquin, *Contes pop. de Lorraine*, I, lxiii, 190; Suchier, *Œuvres poétiques de Philippe de Remi*, I, xxiii ff.; Nutt, *Celtic Magazine*, XII, 549–550; Mélusine, III, 212, 253 ff., 527–528; Clouston, *Variants and Analogues of the Tales*, in vol. III of Sir R. F. Burton's *Supplemental [Arabian] Nights*, pp. 617 ff.; id., *Book of Sindibād*, pp. 372 ff.; Köhler-Bolte, *Ztsch. des Vereins für Volkskunde*, VI, 60–61; Groome, *Gypsy Folk-Tales*, pp. 71–72, 256–257; Skeat's *Oxford Chaucer*, III, 409 ff.; Macaulay's *Gower*, II, 482 ff.; Köhler, *Mélusine*, I, 213–214; the same, in Schiefner, *Awarische Texte*, pp. xxi ff.; Paris, *Romania*, XIX, 316, ff.; Gröber, *Grundriss*, II, i, 576; Suchier, *Romania*, XXX, 519 ff.

³ In a more primitive form of the type, the wife actually bears children in animal form (being herself a swan-maiden or the like) and they are subsequently transformed into human shape, but this does not concern us here.

⁴ The *motif* of the Hand Down the Chimney is similarly utilized in an Irish tale, *The White Hound of the Mountain* (O'Foharta, *Ztsch. f. Celt. Phil.*, I, 146 ff.). This tale belongs to that special form of the *Cupid and Psyche* type in which the wife's children are stolen as soon as they are born (cf., for example, Kennedy, *Legendary Fictions of the Irish Celts*, pp. 58 ff.) and which seems to have its origin in a combination of the *Cupid and Psyche* type proper with a variety of *The Calumniated Wife*. The *Griselda* novel is perhaps a rationalized development of some

of the type occurs in the *Dolopathos* of Johannes de Alta Silva (written about 1190),¹ in which the wife is accused of bearing animals. Two examples in *märchen* taken down from recitation in our own day are a Gypsy tale in Groome's collection² and an Irish tale in Larminie's,³ in both of which the heroine is suspected of having killed her children, and in the latter of having eaten them. The type of *The Calumniated Wife* has been very productive, and the published versions differ infinitely in detail.

The changes wrought in *The Hand and the Child* by its assimilation to *The Calumniated Wife* are clear for the most part. The loss of the two former children has been suppressed; therefore the attack of the Hand is unforeseen, and there is no hero on the watch; hence nobody knows what has become of the infant. These alterations are necessary if Rhiannon is to be accused of devouring her child. Even as the *mabinogi* stands, however, there are traces of the incidents that have been superseded. The sleep of the nurses points back to the magic slumber which the abductor sends upon the watchers in *The Hand and the Child*. Teyrnon keeping guard over his foal represents the hero who resists the soporific effect of the abductor's magic and pulls (or hews) off the Hand. In *Pwyll*, however, this adventure of Teyrnon's takes place some months after the birth of the child and in a different part of the country. The reason for the postponement and the change of place is obvious. In *The Hand and the Child* the baby is either left behind by the monster or is recovered next day. This arrangement does not fit the *motif* of *The Calumniated Wife*, which requires the continued absence of the child in order that the calumny may gain credit and Rhiannon may undergo her penance. Hence Teyrnon is represented as ignorant of what has taken place at Pwyll's court, as finding the child at his own door (where the Hand has left it),

such tale, as I hope to show before long in another paper. The peculiarity of *The White Hound of the Mountain* consists in the means adopted to carry the children away from their mother.

¹ Ed. Oesterley, pp. 74 ff.; cf. the Old French adaptation by Herbert, vv. 9299 ff., ed. Brunet and Montaiglon, pp. 321 ff.

² *Gypsy Folk-Tales*, p. 256.

³ *West Irish Folk-Tales*, pp. 185-186.

and as giving it to his wife to bring up as her own. Thus, while still retaining the rôle of the hero in *The Hand and the Child*, he has assumed also the part of the person (hermit, miller, baker, or the like) who, in *The Calumniated Wife*, accidentally finds the exposed children and adopts them. Later, still in this latter character, he restores the child to its parents and clears up the plot. This is not till Rhiannon has undergone her penance for some time. The penance itself is a characteristic feature of *The Calumniated Wife*. It is much softened in the Welsh and its duration is shortened, but it is easily recognized as parallel to that described, for example, in the *Dolopathos*.¹ Of course it has no place in *The Hand and the Child*.

The combination of two characters in Teyrnnon, just noted, is not very skilfully accomplished in the *mabinogi*. If the monster succeeds in stealing the child, he should of course go directly to his den (or castle), and it is absurd that he should take the baby with him when he sallies forth, months later, to steal Teyrnnon's newborn foal. Yet so it is in *Pwyll*: Teyrnnon finds the child at his door when he returns from pursuing the monster after hewing off his hand. The signs of patching are manifest here.

There are two possibilities with respect to the episode of Teyrnnon and his foal: it may have been added when the tale was made over to fit *The Calumniated Wife* or it may simply have been modified somewhat, by postponement and change of locality. If the former hypothesis is correct, it is simply an adaptation of the usual incident of watching for the Hand that is to take the newborn child,

¹ Johannes de Alta Silva, ed. Oesterley, p. 75; Herbert, ed. Brunet and Montaignon, vv. 9508 ff., pp. 328-329. There is substantially the same penance in Schiefner, *Awarische Texte*, pp. 94-95; Gonzenbach, *Sicilianische Märchen*, I, 21; Hahn, *Griechische u. albanesische Märchen*, II, 288 (cf. II, 40 ff.); Groome, *Gypsy Folk-Tales*, pp. 69-70; Socin, *Ztsch. der Deutschen Morgenl. Gesellsch.*, XXXVI, 261; A. and A. Schott, *Walachische Märchen*, pp. 90 ff.; Comparetti, *Novelline pop. italiane*, I, 119; Kremnitz, *Rumänische Märchen*, p. 35; Imbriani, *Novellaja Fiorentina*, p. 86. The penance is milder (but still recognizable as the same in origin) in various versions: for example, Comparetti, p. 24; cf. Grenville Murray, *National Songs and Legends of Roumania*, 1859, p. 107 (imprisonment); Mme. Mijatovics [Mijatovich], *Serbian Folk-Lore*, ed. Denton, pp. 240-241.

—an incident which had to be omitted in its proper place in order to provide for the calumny of Rhiannon. If the latter hypothesis is preferable, then the foal was, in an earlier form of the tale, born at the same time as the baby and belonged to the well-known class of “congenital animal companions.”¹ In this case, the Hand attempted to steal them both in the same night. This does not seem so probable as the first supposition, for we should observe that the *mabinogi* is already provided with “congenital animals,” —namely, the pups which are in Rhiannon’s chamber. These correspond to the pups in the Irish and Highland stories of *The Hand and the Child*, which, as we have already conjectured, should properly be taken away by the Hand which seizes the children.² The attempt to steal Teyrnon’s foal tends to confirm this conjecture. The presence of the whelps in the bedchamber was an element common to both *The Hand and the Child* and *The Calumniated Wife*, and hence it facilitated the combination which we find the *mabinogi* has made.³

Thus the episode of the *Persecution of Rhiannon* in the *mabinogi* of *Pwyll*⁴ appears to afford an easily reconstructed version of *The Hand and the Child*. The *White Book of Rhydderch*, which contains the *Mabinogion*, is of the end of the thirteenth century.⁵ We may

¹ On such animals, see the references in Hartland, *Legend of Perseus*, III, 191 ff. Rhys, *Hibbert Lectures*, pp. 501–503, compares one version of the *Birth of Cuchulinn* (*Compert Conculaind*: see Windisch, *Irische Texte*, I, 134 ff.; Zimmer, Kuhn’s *Zeitschrift*, XXVIII, 419 ff.; Nutt, *Voyage of Bran*, II, 39 ff.).

² See p. 239.

³ Nutt, *Scottish Celtic Review*, I, 140, suggests that “the Welsh Gellert story may possibly be related to” the story of Rhiannon and to S or “at all events have been influenced by a similar version of the calumniated wife.” The ease with which the calumny of the wife and the master’s suspicion of his dog (in *Gelert*) might influence each other is shown by a curious incident in an Italian version of *The Calumniated Wife*, — the miracle play of *Santa Uliva* (ed. d’Ancona, 1863, pp. 24–25; the same, *Sacre Rappresentazioni*, III, 263).

⁴ One of the genuine *mabinogion*, containing no Arthurian material. No one has ever suggested that *Pwyll* was influenced by French in any particular.

⁵ J. Gwenogvryn Evans, *Report on MSS. in the Welsh Language*, I, ii, 305. The *Red Book of Hergest*, which also contains the *Mabinogion*, is of the latter half of the fourteenth century.

safely infer that *The Hand and the Child*, in a form substantially identical with that which it bears in the Celtic stories which we have been studying, was known to the Welsh before 1300, and probably a good deal earlier.¹ Its presence in the Irish *y*, which must considerably antedate *G*,² suggests that it came to Wales from Ireland, as some of the material in the *Mabinogion* certainly did,³ and this suggestion is supported by what is known of the influence of Irish literature upon Welsh at an early date.

IX. THE CONCLUSION IN *ARTHUR AND GORLAGON*.

We must now examine the closing incident in *The Werewolf's Tale* in *G*.

King Arthur has learned all that he can expect to know of the "ingenium mensque feminae," yet, when Gorlagon again asks him to "dismount and eat," he refuses once more. "I will in no wise dismount," he declares, "until you tell me who that sad-faced woman is who sits opposite you [at the table], having a bloody human head on a plate before her. As often as you have laughed, she has wept, and she has kissed the bloody head whenever you, in telling the story that you have related, have kissed your wife." "If I alone knew the facts," answers Gorlagon, "I should decline to tell them; but since they are known to all who sit here with me, I need feel no shame in informing you. I am the man who was transformed into a wolf. This woman is my faithless wife, and the head is that of her lover, which I have had embalmed. Her punishment is to have this always before her eyes and to kiss it whenever I kiss the wife whom I have married in her place. Dismount now, if dismount you will." Arthur then joins the feast, and on the next day he sets out for home, — a journey of nine days.

This punishment of the wife is peculiar to *G*. In *y*, as we have seen, she is forgiven, and received again by her husband, and so probably in *x*.⁴ In *G* she continues to live at her husband's court,

¹ The resemblance between *Pwyll* and *S* was noted by Nutt in 1881: "The close agreement between *Pwyll* and the Highland tale makes it not improbable that a genuine folk-tale, constructed on precisely the same lines as the latter, existed formerly in Wales" (*Scottish Celtic Review*, p. 140).

² See p. 199.

³ See Loth, *Revue Celtique*, XI, 345 ff. (cf. X, 354 ff.).

⁴ See p. 187.

but not as his wife, and is the object of the savage vengeance just described. That G is departing from y at this point is not a mere inference. We can designate the very tale which supplied G with this incident, and we shall find that the same tale is also the source from which G derived another incident, earlier in the plot. Let us turn for a moment to the curious form in which G presents the episode that we have called *The Defence of the Child*,—a point in which, as we have already inferred on other grounds, it varied from its original, y.¹ In G—

The king who has befriended the wolf is obliged to visit another country. He charges his wife to take good care of the wolf, but she neglects him, "for women often hate what their husbands love." A week after the king's departure, the queen receives her lover, the steward, in the royal chamber, where the wolf is tied. Breaking his chain, the wolf assails the steward and leaves him half-dead. The queen declares that the wolf has eaten her baby, and that the steward received his wounds in coming to the rescue. She conceals the child in an underground chamber. On the king's return, the wolf leads him to this chamber (for details, see p. 235), and thence to the room where the steward lies suffering from his injuries. The king forces the guilty man to confess, and both he and the queen are put to death.

These two incidents, the Attack on the Steward and the Wife's Penance, are peculiar to G, and they both come from a single story, which we may call *The Dog and the Lady* and which is quite distinct from *The Werewolf's Tale*. We may first examine a version found in *The Forty Viziers*.²

A merchant spends the night at a rich man's house in Persia. At supper time he observes, with astonishment, a beautiful woman who sits in a corner and eats with a dog. He asks his host the reason and insists upon knowing, though he is told that the matter is never spoken of. "That was my well-beloved wife," replied the rich man. "She loved a negro slave of mine and they plotted to put me out of the way. One day she led me to a lonely place, under some pretext, and she and the slave attacked me. My

¹ See pp. 234-235.

² Behrnauer, *Die Vierzig Vizierte*, pp. 325-326 (tale of the 39th Vizier); Gibb, *Forty Vezirs*, pp. 331 ff. (tale of the 34th Vizier).

dog had followed me from the house. He assailed the slave and pulled him off me. I killed the negro, but I spared the woman's life, and this is her punishment."

The same story occurs in the *Gesta Romanorum* in a somewhat different shape:

A certain prince, while out hunting, falls in with a merchant and invites him to spend the night at his castle. At supper the merchant sits by the prince's wife. All the company are served in silver plates, but before the lady and the merchant are placed "cibaria optima in capite unius defuncti." That night he is well lodged, but sees two dead men hanging by the arms in a corner of his chamber. Next morning the prince summons him and asks how he is pleased with him. "Everything pleases me," replies the merchant, "except that I was served in a dead man's skull and saw two corpses hanging in my chamber. For God's love, let me go!" The prince answers: "Carissime, vidisti uxorem meam nimis pulchram et caput defuncti ante eam. Racio est talis: iste enim cujus erat caput fuit quidam dux nobilis, qui uxorem meam sollicitavit et cum ea concubuit et pariter adinvicem commisceri perspexi, gladium arripui et caput ejus amputavi, unde in signum verecundie singulis diebus illud caput ante eam pono, ut ad memoriam reducat peccatum quod commisit." He then goes on to explain the corpses, which do not concern us here.¹

With *The Dog and the Lady* as it appears in *The Forty Viziers* and in the *Gesta Romanorum* we should compare a version in the Tamil

¹ This story is in the vulgate text of the Latin *Gesta* (eds. of 1480 and 1499, fol. xxv; Keller, I, 81 ff.; Oesterley, pp. 355-356, from the *editio princeps*, c. 1472; Swan's translation, 1824, I, 183 ff.; the same, revised by Hooper, 1877, pp. 93 ff.; Grässe, I, 87 ff.). It is cap. 54 in *Le Violier des Histoires Romaines*, ed. Brunet, pp. 125 ff. It is missing in a great many MSS. Of those enumerated by Oesterley it occurs as no. 42 in xv (15th century; see *Einl.*, p. 64), as no. 7 in xxxii (15th century; see p. 112), as no. 47 in lxii (1628; see p. 167); as no. 49 in lxxi (14th century; see p. 178). It does not occur in the Innsbruck MS. of 1342, printed by W. Dick, 1890 (Varnhagen's *Erlanger Beiträge zur engl. Phil.*, VII), nor in the four Munich MSS. (Oesterley's liii, lvii, lviii, lxvi) which Dick regards as derived from the Innsbruck MS. (see his *Einl.*, p. xx). It is not found in the Middle English version edited by Madden (1838) and Herrtage (E. E. T. S., 1879), nor in the German translation edited by Keller from a fifteenth-century manuscript (*Bibl. der gesammten deutschen Nat.-Lit.*, XXIII).

Story of Alakēsa,¹ which is remarkably close to G in the adventure with the steward.

A merchant who possesses a fine dog is called away from home by business. He charges his wife to feed the dog well, and for a few days she heeds his instructions. But the wife has a lover, "a wicked youth of the Setti caste," who visits her constantly in the merchant's absence. One night, as the lover is leaving the house, the dog springs at his throat and kills him. The woman buries the body in the garden. Henceforth she hates the dog. She no longer feeds him, and he is nearly starved. When the merchant returns, the dog runs to meet him, rolls at his feet, and, seizing his garments, drags him to the spot where the youth's body is hidden and begins to scratch the ground. The merchant discovers the corpse; the wife confesses and is turned out of doors. The dog is fed with milk, rice, and sugar.²

In the *Story of Alakēsa* and *The Forty Viziers*, it will be seen, we have the faithful dog and the faithless wife, and in the latter the wife's punishment is to eat with the dog. In the *Gesta* there is no dog, and the wife's punishment is to eat from the skull of her lover. The version of *The Dog and the Lady* used by the author of G must have agreed (substantially) with that in the *Gesta* in the punishment of the wife, and with that in *The Story of Alakēsa* (less closely with that in *The Forty Viziers*) in the account of her amour. The latter incident appears in G in a different part of the story, — at the place where y had the *Rescue of the Child* from the Demon Hand. Here, it will be remembered, the Hand has disappeared from the tale in G. The wolf, instead of defending his master's child (as in I), defends his master's honor by attacking the steward, the queen's lover, who is

¹ *Alakēsa Kathā* (ascribed to the sixteenth century) as translated by Pandit Natēsa Sāstrī in Clouston, *A Group of Eastern Romances*, 1889, under the title of *The King and his Four Ministers*. Cf. Benfey, *Pantsch.*, I, 484-5.

² Clouston, pp. 207 ff. The tale is here combined with a peculiar version of *The Faithful Dog* (the Gelert story), with which, however, it has nothing to do originally. Three other cases of this peculiar version of the Gelert story are cited by Clouston, pp. 507, 513 ff.: (1) Knowles, *Folk-Tales of Kashmīr*, pp. 36 ff., cf. 425 ff.; (2) *Asiatic Journal*, New Ser., XV, pt. ii, Oct., 1834, p. 78; (3) G. H. Roberts, *Indian Notes and Queries*, 1887, p. 150. In none of these is it combined with *The Dog and the Lady*. Cf. also *Panjab Notes and Queries*, III, 94-95.

dishonoring the royal bed. Thus we have practically the whole of the tale of *The Dog and the Lady* (as exemplified by *The Story of Alakēsa*, *The Forty Viziers*, and the *Gesta*) embodied in G, and the inference which we have already drawn as to the variation of G from y in the incident of the *Defence of the Child* (see p. 235) is raised to the rank of a proved fact.

The connection of G with *The Dog and the Lady* not only establishes our previous inference that the Attack on the Steward and the Wife's Penance (both peculiar to G among the different redactions of *The Werewolf's Tale*) were no part of y: it also accounts for the complete rationalization of G in an important particular. In y, as we have seen, the lady was a *fée*; her lover was a fairy man, who had been her husband in the Other World and who pursued her into the abode of mortals and won her back; her mortal husband recovered her, and her apparent infidelity to him was condoned. In G, the insertion of *The Dog and the Lady* has necessarily changed all this, reducing the lady to the condition of a mere woman, and consequently eliminating the condonation of her offence.¹ Thus practically all the features in which G differs from y are immediately explained by the influence of *The Dog and the Lady* upon G, and the accuracy of our reconstruction of y is demonstrated.

We can even see a reason for the insertion of *The Dog and the Lady* into G: *The Dog and the Lady* had a frame-story which somewhat resembled that of *The Werewolf's Tale* in version y. In both y and *The Dog and the Lady* a traveller is entertained by a powerful man (or visits him) and induces (or compels) him to tell his tale—a tale, it transpires, of a faithless wife who tried to compass her husband's death. The host is reluctant to disclose the secret, but is prevailed upon by his insistent guest. In both, the wife has been spared and is present when the tale is told.² The difference is that

¹ The ingenious cynicism with which G enforces the lesson of feminine infidelity merits a word. G introduces us to *two* faithless wives instead of *one*,—attaching the amour with the steward to the wife of the king who befriended the Werewolf.

² The frame in question is found in both *The Forty Viziers* and the *Gesta Romanorum*. Its disappearance from the version in the *Alakēsa Kathā* (a sixteenth-century text) is accounted for by the fact that in that collection *The Dog and the Lady* has been inserted into a form of *The Faithful Dog* (the Gelert story):

in *y* the guest is a quester who is under bonds to learn this particular narrative, whereas in *The Dog and the Lady* he is a chance visitor whose curiosity is excited by what he sees at his host's. It is possible that one of the features that *G* does not share with *I* (and which we therefore cannot safely claim for *y*) was introduced into *G* from *The Dog and the Lady*, — namely, the telling of the story at a feast. This, however, cannot be decided and is of slight consequence.¹

see p. 248, note 2. This combination also accounts for the loss of the Wife's Penance in the *Alakṣa Kathā*; there is no place for it in the combined tale, as a glance at that text will show. In a modern Tunisian version of *The Dog and the Lady* (Stumme, *Tunisische Märchen*, II, 110 ff.) the frame has been considerably elaborated under the influence of the Arabian Nights (see Lidzbarski, *Ztsch. der Deutschen Morgenl. Gesellsch.*, XLVIII, 669): see also p. 253 (bottom).

In a complicated Oriental tale given by von Haxthausen, *Transkaukasien*, I, 326 ff., we find a good version of *The Dog and the Lady* (see Benfey, *Pantsch., Einl.*, I, 445 ff.), set in a frame which gives it a rather striking resemblance to *G* in certain particulars. The betrayed husband tells his experiences to a quester who must learn them or die; he tells them, moreover, with extreme reluctance, and informs the quester that he who hears the narrative must be put to death. There is, however, no werewolf in the story. The false wife turns out to be the same perilous princess who had sent the quester on his mission. She belongs to that extensive class of ladies who are in love with a giant or other monster (cf. the Grusinian legend of Solomon, reported by Wesselofsky, *Archiv. f. slav. Phil.*, VI, 574) and who set their suitors apparently impossible tasks (or riddles) in order to avoid marrying anybody. Such tales are common everywhere and require a special study to untangle their perplexed relationships. In some versions, the lady is not to blame for her amour, since she is under enchantment. When this is the case, we have an approximation (often very close) to the Tobit-Amadas type, and the *motif* of the Thankful Dead Man occasionally appears. The head of the monstrous lover is sometimes brought to the princess. Perhaps this last incident may have had its influence on the lady's penance in *The Dog and the Lady*. For Irish *märchen* which would have to be included in any study hereafter made of the kind of tale represented by von Haxthausen's narrative see Kennedy, *Legendary Fictions*, pp. 74 ff., 38–39; Larminie, *West Irish Folk-Tales*, p. 46, pp. 155 ff.; Curtin, *Myths*, pp. 186 ff.; id., *Hero-Tales*, pp. 122 ff., 312 ff.; Hyde, *Beside the Fire*, pp. 19 ff. (cf. p. 153) — all of which have come in some manner from the Orient. For the Tobit-Amadas legend see especially Hippe, Herrig's *Archiv*, LXXXI, 141 ff., to whose extensive material large additions might now be made.

¹ It is a commonplace of mediæval romance that adventures happen or questers arrive precisely at the moment when a feast is about to begin or is

We have compared the version of *The Dog and the Lady* that is embedded in **G** with the *Forty Viziers*, the *Alakēsa Kathā*, and the *Gesta Romanorum*. We should remember, however, that our MS. of **G** was written at the end of the fourteenth century, and is therefore much older than the *Alakēsa Kathā* (ascribed to the sixteenth century) and considerably older than the only extant version of the *Forty Viziers*, — the Turkish, which dates from 1421–1451. The manuscript of **G** is also older than any known *Gesta* manuscript that contains *The Dog and the Lady*. Our Latin story **G** is no doubt a good deal older than the manuscript that has preserved it¹; but even if we take the date of the manuscript as the date of **G** itself, we find that we have in **G** the oldest record yet discovered of (1) *The Dog and the Lady* with the dog in it and of (2) the same with the death's head. Further, our text (in **G**) is the only known version that contains *both* the dog and the head (or skull). There is little doubt that *The Dog and the Lady* came from the Orient.² If,

in progress. This is found not only in numerous Arthurian stories preserved in French, but is familiar in Celtic tradition also. There is a well-known case in the Welsh *Kulhwch and Olwen*, and we have an instance antedating any French romance of the Round Table in the closing adventure of *Bricriu's Feast* (*Fled Bricrend*, chap. 16, § 91, Windisch, *Irische Texte*, I, 301; Henderson, p. 117; K. Meyer, *Revue Celtique*, XIV, 450). Here the Strong Man (the original of the Green Knight in the superb Middle English romance) presents himself at Emain when the host of Conchobar are seated in the Red Branch, Conchobar's Court, after the sports of the day. It is not expressly said that they were feasting, but the circumstances make it clear that they were. The relation of the *Fled Bricrend* to *Gawain and the Green Knight* will be discussed in a volume which I hope to publish in a few months.

¹ This is true of the other contents of the manuscript (*Apollonius of Tyre*, *Historia de Preliis*, etc.). See p. 149.

² The repulsive Oriental story *How a Woman Rewards Love* (*Pañcatantra*, iv, 5, Benfey, I, 303 ff.) seems to be quite distinct from *The Dog and the Lady*, though Benfey (*Pantschatantra*, *Einl.*, § 186) regarded them as variants of the same tale. For the former, add to Benfey's references *Kathāsaritsāgara*, ch. 65 (Tawney, II, 101 ff.), and the close parallel in the Tibetan *Kah-gyur* (Schiefer, *Tibetan Tales*, transl. by Ralston, no. 21, pp. 291 ff.); both resemble *Daçakumāracarita* (i.e. *The Adventures of Ten Princes*), ed. Wilson, p. 150 (as translated by Benfey, I, 436 ff., and Jacob, *Hindoo Tales*, pp. 261 ff.) even more closely than they do *Pañcatantra*, iv, 5. It is noteworthy that in the *Kathāsaritsāgara* the

as Benfey not improbably conjectures,¹ the Penance with the Skull was substituted for Eating with the Dog after the tale reached Europe, then G,—which keeps the Dog's Attack on the Lover

¹ *Pantschatantra*, *Einl.*, § 186, I, 450. In his comment on the *Gesta*, ch. 56., Warton (*History of English Poetry*, ed. Hazlitt, I, 254) compares the wife's penance in the *Gesta* with the famous story of Alboin and Rosemunda (Paulus Diaconus, *Hist. Lombardorum*, ii, 28, ed. Bethmann and Waitz, in *Scriptores Rerum Lombard.*, 1878, p. 88); Grässe, in his edition of the *Gesta*, II, 263, refers to the history as the source of the tale in the *Gesta*; and Benfey calls the punishment in question an occidental addition to the story, derived from the Lombard saga and "aus analogen Anschauungen." With the punishment of eating from a lover's skull may be compared that of eating the lover's heart (or drinking from a goblet containing it), well known both in the East and the West (*Decameron*, iv, 1; id., iv, 9; *Guillem de Cabestanh*; *Lai d'Ignaure*; *Châtelain de Couci*; *Herzmäre*; *Rājā Rasālu*, etc.). See the references in Child, *Ballads*, V, 29 ff., 303, and add the American Indian tale in *Transactions of the Canadian Institute*, V, 11 (in which a husband gives his wife soup made of the blood of her serpent-paramours) and the extraordinarily savage story in Teit, *Traditions of the Thompson River Indians*, pp. 83-84.

unfaithful wife is punished by the amputation of her nose and ears,—something that occurs in none of the other versions (cf. p. 174).

In the *Daṣakumāracarita* version of *How a Woman Rewards Love*, the wife is punished by degradation to the rank of a "Dog-cooker" (*ṣvāpācikā*). Benfey conjectures that, when the story passed out of India but while it was still in the East, this incident was misunderstood and gave rise to the wife's penance of Eating with the Dog (as in the *Forty Viziers*). Since this was a strange punishment, he continues, a motive had to be found for it, "und so führte dann die charakteristische Treue der Hunde die weitere Ausspinnung herbei, dass dieses Hündchen den Herrn gerettet habe" (*Pantsch.*, *Einl.*, I, 445). Thus he derives *The Dog and the Lady* from the other story (*How a Woman Rewards Love*). But the probabilities are all in favor of two distinct stories. We should observe that we find the penalty of Eating with the Dogs elsewhere, under circumstances that preclude the possibility of any such misinterpretation of Sanskrit. See *Robert le Diable* in various versions; cf. Étienne de Bourbon, ed. Lecoy de la Marche, p. 146; *Sir Gowther*, sts. 25 ff., vv. 276 ff., ed. Breul, pp. 146 ff. (also in [Utterson,] *Select Pieces of Early Popular Poetry*, 1817, I, 173 ff.); the Middle English *Roberd of Cisyle*, vv. 163 ff., ed. Nuck, p. 42; *Dit de Trois Chanoines* (quoted by Du Ménil, *Études sur quelques Points d'Archéologie*, etc., p. 313); Francesco Bello (called Il Cieco da Ferrara), *Mambriano*, xxv, Rua, *Antiche Novelle in Versi*, p. 60 (eating with the cats: cf. Rua, *Novelle del Mambriano*, p. 103, note

(lost in the *Gesta*), but which (like the *Gesta*) has rejected the incident of Eating with the Dog in favor of the Penance with the Skull, — must represent the oldest occidental form of *The Dog and the Lady*. G, in other words, preserves substantially that form of the tale in question that underlies (by several strata, perhaps) the fifty-sixth chapter of the vulgate *Gesta Romanorum*.¹

The insertion of *The Dog and the Lady* into *The Werewolf's Tale* may probably be ascribed to the Latin translator of the Welsh G, who was doubtless a cleric and as such was familiar with the anecdotal literature of his time. Since *The Defence of the Child* was already in y, and since that incident concerned a faithful wolf acting as a watch-dog, it was natural that the Latin redactor should

¹ The lady's penance in G does not consist in eating from her lover's skull, but in sitting at table with his embalmed head before her on a platter. This may be a modification introduced by the author of G to soften the barbarity of the punishment. In Pauli, *Schimpf und Ernst*, no. 223 (ed. Oesterley, p. 149), — a tale derived from chap. 56 of the vulgate *Gesta*, — the head in the dish has also been substituted for the skull-dish.

2, where a similar case is cited from Sabbadino delli Arienti, *Porretane*, nov. 18, ed. Veron., 1540). There is also the historical penance of the Templar Adam de Vallen-court, who "fecit penitenciam solemnpnem per annum et diem, comedendo in terra omnes sextasferias illius anni" (document of 1310, in Michelet, *Procès des Templiers*, I, 204). It is likewise important to compare the modern Tunisian version of *The Dog and the Lady* (Stumme, *Tunisische Märchen*, II, 110 ff.; cf. p. 249, note 2, above) with *Kathāsaritsāgara*, chap. 61 (Tawney, II, 53-54). In the Sanskrit the husband is tied to a tree by the lover; he prays to a goddess, who appears "and grants him a boon, so that he escapes, and cuts off the head of the [lover, who is asleep,] with his [the lover's] own sword." In Stumme, where the situation is very similar, a faithful dog bites the bonds asunder. Surely Stumme's version (late as his text is in comparison with the twelfth-century *Kathāsaritsāgara*) seems more primitive and *märchenhaft* here (cf. the fable of *The Mouse and the Lion*). The version in the *Kathāsaritsāgara* is not a little remarkable. It is essentially *The Dog and the Lady*, but it shows contamination (at the end) with *How a Woman Rewards Love*, — a story which is actually contained in the same collection in another place (ch. 65, Tawney, II, 101 ff.) and which Somadeva certainly regarded as a distinct tale. Another cynical story from the East illustrating the comparative fidelity of dogs and wives is in the *Dolopathos*, pp. 52 ff., and the *Gesta*, ch. 124 (ed. Oesterley, pp. 473 ff., cf. p. 732). Still another, which may also be of Oriental origin, occurs in the *Chevalier à l'Espée*, vv. 959 ff. (Méon, *Nouveau Recueil*, I, 157 ff.; ed. Armstrong, pp. 29 ff., cf. p. 63).

be reminded of another faithful dog, known to him in the cynical *exemplum* of *The Dog and the Lady*. This seems better than to ascribe the insertion to the Welsh translator of the Irish y.

X. THE WEREWOLF'S TALE IN MALORY.

Sir Thomas Malory, or rather one of his French authorities, knew a version of our *Werewolf's Tale* which, like the *Lai de Melion*, had become attached to the Arthurian cycle. In a long list of knights who "searched" Urrë's wounds, Malory mentions "Sir Marrok the good knyghte that was bitrayed with [i.e., by] his wyf, for she made hym seuen yere a werwolf."¹ It would be idle conjecture to speculate as to the precise relation between the lost story of Marrok and the versions that are preserved. Malory certainly drew this incident of the wounded Urre from a French source. He expressly refers to "the French book" several times,² and it was manifestly a Lancelot romance.³ The source of the Urre episode has not

¹ *Morte Darthur*, bk. xix, ch. 11, ed. Sommer, p. 793. Sir Marrok is also mentioned in bk. v, ch. 8 (p. 172), as a knight of the Round Table. Miss Weston (*Four Lays*, p. 101) suggests that *Morraha* (in version L of *The Werewolf's Tale*) and *Marrok* are the same name; but this is incredible. "Alfredus (Affredus) filius *Marroci* de Vilarblez" is grantor in a twelfth-century charter of Redon (De Courson, no. 336, p. 287). *Marrok* is the false steward's name in *Sir Tryamour* (ed. Halliwell, Percy Soc., p. 2, and *passim*; [Utterson,] *Select Pieces*, I, 6, etc.; *Percy MS.*, ed. Hales and Furnivall, II, 81, etc.). I owe the following citations to Dr. Alma Blount's collections for an Arthurian onomasticon. *Mauruc* (*Maurut*) *de la Roche* is one of Arthur's knights in the vulgate French prose *Merlin*, ed. Sommer (from Add. MS. 10,292 in the British Museum), pp. 110, 119, 123, 157. *Dodineel* overcomes one *Maroc*.

Vander Ynsen roken, diemen seget
Da tusschen Irlant ende Scollant leget

in the Dutch *Lancelot*, vv. 1216-1218 (ed. Jonckbloet, I, 9), and sends him to the queen (cf. Miss Weston, *Lancelot*, p. 216). *Maruc* (*Marec*) is a knight of Arthur's in the Middle English *Arthur and Merlin*, ed. Kölbing, vv. 3595, 3953, 5431.

² Ch. 10, p. 788, l. 16; p. 789, l. 6; ch. 11, p. 791, l. 29.

³ Cf. also p. 796.

been discovered.¹ Though the list of knights probably contains some additions of Malory's own, we have no reason to doubt that the remark about Sir Marrok (with or without that name) was in "the French book."

XI. AN ICELANDIC PARALLEL.

A curious story, which may or may not be related to *The Werewolf's Tale*, is found in the Icelandic *Álaflekks saga*, chaps. 6 and 7.²

Áli is visited on his wedding night by a wizard, who dooms him to become a wolf in the woods, to kill men and cattle, to lay waste his wife's country, and then to ravage that of his own father. He is not to escape death unless some one asks pardon for him when he is taken. Áli lays upon the wizard a counter-spell,³ leaps out of bed, takes to the woods, and turns into a wolf. His depredations are so extensive that the king his father leads a hunt against him, but he breaks through the circle of hunters. That night he visits the garth of his foster-parents, Gunni

¹ See Sommer, III, 248; Miss Weston, *Legend of Sir Lancelot*, pp. 187, 237. Dr. Schofield notes: "In *Richard Coeur de Lion*, v. 6665 (Weber, II, 261) the romance of *Ury* is mentioned in a list of romances of all sorts, in the same line with *Octavian* and just after *Beves* and *Guy*, — good evidence of the existence of a separate romance which was taken into some version of the *Lancelot*."

² An extract from the saga, including these chapters, is printed by Jiriczek (from a seventeenth-century manuscript) in *Ztsch. f. deutsche Philol.*, XXVI (1894), 17 ff. According to Jiriczek, there are numerous manuscripts of the saga, — among them, parchment fragments of the sixteenth and seventeenth centuries.

³ This counter-spell, which forces the magician to remain in a very uncomfortable situation so long as Áli is a wolf, reminds one of a feature in *S* (in the frame-story) and other tales (see p. 221, note). There is a curious parallel in the Middle Dutch *Walewein*, a romance which, though it is essentially a mere expansion of a *motif* well-known in *märchen* (the quest which proceeds from task to task: see Ker, *Folk-Lore*, V, 121 ff.), is yet, in its present form, almost a compendium of mediæval romantic fiction. A king's son, after a scene resembling the "Potiphar's wife incident" in the *Seven Sages*, is changed into a fox by his stepmother (vv. 5696 ff., ed. Jonckbloet, I, 189-190). He is to retain this shape until he shall be in the company of King Wonder, King Wonder's son, princess Assentijn, and Walewein, all at the same time, — and this, the queen thinks, will never happen. Thereupon the prince's aunt transforms the queen into a toad, and in that guise she remains under the doorsill till the fox is released from the charm (vv. 5736 ff., 10,942 ff.).

and Hildr, but does no damage. The carline says to her husband: "No eyes have I seen more like than those in this wolf and those that were in Áli's head." She feeds the wolf, who departs refreshed, and that night kills three of the king his father's men. Again there is a hunt, and this time Áli is captured by the king's own hand.¹ While the captor is deliberating what death the wolf should die, Hildr comes and asks *grith* for him. It is granted and she takes the wolf home with her. That night she watches over the wolf, but falls asleep at midnight. When she wakes, Áli is lying in the bed, and a wolfskin is on the floor by her side. She rouses her husband and he burns the wolfskin. In the morning, they go to the king's hall and Hildr tells the story. The wizard is hanged.

The differences between this saga and our *Werewolf's Tale* are marked, but so are the resemblances, some of them in details. There is little call for dogmatizing, but I am inclined to regard the Icelandic story as an offshoot of the Irish **x**. The relations between Irish and Scandinavian are wellknown, and though the *Álaflekkssaga* is pretty late, there is no reason why this particular episode should not be of considerable antiquity.²

XII. A JUDÆO-GERMAN VERSION.

An extraordinary Judæo-German tale, summarized by Köhler,³ is clearly an oriental story related to that of Sidi Numan,⁴ but greatly modified by incidents from some version of *The Werewolf's Tale*. The Yiddish *Maasehbuch*, our sole authority for this Hebraized legend, was compiled in the sixteenth or seventeenth century. Perhaps the author knew a text resembling our **G**. An incident like that of the Werewolf's pulling down a stag for the king (which occurs in **G** and **I** and has left traces in **M**) is found in the Judæo-German

¹ Apparently he could have broken through the ring of hunters again if he had been willing to attack his father.

² Jiriczek, p. 17, designates it (judiciously) as "eine alte Werwolfssage."

³ In Warnke's *Marie*, 2d ed., pp. civ ff., from Christopher Helwig's *Jüdische Historien*, Pt. I, pp. 1 ff. Helwig's book consists of two parts, which appeared at Giessen in 1611 and 1612 according to Köhler. Both parts are dated 1612 in the copy in the Harvard College Library.

⁴ See p. 170, note 3, above.

version. The talisman that transforms the hero is a magic ring which effects whatever the owner wishes. Such talismans are so common, however, that we have no right to insist on this (probably fortuitous and not very close) resemblance to *M.* The use of a ring may be due to the Jewish writer's acquaintance with Oriental literature, — particularly with legends about Solomon.

XIII. WEREWOLVES IN IRELAND.

Reference has already been made to the existence of werewolf stories in Ireland.¹ The importance of the matter in the present argument demands a somewhat more extended treatment of the evidence.

Giraldus Cambrensis² tells of a priest who was spending the night in a wood on the borders of Meath (*Media*):

A wolf came up to his camp fire and gave a strange account of himself in human language. He said that he belonged to a certain race of Ossory. Every seven years, two members of this race, a man and a woman, were compelled, in accordance with a curse of St. Natalis, to become wolves and leave their country. After seven years they returned to their human form, and two others took their place. The wolf's mate was sick unto death and needed the last rites of the Church. The priest being still in doubt, the wolf, "pede quasi pro manu fungens, pellem totam a capite lupae retrahens, usque ad umbilicum replicavit: et statim expressa forma vetulae cujusdam apparuit." After the host had been administered, the wolfskin "priori se formae coaptavit." The wolf spent the rest of the night by the priest's fire, directed him on his way next morning, and prophesied the success of the English invasion.

This adventure is dated by Giraldus about three years before the arrival of Prince John.³ He adds a brief dissertation on the changing of men into animals, making several quotations from

¹ See p. 169, note 1.

² *Top. Hib.*, ii, 19, *Works*, Rolls Series, V, 101 ff.

³ In the *Expugnatio* (ii, 23, *Works*, V, 356) he mentions the same story (with a reference to the *Topographia*) in a way that makes it possible to date the occurrence in 1182 or 1183.

St. Augustine, the most interesting of which is the well-known passage on Arcadian werewolves.¹ The werewolves of Ossory are a regular feature in other lists of the Wonders of Ireland.² Accounts vary. According to some of them,³ the men become wolves whenever they wish; according to others,⁴ they are forced to undergo this transformation at a certain time. Giraldus alone speaks of a single pair as the victims, and the highly colored narrative of the interview with a priest is his exclusive property.

The *Cóir Anmann* (or *Fitness of Names*) contains the following passage: ⁵

Laighech *Faelad*, that is, he was the man that used to shift into *faelad*, i.e. wolf-shapes. He and his offspring after him used to go, whenever they pleased, into the shapes of the wolves, and, after the custom of wolves, kill the herds. Wherefore he was called Laighech *Fáelad*, for he was the first of them to go into a wolf-shape.

The word *faelad*, here explained as meaning *wolf-shape*,⁶ is used for the ravages of robbers in the *Togail Bruidne Dá Derga* (or *Destruction of Dá Derga's Hostel*), where Stokes translates the passage: "When they were were-wolfing in the province of Connaught."⁷

In the *Acallam na Senórach* there is a story of three she-wolves that issue every year from the Cave of Cruachan and devour sheep. They are women who find it "easier to plunder as wolves than as

¹ *Civ. Dei*, xviii, 17, from Varro. See Immerwahr, *Die Kulte u. Mythen Arkadiens*, I, 11, 13 f. Cf. p. 169, note 1, above.

² See the *Mirabilia* published by Todd in the Appendix to his edition of the Irish Nennius, pp. 204-205 (with Herbert's note), the *Mirabilia* in the Norse *Speculum Regale* (K. Meyer, *Folk-Lore*, V, 310 f.), and the Latin poem *De Rebus Hiberniae Admirandis*, edited by Thomas Wright, *Reliquiae Antiquae*, II, 105. Ossory is not mentioned in the *Speculum* and the poem.

³ The Irish text and the Latin poem.

⁴ The *Speculum Regale* and Giraldus.

⁵ § 215, ed. and transl. by Stokes, *Irische Texte*, III, 376-377. Stokes refers to the Irish Nennius, p. 204, and to Giraldus Cambrensis, *Top. Hib.*, ii, 19. He adds that there was a special name for a female werewolf (*conel*); see Stokes, *Rev. Celt.*, II, 202-203 (a reference which I owe to Professor Robinson).

⁶ "Fri faeladh. i. i conr[e]achtaibh."

⁷ "Intan badar oc faelad i crich Connacht" (chap. 20, *Revue Celtique*, XXII, 29-30).

human beings." They are induced to become women in order to listen to music the better, and are then slain by one spear-cast.¹ These may be regarded as identical with the "three cats (*caittini*) from the Cave of Cruachan, i.e. three beasts of magic" that attack the heroes in the *Fled Bricrend*.²

¹ Lines 7676 ff., ed. Stokes, *Irische Texte*, IV, i, 214 f., 264 f.

² Chap. ix, § 57, ed. Windisch, *Irische Texte*, I, 282; ed. Henderson, pp. 72, 73. § 57 is lacking in the later MSS., but is found in the *Lebor na h-Uidre*. Though the episode of the Three Cats was a part of one version of the *Fled Bricrend* long before the year 1100, it obviously enshrines a bit of local legend about the Cave of Cruachan that existed independently of the story of Bricriu's Feast and of any form of the contest for the hero's portion (cf. Henderson, pp. xxxiii, xxxvii-xxxviii, with Zimmer, Kuhn's *Ztschr.*, XXVIII, 633 ff.). The passage in the *Acallam* must, then, be regarded as independent evidence for the existence of this local legend, since the insertion of the tale into the epic saga would of course have no effect on its continuous tradition as a local legend. The compiler of the *Acallam* represents the three she-werewolves as "three daughters of Airitech, of the rear of the Oppressive Company" (*tri hingena Airtig do deired na tromdái*, ll. 7682-7683). This, however, is a mere attempt to attach them to the famous story of the *Tromdam* or Oppressive Company (of Bards), and was perhaps suggested by the susceptibility that they show to concord of sweet sounds (or may, indeed, have itself suggested that susceptibility). On the *Tromdam* see especially Zimmer, Kuhn's *Ztschr.*, XXVIII, 429 ff. It was edited, mainly from the *Book of Lismore*, by Connellan for the Ossianic Society (*Transactions*, V, under the title *Imtheacht na Tromdhaimhe, or Proceedings of the Great Bardic Institution*). For demon cats in Irish folk-lore Henderson, p. xxxiii, cites Lady Wilde's story of *The Demon Cat*, *Ancient Legends, etc., of Ireland*, II, 16 ff. [reprinted by W. B. Yeats, *Irish Fairy and Folk Tales*, pp. 229 ff.], with Yeats's brief note, p. 325. Many other references to such cats might be added from Irish and Highland story: see Kennedy, *Legendary Fictions of the Irish Celts*, p. 234; id., *Fireside Stories*, p. 149 f.; Larminie, *West Irish Folk-Tales*, pp. 72, 101, 102, 153; Curtin, *Myths and Folk-Lore of Ireland*, pp. 216, 321; id., *Hero-Tales of Ireland*, pp. 54 ff., 102 ff., 498; *Proceedings of the Great Bardic Institution*, ed. Connellan, *Ossianic Society Transactions*, V, 81 ff.; O'Kearney, *Ossianic Soc. Trans.*, II, 34 ff.; *Celtic Magazine*, XIII, 542 ff.; [W. G. Stewart,] *Pop. Superstitions and Festive Amusements of the Highlanders of Scotland*, pp. 189 ff.; Wood-Martin, *Traces of the Elder Faiths of Ireland*, II, 122 ff. Compare "Cairbre Cathad" (*Coirpri Cind cait*), *Cóir Anmann*, chap. 241 (Stokes, *Irische Texte*, III, 384-385, with the editor's note, p. 422). Arthur's fight with the Cat should not be forgotten (Paris, *Hist. Litt.*, XXX, 219-220; Baist, *Ztsch. f. rom. Phil.*, XVIII, 275; *Folk-Lore*, I, 251 f.; Freymond, *Artus' Kampf mit dem Katzenungetüm*, in the *Gröber-Festgabe*, 1899, pp. 311 ff.; Rhys, in the *Dent*

Lady Wilde¹ prints a tale of certain grateful werewolves. A farmer named Connor, in search of two missing cows, was benighted on a desolate heath. He knocked at the door of a rude shieling. It was opened by an uncanny old man, who invited him to enter, and introduced him to an equally uncanny old woman, his wife. They sat down to supper. Soon a black wolf was admitted, who went into an inner room, whence soon appeared a handsome youth, who took his place at the table. A second time this happened. Connor was bidden to tell his errand. The elder son reminded Connor how he had once befriended a young wolf, and said that *he* was that wolf. He promised to help Connor, and they all feasted merrily. Next morning Connor awoke in his own field, and espied three beautiful cows. He tried to drive them away, but a young wolf drove them back. Connor grew rich and prospered, but he could never again find the wolves' shieling.

On the whole, we need not hesitate to pronounce werewolves quite as much at home in Ireland as in Wales or Brittany.²

XIV. CONCLUSION.

In conclusion it may be well to sum up our long and somewhat complicated investigation and to specify its main results.

We have had to deal with two distinct Irish stories: *The Fairy Wife* and *The Werewolf's Tale* proper.³ *The Fairy Wife* was similar

Malory, 1893, pp. xxviii-xxix; id., *Celtic Folklore*, II, 504-505, 507; Newell, *Mod. Lang. Notes*, XVII, 277). See also Laistner, *Rätsel der Sphinx*, I, 90; II, 1 ff., 35-36; Mannhardt, *Wald- u. Feldkulte*, I, 136; II, 172-175.

¹ *Ancient Legends of Ireland*, Boston, 1887, I, 31 ff.; cf. *Celtic Magazine*, XIII, 486 ff., 496.

² See also Wood-Martin, *Traces of the Elder Faiths of Ireland*, II, 118 ff. *

³ It is open to anybody to contend that *The Werewolf's Tale* proper is of Oriental origin. It may be argued that it is merely the Eastern story of the man whose unfaithful wife, being an enchantress, changes him into an animal (the type already referred to as represented in the *Kathāsariṭsāgara* and by *Sidi Numan*: see p. 170, note 3), modified to suit the werewolf superstitions current in the West. I am not concerned to refute such theories as this. It should be noted, however, that they in no way affect the facts and arguments set forth in the present paper. The original home of a story is a difficult matter to settle, and no such task is essayed in these investigations. For our purposes, *The Werewolf's Tale*, wherever it originally came from, is Irish if it became a part of Irish legend at a date early enough to have served as the source of Marie's *Lai de Bisclavret*.

to the *Tochmarc Etaine*, both in outline and in several details. It may even have been a version of that famous saga. A *fée* becomes the wife of a mortal, who has vowed that he will never marry a woman who has loved another. The *fée* has had a husband in the realm of faerie. He seeks her and wins her away from her mortal husband. The latter follows her into the Other World and recovers her. Her return to faerie with her immortal partner is not regarded as an offence, and she is not liable to punishment for unfaithfulness.

The Irish *Werewolf's Tale* proper was a story of another sort. It was a kind of *exemplum*, illustrating the fickleness of women. A man is a natural werewolf, forced to spend a part of his time in wolfish shape. His wife, who has a lover, learns his secret and compels him to remain in his beast-form by removing from his control the means of disenchantment. The wolf commits great depredations. A hunt is organized, and he makes his submission to the king, who disenchants him. The wife and her lover are punished. Presumably the Werewolf is freed from his curse forever.

The second of these tales passed from Ireland to Brittany, where it became localized. The Breton story is faithfully preserved in Marie's *Lai de Bisclavret*, written in England about 1180. It shows no intermixture of *The Fairy Wife*.

In Ireland, the two stories (*The Fairy Wife* and *The Werewolf's Tale*) were combined into a single saga. The combination was made by inserting the latter into the former and by some adaptation of details. The wife is still a *fée*, and the end of the tale records her recovery. The werewolf anecdote is utilized as a means of procuring her escape from her mortal husband when she returns to the Other World with her fairy mate. The husband pursues in the form of a wolf. The king who disenchants him is his supernatural father-in-law. The whole machinery of the hunt is from *The Werewolf's Tale* proper, and so are the details of the disenchantment. The wife is restored to her mortal husband, who takes her home with him and has no thought of punishing her.

This combined tale, the Irish *x*, passed into Brittany and became the subject of a Breton lay. It was rendered into French, and the first French version was somewhat modified by a Picard poet, the

author of the extant *Lai de Melion*. The *Lai de Melion*, in its present form, rationalizes the story a good deal. The lady is no longer a *fée*, and her mortal husband refuses to take her back. The fairy lover, too, has been reduced to a very shadowy figure, of no great importance in the plot. Yet, rationalized as it is, the French *lai* keeps manifest signs of its original character. The circumstances under which Melion wins his wife, Melion's vow, their meeting in the wood, the conversation, are so close to the Irish *Tochmarc Etaine* that one text might almost be regarded as a translation of the other. The return of the lady to her father's realm across the sea, accompanied by the squire, is also significant. In the werewolf part of the story, **M** is pretty close to its source **x**, except that the rôle of the rescuing king is divided between two personages, — the Werewolf's father-in-law and King Arthur. This attachment to the Arthurian cycle is a clear departure from **x** on the part of **M**. It may have been effected by the French poet or may have stood in his Breton source: decision is impossible. In **M** the Werewolf is no longer forced by his nature to spend a part of his time in wolfish shape; the transformation is brought about by means of a [congenital] talisman, — a ring which he wears and with which another must strike him in order to effect the change. This shows the influence of a different type of story (that in which a man is married to an enchantress: cf. *Sidi Numan*), but the influence has not gone far in the *Lai de Melion*. Finally, in making the Werewolf's father a king of Ireland, and in locating the scene of the creature's ravages and disenchantment in that country, the *lai* preserves a manifest sign of its ultimate origin. The present text of the *Lai de Melion* is preserved in a thirteenth-century manuscript, but the lay may be considerably older, even in French. If a Norman version preceded the Picard text that we have, that version was probably nearly or quite as old as Marie's time.

The Irish **x** had a further development (to **y**) in its native land. The changes, which may have taken place at different times, were the following: — (1) The story is set in a frame. A quester puts himself under bonds (or is required by an outside power) to discover "the cause of the one story about women." He sets out to find the person who is supposed to know this mysterious tale. He

falls in with him thrice, under different forms, but in similar circumstances. On the first and the second occasion he is cajoled, but on the third he insists on hearing "the one story" before he will join the feast that is in progress. The host tells *The Werewolf's Tale*, substantially version **x**. He is, in fact, the Werewolf himself, and is very loth to reveal his unpleasant experience. The compulsion exerted is that of refusing to eat until the guest's request is granted. The false wife is present while the story is told, and much is made of her presence. In **y** the fairy nature of the wife and her lover was still clear enough, though perhaps not so clear as in **x**. The frame-story was simple, belonging to a well-known type of quest-adventures, with which Perceval's neglect to ask the Grail question may be compared. (2) The congenital character of the Werewolf's nature may have been as clearly preserved as in **x**, but it is not unlikely that the progress in the direction of external magic had been perceptible. (3) A particular modification consists in the insertion of *The Defence of the Child* into **y**. This curious incident is a compound of *The Hand and the Child* (an incident still preserved, independently of *The Werewolf's Tale*, in Irish and in Scottish Gaelic) and *The Faithful Dog* (an Oriental story, — *The Brahmin and the Weasel*, etc., best known as *Geleert*). The child is a son of the king who befriends the Werewolf. The wolf bites off a hand that comes to seize the child. The false wife conceals the child and the hand and accuses the wolf of devouring the infant. The wolf, however, conducts the king to the place of concealment, and, as a result, his human nature becomes obvious to the king. The introduction of this adventure, which emphasizes the infidelity of the wife, would facilitate the rationalization of her character. But, despite all, she remains a recognizable *fée* in **y**, though her glory is obscured.

The Irish **y** has remained in circulation in Ireland to this day, always taking to itself new elements. In the form which we have sketched, however, it made its way into Wales, as a part of that body of influence which Ireland is known to have exerted on the literature of the principality. In Wales it was well received, for it was in entire accord with various native material (such as we still find in the *mabinogion* of *Pwyll* and *Math*, — fairy wife won,

lost, and won again; conversation between mortal and *fée*; hand that seizes the child; werewolf transformation), and became naturalized as a tale extremely similar to the extant *mabinogion*. The Werewolf was fitted out with Welsh names for his three manifestations, — Gorgol, Gorbeil(?), and *Gorgalon, — each of which seems to mean *werewolf*, and the first (at least) of which may be cognate with that Germanic word. The meeting in the woods and the winning back of the fairy wife were too similar to incidents in the *mabinogi* of *Pwyll* not to have been preserved.

This Welsh *mabinogi*, as we may venture to call it, is lost in the original, but is preserved in a Latin redaction (G), — now first published. The Latin can hardly be dated later than the thirteenth century, though it is preserved only in a manuscript of the late fourteenth. This Latin version (G) has lost all trace of the wife's fairy nature and has become an extremely drastic anecdote in which the fickleness and deceit of woman are painted in the darkest colors. The loss of the fairy character of the lady is caused by the weaving into the tale of an Oriental anecdote, *The Dog and the Lady*, found in various versions in the East and the West. This has modified the *Defence of the Child* and has also given a new *dénouement* of the tale: the wife is no longer received back into her husband's favor; she is supported at his court, but is forced to sit at table with her lover's head on a plate before her. Of course the insertion of this anecdote destroyed entirely the fairy character of the lady.

In the Latin story, the quester who learns *The Werewolf's Tale* is King Arthur, and the cause of his quest is a scene between him and the queen at a Pentecostal Feast. Whether this scene was in the Irish *y* (of course without the names), or first appeared in the Welsh, or was first added by the Latin redactor, is hard to say. It is essentially a "popular" scene, reminding one of the introduction to *Charlemagne's Pilgrimage*, but certainly not derived therefrom. For the congenital talisman of *y*, G (whether in Welsh or in Latin) substituted a "life-tree."

The Irish *y*, as has already been often remarked, has never become extinct in its native island. It is still current there in several counties in a highly developed redaction which we have called I. We have seven Irish versions of I (KJLHO'FC₁C₂) besides an eighth (S),

which comes from the island of Tiree in the West Highlands of Scotland. These eight texts exhibit such variation as might be expected, but are all derived from a common source (I). I still preserves traces of the fairy character of the lady and represents her as taken back and forgiven by her lord. It keeps the fairy lover in an easily recognizable form. In these particulars, it has departed less widely from *y* than the Latin *G*. The characteristic features of *I* consist in those other tales or incidents which it has taken in since it parted company with *G*. All these we have studied. They are (1) *The Quest for the Sword of Light*, which has been used to elaborate the frame-story of *y*, *The Quest for the Knowledge of the One Story about Women*; (2) the multiplication of the hero's metamorphoses; (3) *The Rescue of the King's Children* (belonging to the type of *The Skilful Companions*), appended to *The Defence of the Child* and serving to change the manner of disenchantment. In *I* the natural werewolf character of the hero has disappeared, except for faint traces, and the influence of the *Sidi Numan* type (requiring external magic for the transformation) has become stronger. Despite all the confusion of *I*, however, and the new elements which it has absorbed, that version preserves old features in abundance, and actually exhibits correspondences with *G* in surprising detail.

If it were not for *G*, which we know to be as old as the fourteenth century and which we may feel confident is much older, even in its Latin form, we might not dare to use *I* as evidence in elucidating the history of documents so venerable as the Breton *lais* and the Welsh *mabinogion*. If we did, we should surely be taken to task in certain quarters in which the mere fact that a *märchen* was first written down in the nineteenth century stamps it as a late document in all respects. Our experience in the present case should give us courage. The preservation of *G* is a mere accident: it does not change the facts with regard to *I*; it merely enables us to prove that they are facts.

The results of our investigation certainly throw some light on mediæval literature in one of its most perplexing departments, — the Matter of Britain. The discussion, then, does not concern itself merely with prehistoric ethnological movements or with the rude beginnings of certain more or less entertaining poems. Something

produced a great change in the literature of France in the twelfth century,—that is to say, in the literature of the western world, for at no assignable time could French literature have been changed with more momentous consequences to the course of European literary history. That *something* professes to be the emptying into French literature of a large body of Celtic material,—not a little leaven, but a huge mass, operating with extraordinary rapidity and with an effect still traceable not only in subtle ways but even in such obvious phenomena as the externals of plot and dramatis personæ. Was this material Celtic, and if so, how did it come and whence? The answer to these questions cannot be rendered with confidence until a large number of individual documents have been particularly studied. The details may seem to be trivial, and the effort expended may appear disproportionate to the importance of the individual document that is under consideration. But this is a narrow and uninstructed view. It ought not to be necessary always to repeat, in connection with such studies, that they are merely contributions to a large induction which aims to determine the position of Celtic popular literature in the letters, and consequently in the life and culture, of the civilized world. To this large induction it is the purpose of the present paper to contribute materials in some degree. The specific results of our study are to emphasize once more the importance of Irish material (and even of “modern Irish” folk-lore) in settling these questions. They fall in with what is coming to be more and more recognized as the correct view,—the opinion that a considerable amount of the Celtic material that made its way into France actually came from Ireland, and further, that the function of Wales as an intermediary must not be overlooked simply because early Welsh traditions are sparingly preserved. Finally, the hospitality of the Celtic mind to foreign influences also comes out with complete clearness. Ireland was open to foreign influences from the East. The mere fact that a story is Oriental in its ultimate origin is no reason for refusing to regard it as Celtic if it once made its home among the Celts and came from them, charged with their peculiar genius, to fructify the literature of France and of the world.

G. L. KITTEDGE.

ADDITIONAL NOTES.

(P. 166.)

Since the Irish version J is not very accessible and has never been translated, some further account of it may here be given. It is entitled "Adventure concerning the Farmer and the Red Gruagach" (*Eachtra air an Sgológ agus air an nGruagach Ruadh*). Mr. O'Brien, who communicated J to *The Gaelic Journal*, does not say whether he took the story from a manuscript or from oral tradition, but we may safely assume that he got it from recitation. J is more closely related to K than to any other version. There are even many striking correspondences in phraseology, though J is in Irish and we have K in a (free?) English translation only. KJ are peculiar in representing the hero of the frame-story as a *sgológ*, or small farmer, and in giving an account of his father's saving habits and his own profuseness. The incident of his discovering a hidden bag of money when in great straits is found only in KJ. There are also special resemblances between K and J in the gambling scenes, in the coming of the fairy wife and the attendant conversation, in the hero's reception by his father-in-law (note particularly the ring dropped into the cup, as in *King Horn*), and in the king's account of himself and his two brothers. In J, as in K, the hero's father-in-law is a brother of the challenger and of the owner of the Sword of Light.¹

The Werewolf's Tale proper in J is substantially identical with the narrative in K except with regard to the Ship of Gold, to which we shall return in a moment. In both K and J the Werewolf meets his future wife while on a visit to her father, the King of Greece, marries her at her father's court, and takes her home with him. In both, the magic rod belongs to the king: in K the wife steals it; in J the king gives it to her. K tells of the lady's lover (cf. p. 188, above), but he is not mentioned in J. In J the hunt immediately follows the transformation: the wife sets the dogs upon the wolf; they are about to tear him to pieces when the King of Greece comes up and saves him (it does not appear how the king happened to be in the Werewolf's country; K says he was on a visit to his daughter). In

¹ The names differ. In K the challenger is *Lassa Buaicht*, the owner of the sword is *Fiach O'Duda*, and the hero's father-in-law is unnamed. In J the challenger is the Red Gruagach, the owner of the sword is the Young Champion (*Gaisgidheach Óg*), and the father-in-law is unnamed. *Athach* (not *Fiach*) *O'Dubhda* (*Dúda*) occurs in J in a different capacity (see p. 268, below).

both **K** and **J** the calumny of the Werewolf appears in a peculiar form: there is nothing said of the Demon Hand. In **J** the wife finds her child and the wolf asleep in a chamber, smears them both with blood, and accuses the wolf of attacking the child. In **K** the wolf is not asleep; the wife "brings a druidic sleep on" the child, sprinkles him and the wolf with blood, and charges the creature with killing the baby. What follows is different in the two versions. In **K** the king restores the child to consciousness by means of the rod and a muttered charm, finds that it is not wounded, calls the wolf, and says: "I command you by my druidic power to take on your natural shape, if you be not a true *madralth*" (i.e. wolf). The wolf immediately becomes a man; the lover is burned to death; and the wife, spared at her husband's request, is taken to Greece by her father. In **J** the king apparently believes the accusation of attacking the child; but he gives orders that the wolf shall not be killed but shall be sent away (cf. **O'F**). This is done, and the wolf runs to the seashore, in search of fish or other food. Here he meets with an adventure which occurs in no other version (though it slightly resembles an incident in **S**). He sees a fine ship not far from the shore and swims out to it, hoping to get something to eat. "On coming near to the ship, I perceived a fisherman's rod held by some man on board, and he a-fishing intently. I turned to the stern of the ship, where the rod was, but no sooner was I under it [i.e., the rod] than my form and my natural shape itself came on me again. I cried out in a loud voice to rescue me from the water. A line was thrown to me; I grasped it and was drawn in on board of the ship." There are but three persons on board, the Giant (*Athach*) O'Dúda and his two sons. Thinking their visitor a robber, they attack him, but he kills *Athach* O'Dúda and takes his two sons to their own country. In rummaging about the ship he finds the Sword of Light. He then returns to his wife and informs the King of Greece what she has done. She falls at her husband's feet and beseeches him to forgive her. He grants her request, receives her again as his wife, and she gives him no further trouble; she is present while the story is told. [Here **J** is manifestly superior to **K**: see pp. 189-190, 212, 220, above.] Many have tried to get the Sword of Light from him, especially his brother, the Red Gruagach (the challenger), but nobody has succeeded before. He appears to be quite willing that the *sgológ* should take it with him.

The adventure with the ship brings us back to the task which the challenger imposes upon the *sgológ* in **J**: it is "to get knowledge for me who stole the ship of gold, who killed the Giant O'Dubhda, and to bring me within a year and a day the Sword of Light which is in the possession of the Young Champion in the World of the East" (*fios d'fhaghail dam cia*

ghoid an long óir, cia mharbh an t-Athach ÓDubhda, agus an cloidheamh soluis tá ag an nGaisgidheach Óg anns an Domhan t-Soir do bheith agat romham air an láthaireach so lá agus bliadhain ó n-diú). If we compare p. 218, note 2, above, we shall see that **J** presents a curious resemblance at this point to **LHS**. The requirement to learn who stole the Ship of Gold, however, is the peculiar property of **J** and may be confidently regarded as a late addition (not in **I**). The name *Athach O'Dubhda* (*Dúda*) resembles that of the owner of the sword in **K** (*Fiach O'Duda*).

K, as we have seen, has no trace of the second adventure of *The Hand and the Child*,—the rescue of the other children (found in **LO'FHS**: see pp. 233–237). **J**, however, seems to preserve a confused reminiscence of this sequel in the remark of the Werewolf, that, after killing Athach O'Dúda, he took Athach's two sons home to their own country. This transportation must have been by means of the ship, and we may compare **LHS**.

When the *sgológ* returns to Ireland with the sword, he finds that the Red Gruagach is dead (cf. **S**). The trick by which the hero kills the challenger and the return of the sword to its owner are lacking in **J** (though present in **K**).

(P. 222.)

Most versions of *The Faithful Dog* may be conveniently grouped under four heads.

A. *The Brahmin and the Ichneumon*, found, with unimportant variations, in the *Pañcatantra* (v, 2, Benfey, II, 326–327), the *Kathāsarisāgara* (ch. 64, Tawney, II, 90–91), the *Hitopadeśa* (iv, 13, Müller, p. 178; Lancereau, 1882, pp. 267–269), the *Alakēsa Kathā* (Clouston, *Group of Eastern Romances*, pp. 211–214), and in the different redactions of the so-called *Fables of Bidpai* (for example, the Syriac *Kalilag wa Damag*, Bickell and Benfey, pp. 53–55; the later Syriac, Keith-Falconer, pp. 170–171; the Arabic, Knatchbull, pp. 268 ff.; the Hebrew, Derenbourg, pp. 144–149; John of Capua, *Directorium*, k 4, Derenbourg, pp. 216–220, Hervieux, *Fabulistes*, [V,] 259–261; the Persian *Anvār-i-Suhailī*, Eastwick, pp. 404–413). Version **A** has also been discovered by Beal in a Chinese work of about 412 A.D. (from an Indian source): see his translation, *Academy*, Nov. 4, 1882, XXII, 331 (reprinted by Clouston, *Pop. Tales and Fictions*, pp. 184–185; cf. Benfey, *Pantsch.*, II, 547–548).

B. The version in the *Oriental Seven Sages*,—the Syriac *Sindban* (Baethgen, pp. 25–26), the Greek *Syntipas* (Boissonade, pp. 60–62; Eberhard, *Fabulae Romanenses*, I, 46–48), the Hebrew *Mischle Sindbad* (Cassel, p. 274), the Old Spanish *Libro de los Engannos* (ch. 13, Comparetti, *Ricerche intorno al Libro di Sindibād*, pp. 45–46; Coote's translation.

Researches, etc., pp. 94, 140-141), the Persian *Sindibād Nāma* (Clouston, *Book of Sindibād*, pp. 56-57).

C. The version in the *Dolopathos* of Johannes de Alta Silva (ed. Oesterley, pp. 42-44) and in the Old French translation of Herbert (ed. Brunet and Montaiglon, vv. 4838-5154, pp. 168-178).

D. The version in the Occidental *Seven Sages*, — *Sept Sages*, vv. 1163-1378, ed. Keller, pp. 46-54; Leroux de Lincy, *Roman des Sept Sages* (appended to Loiseleur Deslongchamps, *Essai sur les Fables Indiennes*), pp. 17-21; G. Paris, *Deux Rédactions*, pp. 6-9, 76-78; *Sept Sages*, pp. 8-9, ed. Plomp (as appendix to his dissertation *De Middelnederlandsche Bewerking van het Gedicht van den VII Vroeden van binnen Rome*, Utrecht, 1899); *Seven Sages*, vv. 726-885, ed. Wright, Percy Soc., pp. 26-31; *Seven Sages*, vv. 715-850, Weber, *Metrical Romances*, III, 29-34; *Historia Septem Sapientum*, ed. Buchner, pp. 16-18; *Scala Celi*, ed. Ulm, 1480, fo. 88 a-b (ed. Lübeck, 1476, fo. 127 a-b, as reprinted by Goedeke, *Orient und Occident*, III, 405-406); Latin *Versio Italica*, Mussafia, Vienna Academy, *Sitzungsberichte, Phil.-hist. Cl.*, LVII, 100; *Sette Savi*, ed. Roediger, 1883, pp. 5-7 (= *Storia d'una Crudele Matrigna*, ed. Romagnoli, *Scelta di Curiosità Letterarie*, XIV, 14-15); *Sette Savi*, ed. Cappelli, *Scelta*, LXIV, 8-10; *Storia di Stefano*, canto ii, sts. 1-20, ed. Rajna, *Scelta*, CLXXVI, 35-41; *Amabile di Continentia*, ed. Cesari, pp. 26-28; *Sette Savj*, ed. D'Ancona, Pisa, 1864, pp. 14-18; Varnhagen, *Eine ital. Prosaversion*, pp. 5-6; Catalanian metrical version, vv. 592-741, ed. Mussafia, Vienna Academy, *Phil.-hist. Cl., Abhandl.*, XXV; Welsh *Seith Doethion Rufein*, chaps. 8-9, Williams and Jones, *Selections from the Hengwrt MSS.*, II, 303-304, 649. The relations of the Occidental versions of *The Seven Sages* to the Oriental versions and to each other have been recently discussed, with a convenient digest of previous investigations, by A. Cesari (*Amabile di Continentia*, Bologna, 1896), Killis Campbell (*A Study of the Romance of The Seven Sages*, Baltimore, 1898, reprinted from the *Publ. of the Mod. Lang. Assoc.*, XIV), and A. J. Botermans (*Die Hystorie van die Seven Wijse Mannen van Roman*, Haarlem, 1898). D has passed from the Latin *Historia Septem Sapientum* (itself a translation from the French, see Paris, *Deux Rédactions*, pp. xxviii ff.) into the Anglo-Latin *Gesta Romanorum* (Harl. MS. 2270, cap. 32; Douce MS. 101, cap. 50: see Oesterley, pp. 189, 194) and thence into the Middle English *Gesta* (ch. 26, Madden, pp. 85-87, Herrtage, pp. 98-99).

A and B are closely related. They give the tale in a simple form, which I have followed in the brief analysis in the text. C stands midway between AB and D. D is much more elaborate than AB. The child is left with the

nurses, who, in their eagerness to witness a tournament (or bear-baiting), prove false to their trust, and the conflict between the dog and the serpent takes place in their absence. On returning, the nurses infer from appearances that the hound has devoured the child, and take flight. They meet the mother and tell her what they suppose has happened. The father then comes up and hears the story from his distracted wife. Hastening into the house, he sees the evidence of the struggle and is received with joyful demonstrations by the dog, who is covered with blood. In his anger, he kills the faithful creature with his sword. Only in **D** does the wife accuse the dog to her husband, and this circumstance might tempt us to recognize in **D** (or in some lost predecessor) the version of *The Faithful Dog* that has combined with *The Hand and the Child* to produce *The Defence of the Child* in **y** (cf. "Tua nefanda illa bellua . . . tuum . . . natum consumpsit," **G**, cap. 16, with "Mon jouene enfant . . . Que vostre leurier m'a occis," Keller, vv. 1327-8). But a moment's consideration shows that the accusation of the dog by the wife need not have stood in that version of *The Faithful Dog* which combined with *The Hand and the Child*. The calumniating rôle of the woman in **y** is a necessary development of the situation in that version of *The Werewolf's Tale*, in which the Werewolf's wife is eager to have her transformed husband (the king's pet) put to death. Indeed, the only purpose of the insertion of *The Defence of the Child* in **y** is to give her the opportunity for such a calumny. The language used by the woman in **y** and **D** is, in each case, the natural and almost inevitable expression of her thoughts, and no argument can be based on the resemblance in phraseology. Accordingly, I have used in the reconstruction of **y** the simpler form of *The Faithful Dog* (**AB**), which affords every detail that is needed for the solution of the problem. *The Faithful Dog* (or *Weasel*), we should remember, is a complete and well-rounded tale, which existed before any version of *The Seven Sages* was composed and doubtless before any of the Oriental collections that contain it were put together. It was and is perfectly capable of circulating by itself, and its presence in the Irish **y** by no means implies a knowledge of *The Seven Sages* (still less of the special Occidental version of that work) on the part of the author of **y**. The circulation of *The Faithful Dog* (or other animal) as an orally transmitted tale is a matter of fact. Pausanias (x, 33, 5) reports the story as told by the inhabitants of Amphicleia in Phocis in the second century of our era. The defender is a serpent (δράκων ἰσχυρός), and the father finds him twined round the ἄγγεον in which the child lies. He throws his javelin at the serpent and kills both it and the boy. Being then informed by certain shepherds that he has destroyed his son's protector, he burns the two

bodies on the same pyre. The site of the pyre was still shown in the time of Pausanias, and the inhabitants said that the city was named *Ophiteia* ἀπὸ τοῦ δράκοντος ἐκείνου. [This passage was first noted by Liebrecht in 1861 (*Jahrb. f. rom. u. engl. Litteratur*, III, 156), but, though mentioned, with due credit, by D'Ancona (*Il Libro dei Sette Savj*, Pisa, 1864, p. 106), had so dropped out of sight that Mr. Hartland, in 1892, supposed himself to be citing it for the first time (*Folk-Lore*, III, 127); Mr. Frazer (*Pausanias*, V, 422) also credits the reference to him.] Étienne de Bourbon (who died about 1261) found a dog worshipped under the name of St. Guinefort at Villeneuve-en-Dombes, in the diocese of Lyons, and heard in explanation a story practically identical with that found in the Occidental *Seven Sages* (*De diversis Materiis*, ed. Lecoy de la Marche, *Anecdotes Historiques*, etc., pp. 325-328; Quétif and Échard, *Scriptores Ordinis Praedicatorum*, I, 193; cited by Legrand d'Aussy, *Fabliaux*, 3d ed., 1829, I, 359). Mr. Hartland, citing Pausanias, Étienne, and the Welsh Gelert story, remarks very cogently, "There were versions known in Europe — at least there was one version — independent of the literary current through which the apologue is generally traced" (*Folk-Lore*, III, 129). •

The protecting animal is regularly an ichneumon (mongoose, weasel) in A; but it is an otter in the *Hitopadeça*, and a dog in the Hebrew *Kalilah and Dimnah* and in John of Capua. In BCD it is a dog, except in the Persian (cat). In all four versions the enemy is a snake. It is a wolf, however, in Pausanias, in the Welsh tradition (old or young) versified by Spencer, and in an unprinted Italian version of the *Seven Sages* summarized by Cesari, *Amabile di Continentia*, p. lxiii.

When and how the story of *The Faithful Dog* entered Wales it is impossible to determine. Mr. Jacobs (*Celtic Fairy Tales*, pp. 260-261) thinks that the Anglo-Latin *Gesta Romanorum* was the intermediary. But this conjecture is untenable. There is an extant Welsh prose version of *The Seven Sages* (doubtless from the French) which is preserved in a manuscript of the fourteenth century¹ and which therefore makes an appeal to

¹ The famous Red Book of Hergest in the Library of Jesus College, Oxford, cols. 527 ff. (see Coxe, *Catalogus*, p. 37). The same version is found in Jesus College MS. 3 (formerly xx) of the beginning of the fifteenth century (see Coxe, p. 7; Lhuyd, *Archæologia Britannica*, 1707, p. 261; note of G. Hartwell Jones, in Williams and Jones, *Selections from the Hengwrt MSS.*, II, 754). The text in the late eighteenth-century Peniarth MS. 180 (formerly Hengwrt MS. 350) is copied from Jesus MS. 3 (J. Gwenogvryn Evans, *Report on Manuscripts in the Welsh Language*, I, ii, 730), and this copy is printed by Williams and Jones, *Selections from the Hengwrt MSS.*, II, 301 ff. (translation, II, 647 ff.). *The Faithful*

the Anglo-Latin *Gesta* unnecessary. Further, the Welsh fable cited by Mr. Jacobs (from *Iolo MSS.*, Welsh MS. Society, p. 561; cf. Jenkins, *Bedd Gelert*, pp. 57-58) resembles the Oriental stories (AB) in several particulars not found in the *Gesta* or in the Occidental *Seven Sages*. Thus, the wife leaves her husband alone with the child, as in the Syriac *Sindban*, the Greek *Syntipas*, the Old Spanish *Libro de los Engannos*, the *Kalilah wa Dimnah*, the "Southern *Pañcatantra*" (Dubois), the *Kathāsaritsāgara*, and the *Hitopadeṣa*. In the last four collections, her errand is to perform purificatory ablutions after childbirth, and this feature seems to reappear in the Welsh fable ("His wife had gone to attend her devotions"). Finally, in the Welsh, the man's motive in leaving the child in his turn is to get the toll due him from certain hunters, — a feature which reminds one of the Brahmin's motive (to receive presents or alms) in Dubois's *Pañcatantra*, the *Kathāsaritsāgara*, and the *Hitopadeṣa* (cf. also the Chinese story translated by Beal). On the other hand, the Welsh fable shows certain resemblances to the Occidental *Seven Sages* in points which do not occur in the Oriental forms of the apologue (the overturned cradle, etc.). In other words, it cannot be derived from any single extant version of *The Faithful Dog*, Oriental or Occidental. In its present form, it is one of a random collection of apologues labelled, in the printed volume, *The Fables of Cattwg the Wise*, which is said to be "a production probably of the sixteenth century" (see Jacobs, p. 261), but the fable itself seems to rest on a localized tradition ("There lived formerly at Abergarwan a man and his wife," etc.), and the actual date of the collection in which it is preserved may be of no particular significance.

Dog is capp. 8-9 of this edition (II, 303-304, 649); it agrees in all essentials with the French prose version known as *A*, but is much condensed and omits the nurses. The Welsh *Seven Sages* is derived from some French version closely related to *A*, if not from *A* itself. The first six tales come in the same order as in *A* (*arbor*, *canis*, *aper*, *medicus*, *gaza*, *puteus*); the ninth, eleventh, and fifteenth also agree with that version (*Virgilius*, *sapientes*, *vaticinium*); the tenth (*vidua*) corresponds to the twelfth, the twelfth (*inclusa*) to the fourteenth; the thirteenth and fourteenth (*senescalcus*, *tentamina*) correspond to the seventh and eighth in *A*. As the seventh tale the Welsh has a story unknown to all other versions of *The Seven Sages* (a man refuses to have a certain branch lopped from his tree; thieves climb the tree by means of the branch and steal the fruit). As the eighth tale the Welsh has a confused and defective form of *Roma* (thirteenth in *A*) followed by the fable of the foolish shepherd who binds his dogs and delivers them up to the wolf (not found in any other version of the *Seven Sages*). *Avis* is omitted altogether. The work as a whole exhibits a pretty skilful condensation of the French prose.

After the preceding pages were in type, vol. II, part i, of Mr. J. Gwenogvryn Evans's *Report on Manuscripts in the Welsh Language*, 1902, came to hand. Mr. Evans catalogues two other copies of the Welsh *Seven Sages*, both in manuscripts of the sixteenth century: (1) Cardiff MS. 5 (formerly Phillipps MS. 10823), *Report*, p. 101; (2) Cardiff MS. 6 (formerly Phillipps MS. 17171), *Report*, p. 106. For the *Red Book of Hergest*, see pp. 3-4; for Jesus College MS. 3, see pp. 33-34 of the same *Report*. I owe these references to Professor Robinson.

(P. 166.)

Professor Robinson, to whom I am much indebted for information and counsel, has found a ninth version of I, entitled *An Bacach Mór* (i.e., *The Great Giant*) in Mr. Josephs Lloyd's *Sgéalaidhe Fearnmhuighe*, Dublin, 1901, pp. 25 ff., a collection of tales taken down from recitation in Farney in the upper part of Ulster, near the boundary of Co. Meath, and published (without a translation) by the Gaelic League. The hero of the frame-story is a king's son, who plays three games of cards with a "slender red *buachaill*." In the first game he wins a castle; in the second, the fairest of women; he loses the third game, and is required to bring "the sword of light which the Great Giant, King of Sorcha, has, and the knowledge of Mianach (or Mian) an Anóglaiigh (*an claidheamh soluis t' aige an mBacach Mór, rígh na Sorcha, agus fios Mhianach an Anóglaiigh*). The last-named personage turns out to be the monster that has stolen the children (as in **LHS**; cf. p. 218, above, note 2). The quester is befriended by his father-in-law, whose brother the Bacach is. The Bacach cuts three horses in half on three successive days, but on the fourth the quester finds him in bed, seizes the sword, and threatens to behead him, whereupon the Bacach, who reveals himself as the brother of the quester's father-in-law, offers to tell his story (*The Werewolf's Tale*). The motive of the Bacach's wife in metamorphosing him is her love for a wild man whom he has brought home and treated kindly. The instrument is a "rod of druidism." There is a series of transformations. Much is made of the fact that the enchanted beast "has the sense of a man" (cf. **G**). The band of wolves occurs. The king who protects the werewolf is not said to be related to the false wife, nor is there any account of the latter's punishment. A baby is born in the king's house. A great hand had taken every child that had been born to the king before. The king leaves the wolf to guard the child. The wolf tears off the arm at the shoulder and leaves it beside the cradle. The false wife does not intervene, and the wolf is not calumniated. The king sends two men (with the wolf, apparently) on the track of the blood,

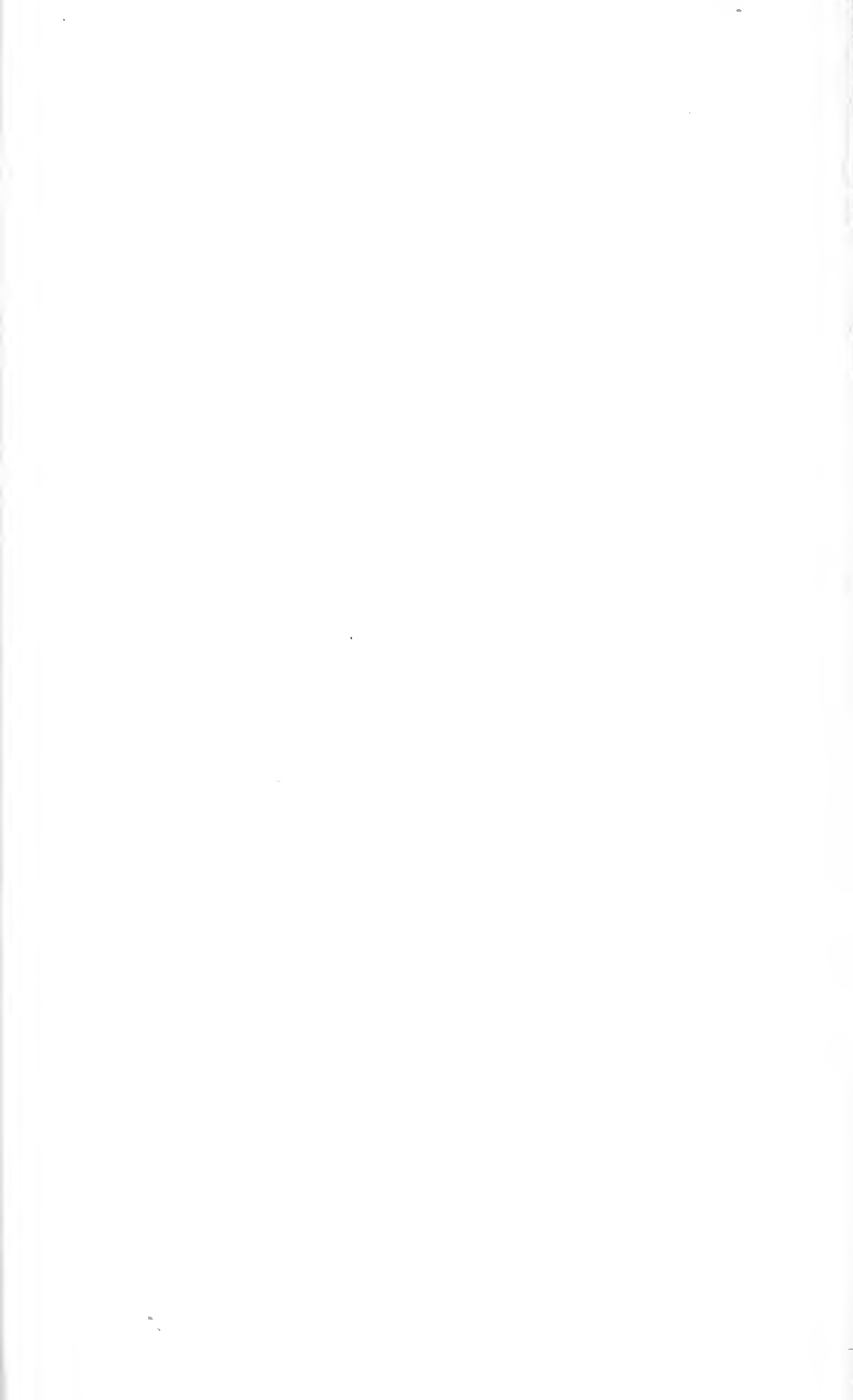
and they find a house in the wood, in which are the king's three children, and the kidnapper, who is dead. The eldest of the three gets upon the wolf's back, and the wolf, seeing the rod in his hand, bites him in the leg. The boy, in anger, strikes the wolf with the rod, and he is restored to human shape. Returning home, the transformed werewolf throws the wild man out of doors ; so far as appears, nothing is done with the woman. In concluding his narrative the Bacach says, "That is the kind of life I had with my wife." He directs the quester to take the sword home with him, and here the whole story ends abruptly. The frame-story, therefore, is incomplete, since it lacks the final interview with the challenger.

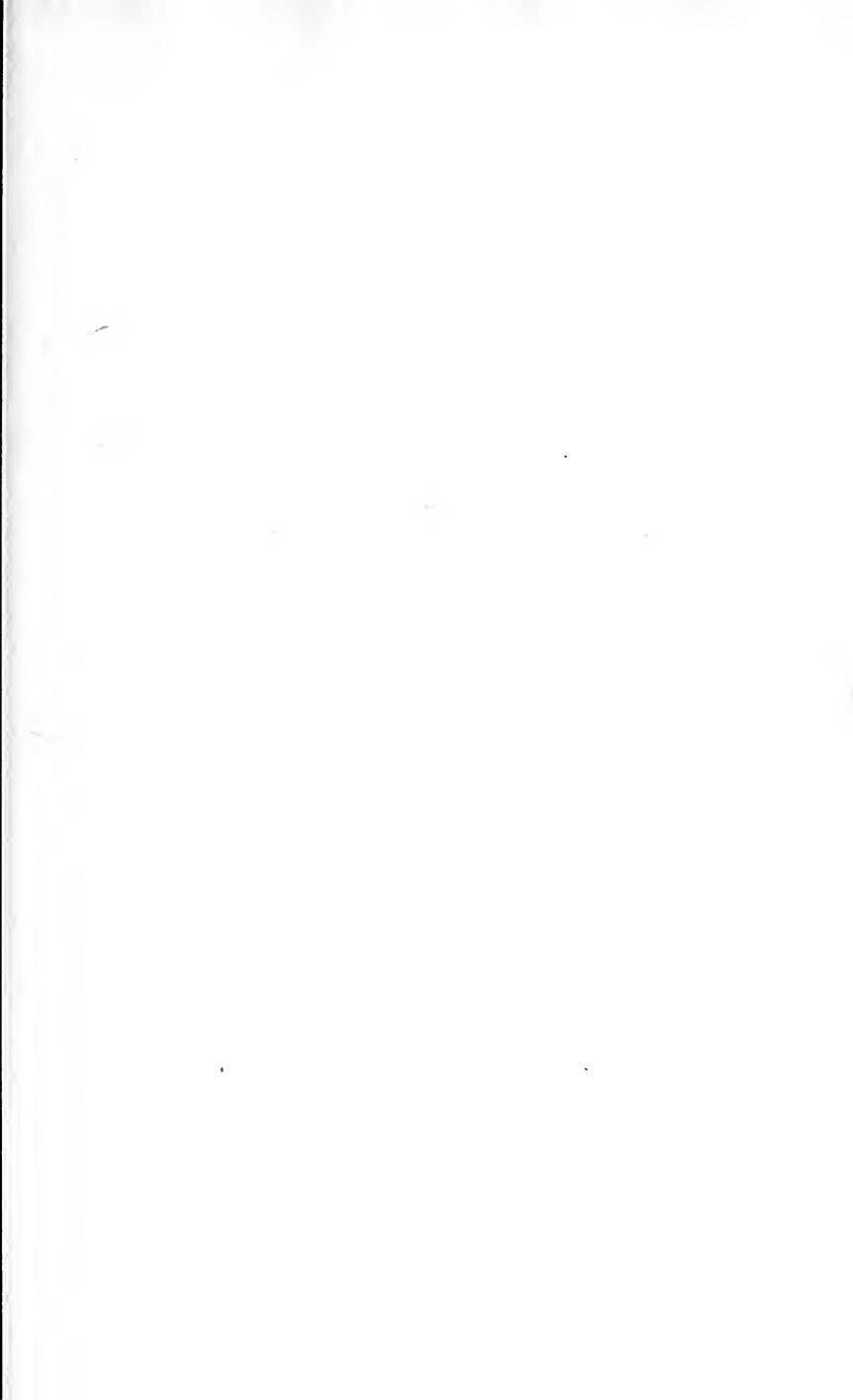
(Pp. 238-239.)

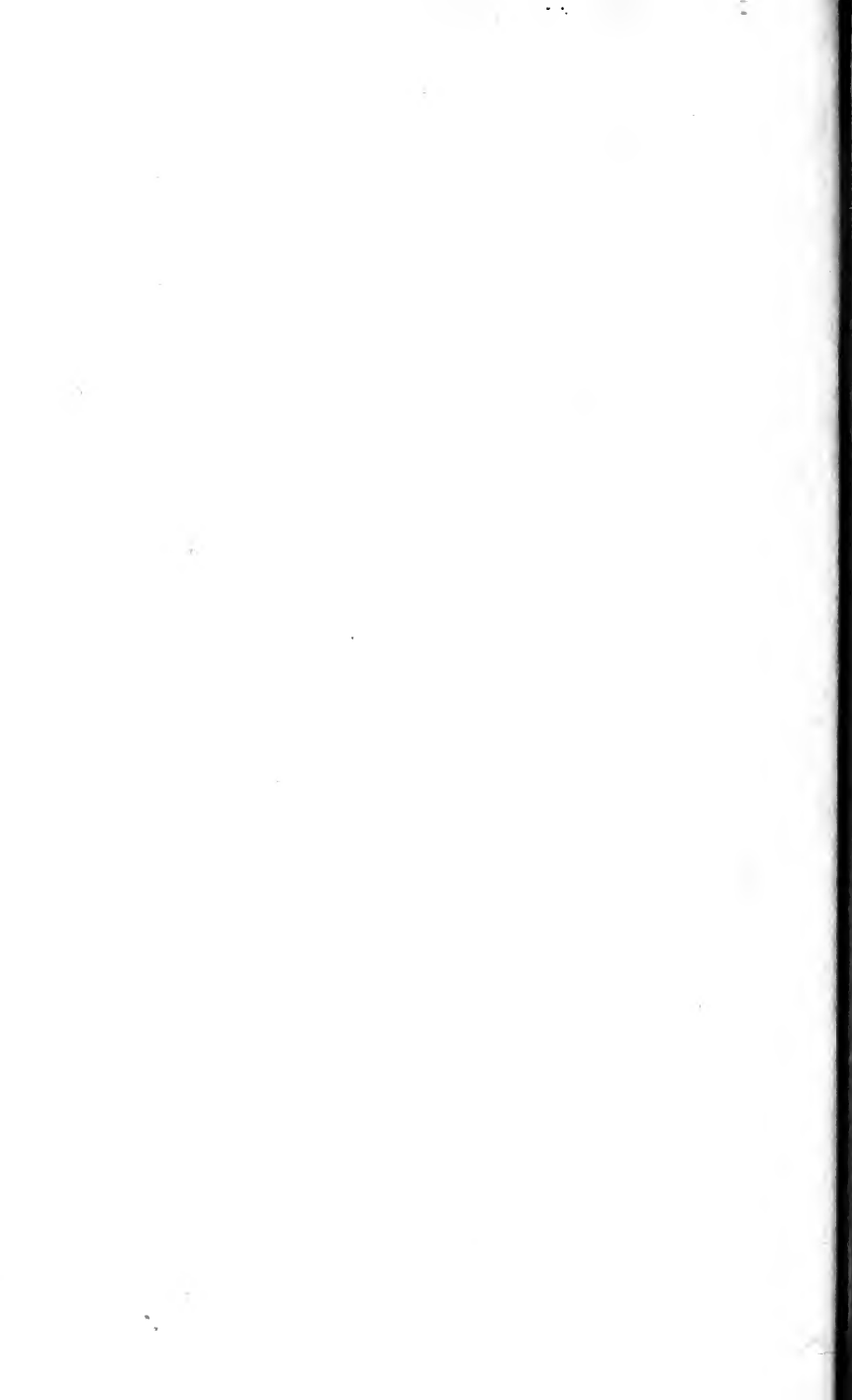
It turns out that O'Kearney's text of the *Feis Tighe Chonain* omits an important sentence, in which we are informed that the Giant came "on that night," and thrust his hand "through the top of the house," and took the child, and then reached in again and took the puppies. This substantiates what is said of the relation between the whelps and the child on p. 239, above. I subjoin the passage, as communicated to me by Professor Robinson from a nineteenth-century Irish MS. in the Harvard College Library (press-mark "ARf. 4. 46. 9") containing the *Feis Tighe Chonain* and other pieces. "Et do tháinig an oidhche sin gur chuir a lamh fhada fheidhimtheach tré mhullach an tighe go rug an leanbh leis, agus do shín an lamh cheadhna go rug an da choilleán leis don chor san." This sentence follows that which tells of the giant's habit of carrying off the children of Feargus and precedes the vague sentence about Eithleann (both of them in O'Kearney).

G. L. K.









PN Harvard studies and notes
35 in philology and
H3 literature
v.8

PLEASE DO NOT REMOVE
CARDS OR SLIPS FROM THIS POCKET

UNIVERSITY OF TORONTO LIBRARY

new 5/6

